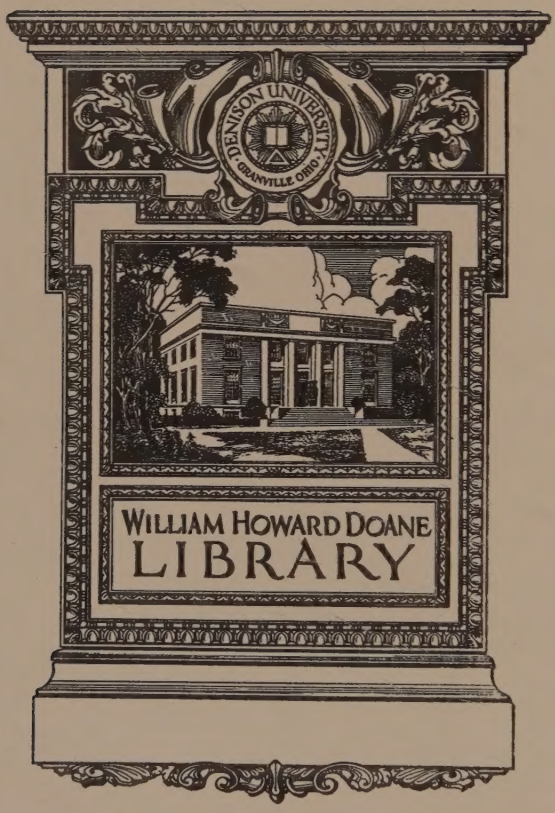
The Lives of the Chief Justices of England



Ex Libris

W. M. SOUTHGATE

WITHDRAWN

THE LIVES

OF

THE CHIEF JUSTICES

OF

ENGLAND.

LORD CAMPBELL.

THE LIVES

OF

THE CHIEF JUSTICES

OF

ENGLAND.

FROM THE NORMAN CONQUEST TILL THE DEATH
OF LORD TENTERDEN.

BY

JOHN, LORD CAMPBELL,

Lord Chief Justice and Lord High Chancellor of England.

New and Revised Edition.

WITH ILLUSTRATIONS AND NUMEROUS ANNOTATIONS.

EDITED BY JAMES COCKCROFT.

VOL. I.

NORTHPORT, LONG ISLAND, N. Y.:
EDWARD THOMPSON CO., PUBLISHERS.
1894.

Copyright, 1894,
BY
EDWARD THOMPSON CO.

ROBERT DRUMMOND, ELECTROTYPER AND PRINTER, NEW YORK.

78-01666

To

William M. McKinney,

TO WHOSE ASSISTANCE IN DEVELOPING

THE AMERICAN AND ENGLISH ENCYCLOPÆDIA OF LAW

I AM SO MUCH INDEBTED,

THIS EDITION

IS AFFECTIONATELY DEDICATED.

PREFACE.

BIOGRAPHY, history, and law have never been so commingled in one work for a lawyer's profit and entertainment as in Lord Campbell's *Lives of the Chief Justices*, and its companion-work, *Lives of the Lord Chancellors*. The sages of the common law, their greatness, their weaknesses and foibles, the history of the times in which they lived, the questions they discussed and the cases they decided, are here treated by a master hand. The student of the principles of the foundation cases of the common law, as well as the seeker after entertaining biography, has not failed for half a century to find profit and delight in Lord Campbell's works. The editor and the publishers of the present edition of the *Lives of the Chief Justices* have sought to give a worthy setting to so sparkling a gem. The editorial notes are for the greater part historical and were prepared with the view of elucidating the text or adding facts of interest. The edition is submitted in the hope that it will prove acceptable to the many lawyers who admire and honor the great English Judges of the past.

J. C.

PREFACE TO THE ENGLISH EDITION.

My original design was to be the biographer of the most eminent Magistrates who have presided in Westminster Hall. This was not completed by writing the LIVES OF THE CHANCELLORS, for many of our most important and interesting legal worthies never held the Great Seal. Some of them—as LORD COKE and LORD HALE—had not the offer of it, from the preference naturally given to mediocrity; and others—as LORD HOLT and LORD MANSFIELD—resolutely refused the offer, because they preferred the functions of a Common-Law Judge. I should not, therefore, have contributed my proposed share of honor to the deceased, or of instruction to the rising generation, without adding the LIVES OF THE CHIEF JUSTICES.

I confess, likewise, that I was eager to trace the history of those who had illustrated the department of English jurisprudence to which, while at the bar, I chiefly addicted myself. I may not be altogether unqualified for the task, as I have been long familiar with their characters, and I am entitled to speak with some little confidence of their decisions.

However, I cannot venture to draw the CHIEF JUSTICES at full length in a consecutive series. The CHANCELLORS, although sometimes insignificant as individuals, were all necessarily mixed up with the political struggles and the

historical events of the times in which they flourished; but CHIEF JUSTICES occasionally had been quite obscure till they were elevated to the bench, and then, confining themselves to the routine discharge of their official duties, were known only to have decided such questions as "whether beasts of the plough taken in *vetito namio* may be replevied?" So many of them as I could not reasonably hope to make entertaining or edifying, I have used the freedom to pass over entirely, or with very slight notice. But the high qualities and splendid career of others in the list have excited in me the warmest admiration. To these I have devoted myself with unabated diligence; and I hope that the wearers of the "Collar of S.S."[1] may be deemed fit companions for the occupiers of the "Marble Chair," who have been so cordially welcomed by the Public.

I have been favored with a considerable body of new information from the families of the later Chief Justices,—of Lord Chief Justice Holt, Lord Chief Justice Lee, and Lord Chief Justice Ryder. But my special thanks are due to my friend Lord Murray, Judge of the Supreme Court in Scotland, for the valuable materials with which he has supplied me for the Life of his illustrious kinsman, Lord Mansfield, hitherto so strangely neglected or misrepresented.

I had intended to add the Lives of LORD KENYON, LORD ELLENBOROUGH, and LORD TENTERDEN,—well recollecting the first when I was a law student, and having practised many years under the two others. But I am afraid of hurting the feelings of surviving relations and friends; and whatever

[1] This has been from great antiquity the decoration of the Chief Justices. Dugdale says it is derived from the name of SAINT SIMPLICIUS, a Christian Judge, who suffered martyrdom under the Emperor Diocletian: "Geminæ vero S.S. indicabant Sancti Simplicii nomen." (Or. Jur. xxxv.)

other biographical sketches I may compose I shall leave to be given to the world when this risk has passed away, and when the author will be beyond the reach of human censure. In taking farewell of the Public, I beg permission to return my sincere thanks for the kindness I have experienced both from friends and strangers who have pointed out mistakes and supplied deficiences in my biographical works,—and earnestly to solicit a continuance of similar favors.

LORD CAMPBELL.

JOHN CAMPBELL, a peer of Great Britain with the title of Baron Campbell of St. Andrews, Attorney General, Chief Justice, and Lord Chancellor, was born at Cupar, county of Fife, Scotland, on Sept. 17, 1779. He was the second son of George Campbell, a Scotch clergyman of slender means. His start in life was not auspicious, nor was he gifted with great natural qualities, but by hard sense and tireless industry he plucked the greatest prize of the English bar, a seat upon the woolsack. His academical education was limited, being confined to a few years' study at the United College, St. Andrews. In 1800 he came to London, where he was entered at Lincoln's Inn. He was for a short time employed as a news writer and theatrical critic on the *Morning Chronicle.* Immediately after his call to the bar in 1806, he commenced his "Reports of Cases determined at Nisi Prius in the Courts of King's Bench and Common Pleas and on the Home Circuit." These reports comprised four volumes, learnedly annotated, and extended from 1807 to 1816. In the early years of his practice he devoted himself a good deal to criminal business, but briefs came very slowly, and he failed to attract much attention. Campbell had, however, the two things which in the hands of an intelligent lawyer, no matter under what disability he labors, command success: untiring patience and dogged resolution. Painfully and slowly, wearing the robe of honest poverty, he worked his way upwards.

In 1821 he married Mary Elizabeth, the eldest daughter of Sir James Scarlett, the first Baron Abinger. Steadily plodding onwards, in 1827 he had reached an eminent position at the bar, and obtained a silk gown. He then began to have political aspirations. In 1830 he contested the borough of Stafford, and, with the help of his relative Major Scarlett, entered the House of Commons in what was known as Lord Grey's Parliament. He sat in Parliament until 1841, representing successively the constituencies of Stafford, Dudley, and Edinburgh. Honors fell thick upon him. In 1832 he was knighted and made Solicitor General, and in 1834 the Attorney Generalship fell to him.

In the House he acquired no reputation as an orator, but was listened to for the practical sense which he spoke. His zeal for public business was extraordinary and the measures which he originated or advocated covered a wide range. He was enthusiastic in the reforms which the legislature made in the cumbrous technicalities of the law, and his record as a law-maker was good, even if not brilliant. His most important work in this connection was the Libel Act (permitting a defendant in an action for libel to justify by proving the truth) and the famous Lord Campbell's Act (giving a right of action to the representatives of persons wrongfully killed). His most cherished object, the Registration of Land Titles, failed.

In 1841 Campbell was raised to the peerage, and, although he had never practised in equity, was appointed Lord Chancellor of Ireland. He held this post for only sixteen days, the resignation of Lord Melbourne's cabinet calling for his retirement. But his brief service brought him a liberal pension, and for the next five years, having withdrawn from practice and without office, he devoted himself entirely to literature. His first work of any consequence was the magnificently conceived *Lives of the Lord Chancellors and Keepers of the Great*

Seal. This was followed by the *Lives of the Chief Justices*, the work which this sketch accompanies. These works have been widely read both by lawyers and laymen, and, while not escaping criticism, have been universally admired. Whatever may be their literary defects they are certainly invaluable as storehouses of facts. In 1846 Campbell was appointed to the Chancellorship of the Duchy of Lancaster, and in 1850 he was appointed to the post for which he was eminently fitted and which he filled with distinguished ability, the Chief Justiceship of the Queen's Bench. In 1859 the Great Seal was given into his keeping and he took his seat upon the woolsack as Lord Chancellor. His short term in this office was uneventful. On June 23, 1861, "full of honor and years," he died.

Lord Campbell was a good but not a great judge, a faithful political adherent but not a statesman. He had much strength but little polish. There was nothing heroic in his nature, but he was an honest judge and a conscientious law-maker. He had a high sense of his own merits, but even his enemies were compelled to allow that this was not altogether unsupported by the facts. As long as men honor the faithful discharge of judicial duties and admire success achieved by steady determination, unaided by brilliant qualities, Lord Campbell will be remembered.

CHIEF JUSTICIARIES.

It is doubtful whether those marked ? were Chief Justiciaries or Justiciaries. Those marked ‡ were possibly Chief Justices of the King's Bench, and not Chief Justiciaries of the *Aula Regis*. Hugh de Bockland is omitted from Foss's lists and must be considered doubtful.

1067. Odo, Bishop of Bayeux and Earl of Kent, Chief Justiciar of the Southern Division, and
William Fitz-Osborne, Earl of Hereford, Chief Justiciar of the Northern Division of the kingdom.
1073. William de Warenne and
Richard Fitz-Gilbert or de Benefacta.
1078. Lanfranc, Archbishop of Canterbury.
Geoffrey, Bishop of Coutance, in Normandy, and
Robert, Earl of Moreton, or Mortagne.
1087. Bishop Odo, *again*.
1088. William de Carilefo, Bishop of Durham.
Ranulph Flambard, afterwards Bishop of Durham.
1100. Robert Bloet, Bishop of Lincoln.
1107–8. Roger, afterwards Bishop of Salisbury.
† Hugh de Bocland, Canon of St. Paul's.
? Geoffrey Ridel.
? Ralph Basset, Baron of Weld.
? Richard Basset, son of Ralph.
? Geoffrey de Clinton, Treasurer.
? Alberic de Vere.
1153. Henry, Duke of Normandy, November.
? Richard de Luci, or Lucy.
1154. Robert de Beaumont, Earl of Leicester, and
Richard de Luci, or Lucy, *again*, jointly, December.
1167. Richard de Lucy, *again*, only.
1179. Richard Tocliffe, Bishop of Winchester.
Geoffrey Ridel, *again*, Bishop of Ely, and
John of Oxford, Bishop of Norwich.

1180. Ranulph de Glanville.
1189. Hugh Pusar, or Pudsey, Bishop of Durham, and
William de Mandeville, Earl of Albemarle, September 15.
Hugh Pusar, or Pudsey, *again*, and
William de Longchamp, Bishop of Ely, December 11.
1191. Walter de Constantiis, Bishop of Lincoln and Archbishop of Rouen, October.
1193. Hubert Walter, Archbishop of Canterbury, September.
1198. Geoffrey Fitz-Peter, afterwards Earl of Essex, July.
1214. Peter de Rupibus, Bishop of Winchester, February 1.
1215. Hubert de Burgh, Earl of Kent, June. He was Regent of England in 1219 during the minority of Henry III.
1225. ‡ Martin de Pateshull.
1232. Stephen de Segrave, July.
1234. ‡ Robert de Lexinton, July.
1236. ‡ Thomas de Muleton.
1240. ‡ William of York, afterwards Bishop of Salisbury.
1250. ‡ Henry de Bathonia.
1258. Hugh Bigod, June 22.
1259. ‡ Roger de Thurkilby, December 29.
1260. Hugh le Despencer, October 18.
1261. Philip Basset, July 5.
‡ William de Wilton.
1263. Hugh le Despencer, *again*, October.
1265. ‡ Henry de Bracton, August.
1267. Nicholas de Turri.

CHIEF JUSTICES OF THE KING'S OR QUEEN'S BENCH, SOMETIMES STYLED CHIEF JUSTICES OF ENGLAND.

1268. ROBERT DE BRUS, or BRUIS, in modern times spelt BRUCE, the first Judge who was distinctly constituted Chief Justice of the King's Bench.—*Foss.*

RALPH DE HENGHAM, Justice of the King's Bench. *Foss* gives the date of his appointment as 1273–4.

1290. GILBERT DE THORNTON.

1296. ROGER LE BRABAÇON, Justice of the King's Bench.

1316. WILLIAM INGE, March.

1317. HENRY LE SCROPE, June 15.

1323. HERVEY or HENRY DE STAUNTON, September.

1324. GEOFFREY LE SCROPE, Justice of the Court of Common Pleas, March 21.

1329. ROBERT DE MALBERTHORP, Justice of the King's Bench, May 1.

HENRY LE SCROPE, *again*, October 28.

1330. * GEOFFREY LE SCROPE, *again*, December 19.

1332. * RICHARD DE WYLLUGHBY, Justice of the King's Bench, March 28.

* GEOFFREY LE SCROPE, *again*, September 20.

1333. * RICHARD DE WYLLUGHBY, *again*, September 10.

1337. * GEOFFREY LE SCROPE, *again*.

1338. * RICHARD DE WYLLUGHBY, *again*, October.

1340. Sir ROBERT PARNYNGE in text, Justice of the Court of Common Pleas, July 21.

1341. Sir WILLIAM SCOT, January 8.

1346. Sir WILLIAM DE THORPE, Justice of the King's Bench, November 26; hanged for malpractices in 1351.

* These changes were occasioned by Geoffrey le Scrope's absences abroad with the King, during which Wyllughby was appointed Chief Justice in his place.

1350. Sir WILLIAM DE SHARESHALL, Justice of the King's Bench, October 26.
1357. Sir THOMAS DE SETON, Justice of the King's Bench, July 5.
1361. Sir HENRY GREENE, May 24.
1365. Sir JOHN KNIVET, or KNYVET, October 29.
1372. JOHN DE CAVENDISH, July 15; beheaded by the Kentish rebels.
1381. Sir ROBERT TRESILIAN, Justice of the King's Bench, June 22; executed in 1388.
1388. Sir WALTER DE CLOPTON, January 31.
1400. Sir WILLIAM GASCOYNE, November 15.
1413. Sir WILLIAM HANKFORD, March 29.
1424. Sir WILLIAM CHEYNE, Justice of the King's Bench, January 21.
1439. Sir JOHN IVYN, or JUYN, Chief Justice of the Court of Common Pleas, January 20.
1440. Sir JOHN HODY, April 13.
1442. Sir JOHN FORTESCUE, January 25.
1461. Sir JOHN MARKHAM, Justice of the King's Bench, May 13.
1469. Sir THOMAS BILLING, Justice of the King's Bench, January 23.
1481. Sir WILLIAM HUSE, or HUSSEY, May 7.
1495. Sir JOHN FINEUX, Justice of the Court of Common Pleas, November 24.
1526. Sir JOHN FITZJAMES, Justice of the King's Bench, January 23.
1539. Sir EDWARD MONTAGUE, January 21; afterwards Chief Justice of the Court of Common Pleas.
1545. Sir RICHARD LYSTER, November 9.
1552. Sir ROGER CHOMELEY, March 21.
1553. Sir THOMAS BROMLEY (No. 1), Justice of the King's Bench, October 4.
1555. Sir WILLIAM PORTMAN, Justice of the King's Bench, June 11.
1557. Sir EDWARD SAUNDERS, Justice of the Court of Common Pleas, May 8; afterwards Chief Baron of the Exchequer.
1559. Sir ROBERT CATLYNE, Justice of the Court of Common Pleas, January 22.
1574. Sir CHRISTOPHER WRAY, Justice of the King's Bench, November 8.
1592. Sir JOHN POPHAM, June 2.
1607. Sir THOMAS FLEMING, or FLEMYNGE, Baron of the Exchequer, June 25.
1613. Sir EDWARD COKE, Chief Justice of the Court of Common Pleas, October 25; discharged November, 1616.

1616. Sir HENRY MONTAGU, November 16; made Lord Treasurer, 1620.

1621. Sir JAMES LEY, Knight and Baronet, January 29; afterwards Lord Ley; made Lord Treasurer and created Earl of Marlborough, 1626.

1625. Sir RANULPH CREWE, January 26.

1627. Sir NICHOLAS HYDE, February 5.

1631. Sir THOMAS RICHARDSON, Chief Justice of the Court of Common Pleas, October 24.

1635. Sir JOHN BRAMPSTON, or BRAMSTONE, April 14; removed October, 1643.

1642. Sir ROBERT HEATH, Justice of the King's Bench, October 31; removed by a vote of Parliament, October, 1645.

1645. "There now sat only two Judges in each court of law, until the close of this troubled reign."—*Whitelocke.*

1648. HENRY ROLLE, Justice of the King's Bench, appointed by the Parliament under the Commonwealth, October 12.

1655. JOHN GLYN, Chief Justice of the "Upper Bench" under the Commonwealth, June 15; confirmed to him October 11, 1656. —*Whitelocke.*

1660. Sir RICHARD NEWDIGATE, Chief Justice of the "Upper Bench," January 17.

Sir ROBERT FOSTER, Justice of the Court of Common Pleas, October 1.

1663. Sir ROBERT HYDE, Justice of the Court of Common Pleas, October 19.

1665. Sir JOHN KELYNGE, Justice of the King's Bench, November 21.

1671. Sir MATTHEW HALE, Justice of the Court of Common Pleas, May 18; resigned 1676, and died on Christmas day following.

1676. Sir RICHARD RAYNSFORD, or RAINSFORD, Justice of the King's Bench, April 12; removed May, 1678.

1678. Sir WILLIAM SCROGGS, Justice of the Court of Common Pleas, May 31; removed 1681.

1681. Sir FRANCIS PEMBERTON, Justice of the King's Bench, April 11; afterwards Chief Justice of the Court of Common Pleas.

1683. Sir EDMUND SAUNDERS, January 3.

Sir GEORGE JEFFREYS, Baronet, September 29; afterwards Lord Chancellor, and created Lord Jeffreys.

1685. Sir EDWARD HERBERT, October 23; afterwards Chief Justice of the Court of Common Pleas.

1687. Sir ROBERT WRIGHT, Chief Justice of the Court of Common Pleas, April 22.

1689. Sir JOHN HOLT, April 17.

1710. Sir THOMAS PARKER, March 11; afterwards Lord Parker, Lord Chancellor, and Earl of Macclesfield.

1718. Sir JOHN PRATT, Justice of the King's Bench, May 15.

1725. Sir ROBERT RAYMOND, Justice of the King's Bench, March 2; afterwards Lord Raymond.

1733. Sir PHILIP YORKE, October 31; afterwards Lord Hardwicke, Lord Chancellor, and Earl of Hardwicke.

1737. Sir WILLIAM LEE, Justice of the King's Bench, June 8; became a Baronet on the death of his brother in 1749.

1754. Sir DUDLEY RYDER, Attorney General, May 2.

1756. WILLIAM MURRAY, Attorney General; created Lord Mansfield, November 8; created Earl of Mansfield in 1776; resigned June, 1788.

1788. LLOYD, Lord KENYON, Master of the Rolls, June 4; died April, 1802.

1802. Sir EDWARD LAW, Attorney General, April 11; created Lord Ellenborough; resigned November, 1818; died December following.

1818. Sir CHARLES ABBOTT, Justice of the King's Bench, November 2; afterwards Lord Tenterden.

1832. Sir THOMAS DENMAN, Attorney General, November 4; created Lord Denman, March 22, 1834; resigned February 28, 1850.

1850. JOHN, Lord CAMPBELL, March 5; appointed Lord Chancellor, June 18, 1859.

1859. * Sir ALEXANDER JAMES EDMUND COCKBURN, Baronet, Chief Justice of the Court of Common Pleas, June 24.

1880. JOHN DUKE, Lord COLERIDGE, Lord Chief Justice of England and President of the Queen's Bench Division, Nov. 29.

* Transferred November 1, 1875, to the High Court of Justice, Queen's Bench Division, and also made an *ex-officio* Judge of the Court of Appeal, under Supreme Court of Judicature Acts, 1873 and 1875.

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER I.

PAGE

Lives of the Chief Justices from the Conquest to the Reign of Edward I., ... 1

CHAPTER II.

The Lives of the Chief Justices from the Accession of Edward I. to the Appointment of Chief Justice Tresilian, ... 98

CHAPTER III.

Chief Justices till the Death of Sir William Gascoyne, ... 139

CHAPTER IV.

Chief Justices till the Appointment of Chief Justice Fitzjames by King Henry VIII., ... 195

CHAPTER V.

Chief Justices till the Appointment of Chief Justice Popham by Queen Elizabeth, ... 226

CHAPTER VI.

Chief Justices from the Death of Sir Christopher Wray till the Appointment of Sir Edward Coke by James I., ... 300

CHAPTER VII.

Life of Lord Chief Justice Sir Edward Coke, from his Birth till he was made Chief Justice of the Court of Common Pleas, . 339

CHAPTER VIII.

Continuation of the Life of Sir Edward Coke till he was Dismissed from the Office of Chief Justice of the Court of King's Bench, ... 377

CHAPTER IX.

Continuation of the Life of Sir Edward Coke till he was sent Prisoner to the Tower, ... 410

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

JOHN, LORD CAMPBELL (colored lithograph), ... *frontispiece*

BAYEUX TAPESTRY, ... facing page 6

WILLIAM DE WARRENNE DECLARING THE TITLE TO HIS LANDS, " " 18

WESTMINSTER HALL, ... " " 21

INTERIOR OF OLD WESTMINSTER HALL, ... " " 25

SPECIMEN OF MAGNA CHARTA, ... " " 60

LEWES, FROM THE DOWNS NEAR MOUNT HARRY, . . . " " 84

GATEWAY TO LINCOLN'S INN, ... " " 100

CLIFFORD'S INN, ... " " 106

SIR WILLIAM GASCOYNE, ... " " 172

HENRY V., ... " " 186

COURT OF KING'S BENCH (colored lithograph), . . . " " 196

HENRY VII., ... " " 222

CARDINAL WOLSEY, ... " " 226

WOLSEY RECEIVED BY THE MONKS OF LEICESTER, . . " " 230

THOMAS CROMWELL, EARL OF ESSEX, ... " " 232

JOHN FISHER, BISHOP OF ROCHESTER, ... " " 234

SIR THOMAS MORE, ... " " 236

HENRY VIII., ... " " 248

MARY TUDOR, ... " " 264

SIR WALTER RALEIGH, ... " " 318

GEORGE CROKE, ... " " 330

SIR EDWARD COKE (colored lithograph), ... " " 352

FACSIMILE OF THE EXAMINATION UNDER THE TORTURE OF GUY FAWKES ON JAN. 9, 1606, ... " " 368

FRANCIS, LORD BACON, ... " " 410

ABBOTT, ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY, ... " " 422

FRANCIS BACON, ... " " 430

BIOGRAPHICAL NOTES IN VOLUME I.

PAGE

George Abbot, Archbishop of Canterbury, ... 423
Thomas a Becket, ... 27
Alexander I. of Scotland, ... 91
Sir Edmond Anderson, ... 312
Anne of Cleves, ... 247
Thomas Arundel, Archbishop of Canterbury, ... 145
Edgar Atheling, ... 7
John Aubrey, ... 302
Thomas, Lord Audley, ... 242
Anthony Babington, ... 294
Sir Nicholas Bacon, ... 260
Roger Bacon, ... 63
Thomas Baldwin, ... 45
Lord Baltimore, ... 427
Richard Bancroft, Archbishop of Canterbury, ... 380
Duke of Bedford, ... 194
Sir Christopher Blount, ... 316
Anne Boleyn, ... 240
Sir Thomas Bromley, ... 275, 295
Robert Bruce, ... 119
Sir Francis Burdett, ... 209
Lord Burghley, ... 292
Robert Burnel, Bishop of Bath and Wells, ... 119
George Calvert, Lord Baltimore, ... 427
Earl of Camden, ... 177
Edmund Campion, ... 291
Robert Carr, Earl of Somerset, ... 391
Robert Catesby, ... 323
George Cavendish, ... 232
Sir William Cavendish, ... 233
Robert Cecil, Earl of Salisbury, ... 359
William Cecil, Lord Burghley, ... 292
Cerdic, ... 90
Sir William Cheyne, ... 197
Duke of Clarence, ... 216
Thomas Coventry, Lord Keeper, ... 375
Thomas Cromwell, Earl of Essex, ... 233

PAGE

ROBERT CURTHOSE, Duke of Normandy, ... 13
WILLIAM DAVISON, ... 296
PETER DE BLOIS, Archdeacon of London, ... 36
ROBERT DE BRUS, ... 92
HUBERT DE BURGH, Earl of Kent, ... 65
PETER DE LANGTOFT, ... 80
MICHAEL DE LA POLE, Earl of Suffolk, ... 150
SIMON DE MONTFORT, Earl of Leicester, ... 76
GILBERT DE SEGRAVE, ... 78
ROBERT DEVEREUX, Earl of Essex, ... 313
WILLIAM DE WARRENNE, ... 18
Sir EVERARD DIGBY, ... 323
Sir DUDLEY DIGGES, ... 431
JOHN DUDLEY, Duke of Northumberland, ... 252
ROBERT DUDLEY, Earl of Leicester, ... 257
Sir JAMES DYER, Chief Justice of Court of Common Pleas, ... 266
Sir EDWARD DYER, ... 257
THOMAS EGERTON, Lord Ellesmere, ... 307
ELEANOR OF AQUITAINE, ... 27
Sir THOMAS ELYOT, ... 180
Lord ERSKINE, ... 345
GUY FAWKES, ... 321
JOHN FISHER, Bishop of Rochester, ... 234
JOHN FORTESCUE, ... 198
FREDERICK V., Elector Palatine and King of Bohemia, ... 437
STEPHEN GARDINER, Bishop of Winchester, ... 255
HENRY GARNET, ... 322
GEOFFREY, Bishop of Coutance, ... 9
OWEN GLENDOWER OR GLENDWR, ... 171
GREGORY VII., ... 11
GREGORY IX., ... 65
Lady JANE GREY, ... 253
Sir HARBOTTLE GRIMSTON, ... 277
ROBERT GUISCARD, ... 11
GUNDULPH, Bishop of Rochester, ... 8
HAROLD II, ... 5
Sir CHRISTOPHER HATTON, ... 258, 295
HENRY V., ... 186
HENRY OF BOLINGBROKE, Duke of Hereford, ... 165
HENRY OF HUNTINGDON, ... 8
Sir JOHN HODY, ... 107
CATHERINE HOWARD, ... 248
THOMAS HOWARD, Duke of Norfolk, ... 251, 272
THOMAS HOWARD, Earl of Suffolk, ... 422
JAMES I, ... 317
JOHN OF GAUNT, Duke of Lancaster, ... 141
LANFRANC, ... 9
EDMUND LANGLEY, Duke of York, ... 175

PAGE

JOHN LESLEY, Bishop of Ross, ... 284
Sir WALTER MILDMAY, ... 297
Sir THOMAS MORE, ... 235
ROGER MORTIMER, Earl of March, ... 125
RICHARD NEVILLE, Earl of Warwick, ... 213
WILLIAM NOY, ... 431
ODO, Bishop of Bayeux, ... 8
Sir THOMAS OVERBURY, ... 391
Sir JOHN PERROT, ... 351
GEORGE PLANTAGENET, Duke of Clarence, ... 216
CHARLES PRATT, Earl of Camden, ... 177
Sir WALTER RALEIGH, ... 318
RALPH OF WADER, ... 19
RICHARD RICH, ... 236
JOHN RUSSELL, Bishop of Lincoln, ... 219
ST. CUTHBERT, ... 21
OLIVER ST. JOHN, ... 131
SALADIN, Sultan of Egypt and Syria, ... 46
Sir WILLIAM SCROGGS, ... 115
EDWARD SEYMOUR, Duke of Somerset, ... 252
SIMEON OF DURHAM, ... 20
Lord SOMERS, ... 163
EDWARD STAFFORD, Duke of Buckingham, ... 227
STIGAND, Archbishop of Canterbury, ... 9
JAMES STUART, Earl of Murray, ... 283
Lady ARABELLA STUART, ... 318
MARY STUART, Queen of Scotland, ... 295
JOHN TALBOT, Earl of Shrewsbury, ... 194
Sir NICHOLAS THROCKMORTON, ... 202
WAT TYLER, ... 150
GEORGE VILLIERS, Duke of Buckingham, ... 400
Sir WILLIAM WALLACE, ... 119
Sir WILLIAM WALWORTH, ... 150
WILLIAM WARHAM, ... 227
Earl of WARWICK, ... 213
WILLIAM WAYNFLETE, ... 204
JOHN WHITGIFT, Archbishop of Canterbury, ... 342
WILLIAM "THE LION," King of Scotland, ... 75
JOHN WILLIAMS, ... 433
Sir RALPH WINWOOD, ... 411
Cardinal WOLSEY, ... 137
ANTHONY WOODVILLE, Earl Rivers, ... 221
THOMAS WRIOTHESLEY, Earl of Southampton, ... 249
Sir THOMAS WYATT, ... 261
Sir HENRY YELVERTON, ... 357
Duke of YORK (EDWARD LANGLEY), ... 175

LIVES

OF THE

CHIEF JUSTICES OF ENGLAND.

CHAPTER I.

LIVES OF THE CHIEF JUSTICES FROM THE CONQUEST TO THE REIGN OF EDWARD I.

CHAP. I. Origin and functions of the office of Chief Justiciar, or Chief Justice, of England.

THE office of CHIEF JUSTICE, or CHIEF JUSTICIAR, was introduced into England by William the Conqueror from Normandy, where it had long existed.[1] The functions of such an officer would have ill accorded with the notions of our Anglo-Saxon ancestors, who had a great antipathy to centralization, and prided themselves upon enjoying the rights and the advantages of self-government. The shires being parcelled into hundreds, and other subdivisions, each of these had a court, in which suits, both civil and criminal, might be commenced. A more extensive jurisdic-

[1] Of the two names "Justice" and "Justiciar," we have this account by Spelman: "*Justitia* al. *Justitiarius*. Prior vox in juris nostri formulis, solummodò videtur usitata, usque ad ætatem Henrici 3. alterâ jam se efferente, hæc paulatim disparuit: sed inde hodie in vernaculo et juris annalibus Gallico-Normanicis '*a*' vel '*un Justice*' dicimus, non '*Justicer.*'" ["The former term alone seems to have been used in our law forms, until, the latter appearing in the time of Henry III., this gradually fell into disuse; but even to this day, in common speech and in the Gallic-Norman law records, 'a' or 'an Justice' is used, not 'Justiciar.'"] In Scotland, where this office was introduced, along with almost every other which existed in England under the Norman kings, the word *Justitiarius* prevailed, and hence we now have the "Court of JUSTICIARY." See "Lives of the Chancellors," vol. i. p. 5.

CHAP. I. tion was exercised by the County Court,[1] a tribunal of high dignity, over which the Bishop, and the Earl, or Alderman, presided jointly. Cases of importance and difficulty were occasionally brought by appeal before the Witenagemote,[2] and here they were disposed of by the voice of the majority of those who constituted this assembly. We do find, in the Anglo-Saxon records, a notice of "Totius Angliæ Aldermannus," but such a creation seems to have taken place only on rare emergencies, and we have no certain account of the duties intrusted to the person so designated.[3] In Normandy the interference of the supreme government was much more active than in England, and there existed an officer called CHIEF JUSTICIAR, who superintended the administration of justice over the whole dukedom, and on whom, according to the manners of the age, both military and civil powers of great magnitude were conferred.[4]

Witenagemote.

[1] It was held twice in the year, in the beginning of May and October. Every great proprietor was compelled to attend, either in person or by his steward, or to send in his place his chaplain, bailiff, and four principal tenants.—*Lingard's Hist. of Eng.*, vol. i. p. 342.

[2] Witenagemote, or meeting of wise men, was the host's council of war, the gathering of those earldormen who had brought the men of their villages to the field. The host was formed by levies from the various districts of the tribe; the larger of which probably owed their name of "hundreds" to the hundred warriors which each originally sent to it.—*Green's Hist. of Eng. People*, vol. i. p. 13.

[3] Dugd. Or. Jur. ch. vii. Mad. Ex. ch. i. Spel. Gloss. "Justitia." Lord Coke's 2d Inst. ch. vii.

[4] It is curious to observe that, notwithstanding the sweeping change of laws and institutions introduced at the Conquest, the characteristic difference between Frenchmen and Englishmen, in the management of local affairs, still exists after the lapse of so many centuries; and that while with us parish vestries, town councils, and county sessions are the organs of the petty confederated republics into which England is parcelled out,—in France, whether the form of government be nominally monarchical or republican, no one can alter the direction of a road, build a bridge, or open a mine, without the authority of the "Ministre des *Ponts et Chaussées.*" In Ireland, there being much more Celtic than Anglo-Saxon blood, no self-reliance is felt, and a disposition prevails to throw everything upon the government.

CHAP. I.

Before William had entirely completed his subjugation of England, eager to introduce into it the laws and institutions of his own country, so favorable to princely prerogative,—while he separated the civil and ecclesiastical jurisdiction, and confined the County Court (from which the Bishop was banished) to the cognizance of petty suits,—preparatory to the establishment of the feudal system in its utmost rigor, he constituted the office of CHIEF JUSTICIAR. His plan was to have a grand central tribunal for the whole realm, which should not only be a court of appeal, but in which all causes of importance should originate and be finally decided. This was afterwards called CURIA REGIS, and sometimes AULA REGIS,[1] because it assembled in the hall of the King's palace. The great officers of state, the Constable, the Mareschal, the Seneschal, the Chamberlain, and the Treasurer, were the judges, and over them presided the Grand Justiciar. "Next to the King himself, he was chief in power and authority, and when the King was beyond seas (which frequently happened) he governed the realm like a viceroy."[2] He was at all times the guardian of the public peace as Coroner-General,[3] and he likewise had a control over the finances of the kingdom.[4] In rank

Establishment of the office of Chief Justiciar.

Curia Regis.

[1] *Aula Regia* or *Regis* (Royal or King's Court), a court established by William the Conqueror in his own hall, whence the name. It was composed of the great officers of state resident in the palace, of the king's justiciars, and the greater barons. It formed an advisory body consulted by the king in matters of great importance.—*Century Dict.*

[2] Madd. Exch. xi., where it is said "he was wont to be styled Justicia Regis, Justiciarius Regis, and absolutely Justicia or Justiciarius; afterwards he was sometimes styled *Justiciarius Regis Angliæ*, probably to distinguish him from the King's Justiciar of Ireland, Normandy," etc.

[3] The Chief Justice of the King's Bench is still Chief Coroner of England.

[4] It is supposed to be a remnant of this power, that, upon the sudden death or resignation of the Chancellor of the Exchequer, the Chief Justice of the King's Bench does the formal duties of the office till a successor is appointed.

CHAP. I. he had precedence of all the nobility, and his power was greater than that of all other magistrates.[1]

The administration of justice continued nearly on the same footing for eight reigns, extending over rather more than two centuries. Although, during the whole of this period, the AULA REGIS was preserved, yet, for convenience, causes, according to their different natures, were gradually assigned to different committees of it,—to which may be traced the Court of King's Bench, the Court of Common Pleas, the Court of Exchequer, and the Court of Chancery. A distinct tribunal for civil actions was rendered necessary, and was fixed at Westminster by the enactment of MAGNA CHARTA—"Communia placita non sequantur curiam nostram, sed teneantur in aliquo certo loco;"[2] but the suitors in other causes were long after obliged to resort alternately to York, Winchester, Gloucester, and other towns, in which the King sojourned at different seasons of the year.[3] At last a great legislator[4] modelled our judicial institutions almost exactly in the fashion in which, after a lapse of six centuries, they present themselves to us at the present day, showing a fixity unexampled in the history of any other nation.

Origin of the Court of King's Bench, etc.

The Chief Justiciar was then considerably lowered in rank and power, but the identity of the office is to be distinctly traced, and therefore it will be proper that I should introduce to the reader some of the individuals who filled it in its greatest splendor.

[1] "Dignitate omnes regni proceres, potestate omnes superabat magistratus."—*Spel. Gloss.* p. 331.

[2] "Common causes do not follow our court, but are held in a certain fixed place."

[3] The Court of King's Bench is still supposed to be ambulatory, and by original writs the King orders the defendant to appear on a day named, "wheresoever we shall then be in England."

[4] Edward I. (1272–1307), often called the "English Justinian."

CHAP. I.

Odo the first Chief Justiciar.

The first Chief Justiciar of England was ODO. The beautiful Arlotta, the tanner's daughter of *Falaise*, who, standing at her father's door, had captivated Robert, Duke of Normandy,—after living with him as his mistress, bringing him a son,[1] the founder of the royal line of England, lamenting his departure for the Holy Land, and weeping for his death,—was married to Herluin, a Norman knight, by whom she had three children. Odo, the second of these,[2] possessing bright parts and an athletic frame, was bred both to letters and to arms, and, while he took holy orders, he still distinguished himself in all knightly achievements. He was a special favorite with his brother the young Duke, who made him at an early age Bishop of Bayeux. Nevertheless he still continued to assist in the military enterprises by which William extended and consolidated his continental dominions, and attracted warriors from all the surrounding states to flock to his standard.

His birth.

A.D. 1066.

He accompanies William the Conqueror in the invasion of England.

When, on the death of Edward the Confessor, the Duke of Normandy claimed the crown of England, and prepared to wrest it from the perjured Harold,[3] Odo preached the crusade in the pulpit, and zealously exerted himself in levying and training the troops. From Bayeux he carried a chosen band of men-at-arms in ten ships, with which he joined the main fleet at a short distance from St. Valery. He was one of the first to jump ashore at Pevensey, and he continued to ply his double trade of a priest and a soldier. At daybreak of the ever-memorable 15th of October, 1066,[4] he celebrated

[1] William the Conqueror.

[2] The eldest was Robert, Earl of Mortaigne; and the youngest a daughter, Countess of Albemarle. Will. Gem. vii. 3; viii. 37. Pict. 153, 211. Orderic, 255.

[3] Harold II., son of Godwine, succeeded Edward the Confessor, but was defeated and slain by the Duke of Normandy, William the Conqueror, at Senlac, near Hastings.—*Green's Hist. of Eng. People*, vol. i. p. 106.

[4] Date of the battle of Senlac, or Hastings.

CHAP. I. A.D. 1066.

mass in the Norman camp, wearing a coat of mail under his rochet. He then mounted a gallant white charger, carried a marshal's baton in his hand, and drew up the cavalry, with the command of which he was intrusted. In the fight he performed prodigies of valor, and he mainly contributed to the victory which had such an influence on the destinies of England and of France. The famous Bayeux tapestry[1] represents him on horseback, and in complete armor, but without any sword, and bearing a staff only in his hand, with the superscription "Hic Odo Epis. baculum tenens confortat,"[2] as if he had merely encouraged the soldiers. Although there might be a decency in mitigating his military prowess in the eyes of those whose souls he had in cure, there is no doubt that on this day he acted the part of a skilful cavalry officer and of a valiant trooper.

Bayeux Tapestry.

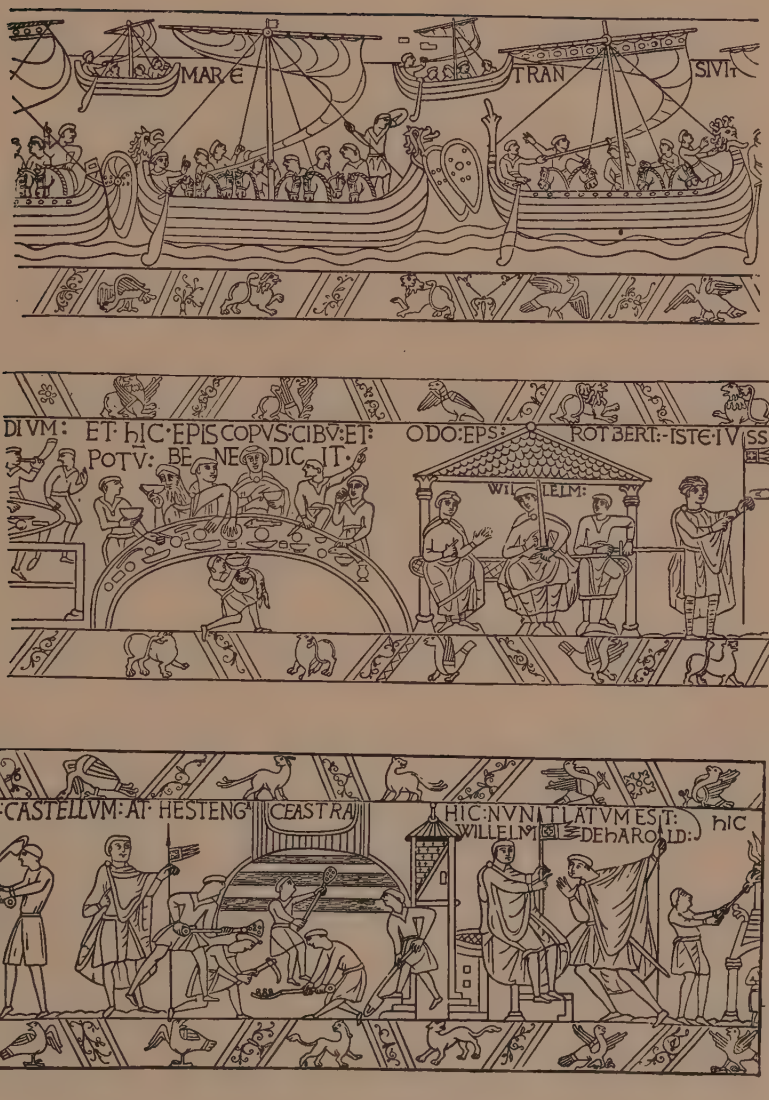
Coronation of William the Conqueror.

When the ceremony of the coronation was to take place in Westminster Abbey,[3] he wished to consecrate the new monarch, and to put the diadem on his head; but, to soften the mortification of the English, and to favor the delusion that the kingdom was to be held under the will of the Confessor and by the voluntary choice of the people, Aldred the Archbishop of York was preferred, and he asked the assembled multitude "if they would have William for their King?" Odo, as a reward for his services, received a grant of large

[1] This roll of tapestry, formerly in the Cathedral and now in the public library at Bayeux, was probably made in England for Bishop Odo, the Conqueror's brother. Mr. Freeman regards it as "holding the first place on the Norman side" for the events depicted in it—from Harold's journey to Normandy to the flight of the English after his fall at Senlac.—*Freeman's Norman Conquest*, vol. iii. p. 377.

[2] "At this time Bishop Odo, bearing a staff, encourages the soldiers."

[3] Westminster Abbey is said to have been founded in the 7th century, rebuilt by Edward the Confessor, and dates in its present form mainly from the latter half of the 13th century. The British sovereigns, from Edward the Confessor to Queen Victoria, have been crowned in the abbey, and many of them have been buried there.—*App. Encyc.*, Vol. X. p. 600.



BAYEUX TAPESTRY.

possessions in Kent, and was created Earl of that county. In contemplation of the establishment of the AULA REGIS, by the agency of which the Norman jurisprudence was to be introduced into England, and Norman domination perpetuated there, Odo was likewise appointed GRAND JUSTICIAR. Like many ecclesiastics of that time, he had attended to the Roman civil law[1] and the learning of feuds, as well as to the canon law; and it was expected that he would be useful not only in judicial proceedings, but in the meetings of the national assembly, by which the Conqueror thought of giving an appearance of legality to his rule. CHAP. I. He is appointed Chief Justiciar.

This arrangement was highly successful; and so quiet did all things appear to be in England, that in the following year William returned to Normandy to show his new grandeur to his countrymen, and remained there eight months, taking with him Edgar Atheling,[2] the legitimate heir to the throne, and many of the principal English nobility. Odo was left behind as Justiciar; and William Fitz-Osborne,[3] a redoubted knight, related to the ducal family, was associated with him in the regency. The Norman chroniclers pretend that Odo on this occasion displayed prudence and hu- A.D. 1067.

[1] Roman civil law is the positive municipal law of the Roman Empire, as comprised in the collections made by order of the emperor Justinian (530–533) and published by his authority. These collections were the Institutes, the Digest, the Code, and the Novellæ, which, comprised in one work, are called the Corpus Juris Civilis, by way of distinction from the Canon law, which is the public and general code of laws of the Catholic Church.—*App. Encyc.*, vol. iv. p. 618.

[2] Edgar Atheling was the grandson of Edmund Ironside. After the battle of Hastings, he was proclaimed King by the archbishops and citizens of London, but, through the desertion of Earls Edwin and Morkere, was forced to yield to William, at Berkhampstead.—*Green's Hist. of Eng.*, vol. i. p. 109.

[3] He aided Duke William in quelling every civil commotion of his Norman subjects; and in the invasion of England he equipped forty of the ships at his own expense, and commanded one of the three divisions at the battle of Hastings.—*Foss's Lives of the Judges of Eng.*

CHAP. I. manity, but had to encounter fickleness and ingratitude; while the Saxon chroniclers assert that he oppressed and insulted the natives so as to drive them into rebellion. The result was a general insurrection all over England, and William was obliged to return and to reconquer the kingdom. Odo was again most useful to him both in council and in the field, and was confirmed in his office of Justiciar, which he exercised for some years with undivided sway. Henry of Huntingdon,[1] after giving an account of William having put down all resistance, and of the splendor of his court, enumerates among the grandees present "*Odo Episcopus Baiocensis, Justiciarius et Princeps totius Angliæ.*"[2,3]

A.D. 1068—1082. Cause tried before him.

I find the report of only one cause tried before him, *Gundulph*,[4] *Bishop of Rochester* v. *Pechot, Sheriff of Cambridgeshire.* The defendant had seized the land of *Fracenham* in right of the King, and it was claimed by the plaintiff in right of his Church. The King ordered the trial to take place before Odo, the Grand Justiciar. He, going to the spot, summoned a folkmote, or general meeting of the freeholders, who, after an impartial summing up, found a verdict for the Crown.[5]

[1] Henry of Huntingdon (12th century), early English historian, whose *Chronicle* extends from the earliest times to 1154.—*Cassell's Biog. Dict.*

[2] "Odo, Bishop of Bayeux, Justiciar and Chief of all England."

[3] L. vi. p. 371. The Saxon Chronicle says, "Fuit (Odo) admodum potens Episcopus in Normannia et Regi omnium maxime fidelis. Habuit autem comitatum in Anglia et quum Rex erat in Normannia fuit ille primus in hac terra." ["Bishop Odo was very powerful in Normandy, and a most faithful subject of the King. He also held an earldom in England, and during the King's absence in Normandy was foremost in the realm."] —*Chron. Sax.* p. 190, n. 20, 25.

[4] Gundulph, Bishop of Rochester, was the architect of the Tower of London and built the castle and cathedral church of Rochester.—*Freeman's Norman Conquest*, vol. iv. p. 248.

[5] "Hanc enim Vicecomes Regis esse terram dicebat; sed Episcopus eandem S. Andreæ potius esse affirmabat. Quare ante Regem venerunt. Rex vero præcepit, ut omnes illius comitatus homines congregarentur et eorum judicio cujus terra deberet rectius esse probaretur," etc. ["The sheriff claimed that the land belonged to the King; but the Bishop

There was another trial of high interest soon after, at which Odo, the Justiciar, could not well preside, as he was the party sued. Lanfranc,[1] an Italian ecclesiastic, having succeeded Stigand,[2] the Saxon, as primate, complained that the Earl of Kent unlawfully kept possession of large territories, in that county, which of right belonged to the See of Canterbury. Geoffrey,[3] Bishop of Coutance, was specially appointed by the King to act as Justiciar on this occasion. The trial took place in a temporary court erected on Penenden Heath, and lasted three days; at the end of which time judgment was given for the Archbishop against the Earl.[4]

Geoffrey, Bishop of Coutance, acts as Justiciar.

declared it to be the property of St. Andrew. Wherefore they came before the King. The King ordered that the freeholders of the county should assemble, and that they should decide to whom the land belonged."] —*Ex Ernulfi, Hist. apud Angl. Sax.*, t. i. p. 339.

[1] Lanfranc (*b.* 1005, *d.* 1089), born at Pavia, was elected prior of Bec in Normandy in 1045, and abbot of St. Stephen's, Caen, in 1062; after the Norman conquest was made Archbishop of Canterbury (1070), and brought the English Church into closer connection with the Roman See.—*Cassell's Biog. Dict.*

[2] Stigand (11th century) became Bishop of the East Angles in 1043, of Winchester in 1047, and Archbishop of Canterbury in 1053 (probably). He became a strong partisan of the Godwines, and crowned Harold, but made his submission to William after Hastings. He afterwards, however, flew to the "Camp of Refuge" in the Isle of Ely, and was imprisoned for life on his capture in 1072.—*Cassell's Biog. Dict.*

[3] Geoffrey (Bishop of Coutance) was a member of the noble Norman house of Mowbray, and was elected Bishop of Coutance (Constantia) in Lower Normandy in 1048. He was more of a soldier than a divine, and, accompanying William on his invasion of England, held a distinguished command in the battle of Hastings. He assisted at the coronation of the Conqueror, and harangued the Normans on the occasion.—*Foss's Lives of the Judges of Eng.*

[4] The report of the case, one of the earliest to be found in our books, thus begins: "De placito apud Pinendenam, inter Lanfrancum Archiopiscopum, et Odonem Baiocensem Episcopum. Tempore Magni Regis Wilielmi qui Anglicum regnum armis conquisivit, etc. Huic placito interfuerunt Gorsfridus Constantiensis, qui in loco Regis fuit et Justiciam illam tenuit; Lanfrancus Episcopus qui placitavit; Comes Cantiæ, etc. et alii multi Barones Regis et ipsius Archiopiscopi, et alii aliorum comitatuum homines etiam cum isto toto comitatu, multi et magnæ auctoritatis viri Francigenæ scilicet et Angli," etc. ["Concerning the trial at Penenden Heath, between Archbishop Lanfranc and Odo, Bishop of Bayeux. In

CHAP. I.

Odo, however, was soon indemnified from the spoils of the Anglo-Saxon nobles; and being allowed, notwithstanding heavy complaints against him, to retain his office of Chief Justiciar, he amassed immense riches. By turns he officiated as a prelate, celebrating mass in the King's chapel,—he sat as supreme judge in the AULA REGIS,—and he commanded the King's troops in putting down insurrections.[1] Although scrupulous when presiding on the bench, it is said that when intrusted with a military command he thought it unnecessary to discriminate between guilt and innocence; he executed without investigation all natives who fell into his hands, and he ravaged the whole country.[2]

A.D. 1082. His quarrel with the King.

After he had held his office of Chief Justiciar nearly fifteen years, he quarrelled with the King, by entering into a mad enterprise which might have materially weakened the Norman power in England. An astrologer had foretold that he should reach the papacy and become sovereign of all Italy. The fortune of Guiscard,[3] in Sicily, had excited the most extravagant ex-

the time of William the Conqueror, who gained the English Kingdom by force of arms, etc. There were present at this trial, Geoffrey of Coutance, appointed by the King to act as Justiciar on this occasion; Bishop Lanfranc, who made the complaint; the Earl of Kent and many retainers of the King and Archbishop, besides many men of great influence, forsooth, in France and England," etc.]—*Ex Ernulfi, Hist. apud Angl. Sax.*, t. i. p. 234. It was clearly proved that, while Stigand was in disgrace, Odo had taken possession of many manors belonging to the archbishopric. See the proceedings at length in Selden's Spicilegium, p. 197.

[1] "In seculari ejus functione, non solùm rem exercuit judiciariam: sed bellis utique assuefactus exercitum Randulphi Comitis Estangliæ, suorumque confæderatorum, profligavit: et in ultione necis Walteri Dunelmensis Episcopi, Northumbriam late populatus est." ["In his office of secular magistrate, he not only performed the duties of Justiciar; but also overthrew entirely the army of Randulph, Earl of East Anglia, and his associates; and to avenge the death of Walter, Bishop of Durham, he ravaged Northumbria far and wide."]—*Spel. Gloss.* p. 337.

[2] Sim. 47. Malm. 62. Chron. Sax. 184. Flor. 639.

[3] Guiscard, Robert (*b.* 1015, *d.* 1085), Norman soldier; son of Tancred d'Hauteville; defeated Leo IX. at Civitella, and, with his brother Humphrey, was invested by him with the dukedom of Apulia. Subsequently

pectations among his countrymen, and they openly boasted that the whole of Europe would soon be under Norman rule. Odo expected to gain his object, partly by corruption, and partly by force of arms. Gregory,[1] the reigning Pope, was still in the vigor of manhood, but somehow a vacancy was to be occasioned, and was to be filled up by the Bishop of Bayeux. With this view he bought a stately palace at Rome; he transmitted immense sums of money to Italy; and he induced Hugh, Earl of Chester, and a number of other Norman nobles settled in England, to whom he promised Italian principalities, to join him, accompanied by a considerable body of military retainers, and to embark with him for a port in the Mediterranean. This enterprise had been carefully concealed from the knowledge of the King. But William, hearing of it before the fleet sailed, highly disapproved of it, dreading that, after such a loss of treasure and soldiers, the mutinous Anglo-Saxons might shake off his yoke. He therefore seized the money and stores prepared for the enterprise, and gave orders that Odo should be arrested. The officers of justice, out of respect for the immunities which ecclesiastics now assumed, scrupled to execute the command. William thereupon arrested his brother with his own hands. Odo insisted that he was a prelate, and therefore exempt from all temporal jurisdiction; whereupon William exclaimed, "God forbid that I should touch the Bishop of Bayeux, but I make the Earl of Kent my prisoner." The Earl-Bishop was immediately sent over to Normandy, and

Odo intrigues for the election to the Papacy.

Arrest of Odo.

he rescued Gregory VII. from the Emperor Henry IV., invaded the Greek empire, and died when on an expedition against it, having defeated the fleets of the Eastern empire and Venice.—*Cassell's Biog. Dict.*

[1] Gregory VII., "Hildebrand" (*d.* 1085), a man of low birth, who became monk of Clugny and archdeacon of Rome; exercised great influence over Leo IX. and succeeding popes, till he was himself selected, in 1073, to succeed Alexander II.—*Cassell's Biog. Dict.*

CHAP. I. kept in close confinement there for five years among many other state prisoners.[1]

Sept. 1087. He is liberated from imprisonment.

At last, the Conqueror being on his death-bed, it was suggested to him by his ghostly advisers, that if he hoped for mercy from God he ought to show mercy to man, and to set at liberty the noble captives whom he had long immured in the dungeons of Rouen. After trying to justify their detention, partly on the ground of their treasons, partly on the plea of necessity, he assented to the request, but long insisted on excepting his brother Odo, a man, he observed, whose turbulence would be the ruin both of England and Normandy. The friends of the prelate, by repeated solicitations, extorted from the reluctant monarch an order for his immediate enlargement.

Odo, at the moment when he recovered his liberty, hearing that the Conqueror had expired, and that his naked corpse lay neglected on the floor of a chamber of the deserted palace, instead of seeing to the decent interment of his brother and benefactor, proceeded with all speed to England to make advantage of the election to the vacant throne. On condition of being restored to all his vast estates in Kent, and to his office of Chief Justiciar, he agreed to support the claim of Rufus, and assisted at the coronation of the new sovereign.[2] Accordingly, he presided in the sittings of the AULA REGIS held at the Feast of Christmas, 1087, and the Feast of Easter, 1088. But his unreasonable demands of further aggrandizement being refused, and his resentment being inflamed against Lanfranc the primate, to whom he imputed his sufferings in the end of the last reign, as well as his present disappointment, he entered into a conspiracy

Restored to the office of Chief Justiciar.

[1] Chron. Sax. 184. Flor. 641. Malm. 63. H. Hunt, 731. Angl. Sax. i. 258.

[2] H. Hunt. lib. vii. p. 212.

CHAP. I. He conspires against William Rufus.

with Geoffrey de Coutance, Roger Montgomery, Hugh Bigod, Hugh de Grentmesnil, and other Norman barons, to invite over Robert Curthose,[1] his elder nephew, and to make him sovereign of England as well as of Normandy, on the specious pretences that the right of primogeniture should be respected, and that those who held estates both in Normandy and in England could not be safe unless both countries were ruled by the same sovereign. The confederates immediately took the field, expecting Robert to join them with a large army. Odo intrusted his strong castle of Rochester[2] to the care of Eustace, Count of Boulogne, with a garrison of five hundred knights, and himself retired to Pevensey,[3] to await the arrival of his nephew and to proclaim him King. But Rufus, [illegible]

[1] Robert Curthose, Duke of Normandy, was the elder brother of William Rufus.

[2] The History of the Castle is briefly as follows:—Odo of Bayeux, who had been banished by the Conqueror, returned on the accession of Rufus, in 1087, and was confirmed by the King in his former Earldom of Kent, to which Rochester was attached. A fresh quarrel, however, broke out between him and William II., who at last besieged and took the Castle of Rochester, which seems to have received considerable damage. The king, who is said to have suspected the loyalty of Gundulf, then Bishop of Rochester, insisted on his building a "tower of stone," at his own expense, within the Castle. To this the Bishop consented, after much opposition; but of the tower thus built by him no portion remains.

The Archbishops of Canterbury were appointed Constables of Rochester Castle by Henry I.; but during the troubles of Stephen's reign it passed from them and was never restored. It remained in the hands of the Crown, by which the constables were appointed, until after the accession of Henry VII., when, owing to the increased use of artillery, it became of little importance, and was accordingly suffered to fall to ruin. James I. granted the site to Sir Anthony Weldon, and it has since passed through various hands. It is now the property of the Earl of Jersey.—*Murray's Kent*, p. 80.

[3] After the Conquest, Pevensey was granted to the Conqueror's half-brother, Robert de Moreton, who built a castle within the ancient walls. Pevensey Castle was besieged by Rufus in 1088, when Odo, Bishop of Bayeux, who had espoused the cause of Duke Robert, held it out for six weeks; by Stephen; by Simon de Montfort, son of the "Fleur de Prys," the great Earl of Leicester, on behalf of the Barons, in 1265; and again in 1399, when it was gallantly held by the Lady Pelham against the combined forces of Sussex, Surrey, and Kent, who attacked it on behalf of

CHAP. I. Siege of Rochester Castle.

tached a body of troops to lay siege to Rochester, marched in person in pursuit of the Earl-Bishop, shut him up within the walls of a castle on the sea-shore, and, after a blockade of seven weeks, compelled him to surrender,—Robert, with his usual giddiness, having occupied himself with frivolous amusements, instead of hastening across the Channel to claim his birthright. By the terms of capitulation, life and liberty were granted to Odo, on condition that he should swear to deliver up the Castle of Rochester, and to abjure the realm of England for ever.

His resources were not yet quite exhausted. Being conducted by a small escort to the fortress, he was admitted into the presence of Eustace, and ordered him to surrender it, but made him a private signal that he wished to be disobeyed. The shrewd governor upbraided him as a traitor to the cause, and made prisoners both him and his guard. Rufus was excited to the highest indignation by the success of this artifice, and pressed the siege with the utmost rigor, being supported by a band of natives, who on this occasion rallied round him to be revenged for the oppressions they had suffered from the Grand Justiciar. However, the place was as obstinately defended by Odo, till the ravages of a pestilential disease compelled him to propose a surrender on honorable conditions. With considerable difficulty he obtained a promise that the lives of the garrison should be spared; but the demand that they should all depart with the honors of war, and that, as he himself withdrew, the besiegers, out of

Richard II., Pelham, its constable, being a strong partisan of Henry IV, On this occasion the earliest existing letter in the English language was despatched from Pevensey by the Lady Pelham "to her trew Lorde," then absent with Bolingbroke (see it in Hallam, *Lit. Hist.* i. 71, and in Lower's *Chron.*). The castle subsequently served as the prison of Edmund Duke of York, and of Queen Joan of Navarre, the last wife of Henry IV., accused of employing "metaphysical aid" against the life of Henry V., and detained here nearly four years.—*Murray's Sussex*, p. 65.

CHAP. I.

respect to his sacred character, should abstain from every demonstration of triumph, was contemptuously rejected. Accordingly, his men were all obliged to lay down their arms, and when he himself appeared, although clad only in canonicals, the trumpets being ordered to sound a flourish, as he passed through the ranks the English shouted "halter and gallows" in his ears. Knowing that, by the immunities of churchmen, his life was safe, he muttered threats and defiance; but he was immediately put on board a ship for Normandy, with a solemn admonition that, if he ever again set foot on English ground, nothing should save him from an ignominious death.[1]

He is banished from England.

It was charitably hoped that, renouncing the pomps of this world, he would pass the remainder of his days in superintending his diocese, which he had long grievously neglected, and in seeking to make atonement by penance for the irregularities of his civil and his military career; but, after spending a short time at Bayeux, he could endure a life of tranquillity no longer, and, as he was debarred from revisiting England, he wandered about from country to country on the Continent in quest of adventures, and at last died in a state of great destitution at Palermo.[2]

His death. A.D. 1096.

One original historian, in drawing his character,

[1] Chron. Sax. 195. Order. Vit. 668. Sim 215. In Halstead's "Kent" there is a drawing of his seal, on one side of which he appears as an Earl, mounted on his war-horse, clad in armor, and holding a sword in his right hand; but on the reverse he appears in his character of a Bishop, dressed in his pontifical habit and pronouncing a benediction. In the former capacity he left a natural son, who afterwards gained great renown in the court of Henry I. In the latter he was celebrated for his munificence to the see of Bayeux, which he filled about fifty years, rebuilding from the ground the church of Our Lady of Bayeux, furnishing it with costly vestments and ornaments of gold and silver, and endowing a chantry for twelve monks to pray for his soul, "bestowing his wealth, however indirectly gotten, on the church and poor."

[2] A city in Sicily, situated on a deep bay on the northern side of the island.

CHAP. I. says (I am afraid with too much justice) that "instead of attending to the duties of his station he made riches and power the principal objects of his pursuit;"[1] while another, who had probably shared in his bounty, declares that "he was a prelate of such rare and noble qualities, that the English, barbarians as they were, could not but love and fear him."[2]

There were several other Chief Justiciars in the reign of William the Conqueror, but none of their proceedings connected with the administration of the law are handed down to us, excepting the famous trial on Penenden Heath between Odo and Lanfranc;—and a very short notice of them will be sufficient.

William Fitz-Osborne, Chief Justiciar. A.D. 1066.

William Fitz-Osborne, for a short time associated in the office, was related to the Dukes of Normandy both by father and mother, and he had been brought up with the CONQUEROR from infancy. Under his advice William acted in all the negotiations with Edward the Confessor and Harold respecting the succession to the crown of England, and preparations were at last made to seize it by force of arms. To the praise of consummate wisdom in the cabinet he added that of unsurpassed courage in the field, and he acted a conspicuous part in the decisive battle of Hastings, insomuch that he was proclaimed to be "the pride of the Normans and the scourge of the English."[3] The earldom of Hereford was conferred upon him, with large possessions in the marches of Wales. During the time when he was Chief Justiciar, "Edric the Wild," whose possessions lay in that country, in con-

Revolt of Edric.

[1] Order. Vit. 255.

[2] Pict. 153.

[3] Pict. 151. Order. Vit. 203. Spelman says, "Acerrimus autem Anglorum hostis fuit, et qui Normanniæ Ducem præ aliis omnibus, ad invasionem Angliæ excitavit, funestoque illo Hastingense prælio tertiam aciem duxit." ["He was a very powerful enemy of the English, and he it was who incited the Duke of Normandy to invade England, and who acted a conspicuous part in the decisive battle of Hastings."]—*Gloss.* p. 336.

junction with several other Anglo-Saxon Thanes, and backed by the Princes of Wales, set his authority at defiance, and continued, after various repulses, to make head against him till William returned from Normandy, and effectually put down the insurrections which had taken place, in his absence, in this and other parts of the kingdom. Notwithstanding their general good understanding, differences would occasionally arise between the Conqueror and this favored captain. It is related that, on one occasion, Fitz-Osborne, being steward of the household, or "Dapifer," had set upon the royal table the flesh of a crane scarcely half roasted, when the King, who in old age was much of a gourmand, and particularly prized crane when well cooked, in his anger aimed a blow at him; this was warded off by Eudo, another favorite, but it so enraged Fitz-Osborne that he instantly threw up his office. He was succeeded by Eudo, who is thenceforth designated by chroniclers as "Eudo Dapifer." Fitz-Osborne, having been restored to the favor of his sovereign, and created Lord of the Isle of Wight, died in the year 1072.[1]

Geoffrey, Bishop of Coutance, Chief Justiciar.

Geoffrey, Bishop of Coutance, appointed Chief Justiciar for a special occasion,[2] was one of the fighting prelates who accompanied William, with the sanction of the Pope, in his memorable expedition; but having given judgment against Odo, he incurred the displeasure of this powerful favorite, aud his preferment in England was stopped.

On Odo's disgrace, William de Warrenne and

[1] Order. Vit. 218. Mad. Ex. i. 31–40. Will. Malm. 396–431.

[2] "Goisfridus Constanciensis Episcopus, in loco Regis fuit, et Justiciam tenuit in illo notabili placito apud Pinendene, inter *Lanfrancum* Archiopiscopum Cantuar, et *Odonem* Comitem Cantii." ["Geoffrey, Bishop of Coutance, was appointed by the King to act as Justiciar in that famous trial on Penenden Heath, between Lanfranc, Archbishop of Canterbury, and Odo, Earl of Kent."]—*Textus Ruff.* f. 50.

CHAP. I. William de Warrenne and Richard de Benefacta, Chief Justiciars.

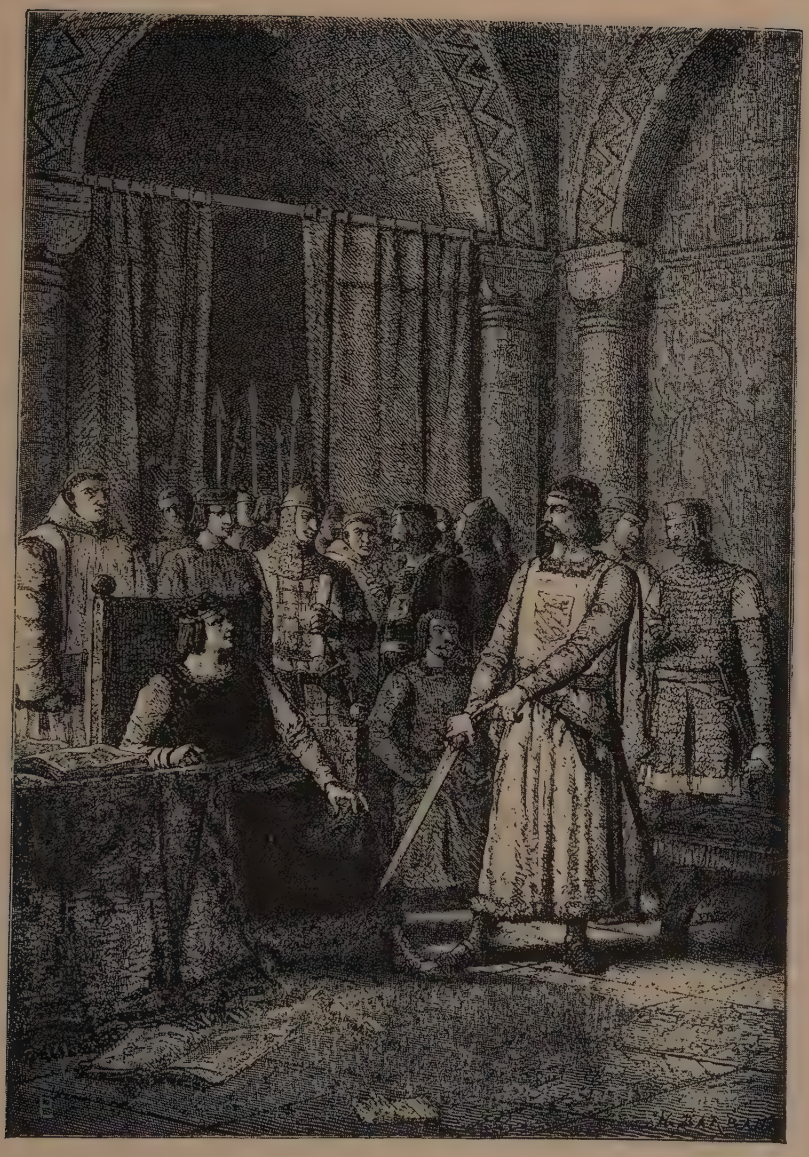
Richard de Benefacta were jointly appointed to the office of Chief Justiciar. The former, a countryman and companion of the Conqueror, is chiefly noticed as being the ancestor of the celebrated William de Warrenne who gained such renown by his actions in the reigns of Henry III. and Edward I.; and is still more celebrated for his answer, on being required to show his title to his estate,—when, drawing his sword, he exclaimed, "William the Bastard did not conquer the kingdom for himself alone; my ancestor was a joint adventurer in the enterprise; what he gained by the sword, by the sword I will maintain."[1]

How Richard de Benefacta came by this surname has puzzled antiquaries. He was originally called Richard Fitz-Gislebert, or Fitz-Gilbert, being the son

[1] The first William de Warrenne died 1089, and was buried in the chapter-house of a monastery he had founded at Lewes for monks of the Cluniac order. The following epitaph was engraved on his tomb:

"Hic Guilelmus Comes, locus est laudis tibi fomes,
Hujus fundator, et largus sedis amator.
Iste tuum funus decorat, placuit quia munus
Pauperibus Christi, quod promptâ mente dedisti.
Ille tuos eineres servat Pancratius hæres,
Sanctorum castris, qui te sociabit in astris.
Optime Pancrati, fer opem te glorificanti;
Daque poli sedem, talem tibi qui dedit ædem."

It is reported that "this Earl William did violently detain certain lands from the monks at Ely, for which being often admonished by the abbot, and not making restitution, he died miserably; and, though his death happened very far from the Isle of Ely, the same night he died, the abbot, lying quietly in his bed and meditating on heavenly things, heard the soul of the Earl, in its carriage away by the devil, cry out loudly, and with a known and distinct voice, 'Lord have mercy on me! Lord have mercy on me!' And, moreover, that the next day the abbot acquainted all the monks in chapter therewith; and likewise that, about four days after, there came a messenger to them from the wife of this Earl, with one hundred shillings for the good of his soul, who told them that he died the very hour the abbot heard that outcry; but that neither the abbot nor any of the monks would receive it, not thinking it safe for them to take the money of a damned person."—*See Dugdale's "Baronage,"* pp. 73, 74.



WILLIAM DE WARRENNE DECLARING THE TITLE TO HIS LANDS.

of Gislebert, or Gilbert, Count of Brion in Normandy. He gained distinction at Hastings, and as a reward for his bravery he received 8 lordships in Surrey, 35 in Essex, 3 in Cambridgeshire, 2 in Kent, 1 in Middlesex, 1 in Wiltshire, and 95 in Suffolk, besides all the burgages[1] in the town of Ipswich. He took an active part in the great survey recorded in Domesday;[2] in which, as may be supposed, his name very frequently appears. His descendants enjoyed much distinction during the reigns of all the Norman kings.

These two Grand Justiciars, during their joint administration, invented a new punishment, to be inflicted on disturbers of the public peace. Having encountered and defeated a powerful band of insurgents at a place called Fagadune, they cut off the right foot of all they took alive, including the ringleaders, the Earls of Norfolk[3] and Hereford.[4] It seems then to have been considered that in times of rebellion the Judges were to exercise martial law, or to disregard all law, according to their own arbitrary will.

William de Carilefo, Chief Justiciar.

There is only one other Chief Justiciar recorded as having served under the Conqueror; William de Carilefo, or Karilegho, who was a pious priest, and fought only with spiritual weapons. He was Abbot of St. Vincent's in Normandy, and without having been in the host which invaded England, or ever having put on a hauberk (strange to say!), from the mere reputa-

[1] A tenure by which houses or lands are held of the King, or other lord of a borough or city, at a certain yearly rent, or by services relating to trade or handicraft.—*Webster.*

[2] Domesday (or Doomsday) Book, or Book of Winchester, a register of the lands of England, framed by order of William the Conqueror. According to some historians it was begun in 1080 or 1083, according to others at the close of 1085; the book itself records its completion in 1086. —*App. Encyc.*, vol. vi. p. 198.

[3] Ralph of Wader, married Emma, daughter of William Fitz-Osborne. He was the one English traitor at Senlac.

[4] Roger, younger son of William Fitz-Osborne.

CHAP. I. tion of his sanctity he was nominated to the bishopric of Durham. He was consecrated at Gloucester by the Archbishop of Canterbury, in the presence of the King and the assembled prelates of the realm. Simeon,[1] having described this ceremony adds, "Erat acerrimus ingenio, subtilis consilio, magnæ eloquentiæ simul et sapientiæ."[2] He is much celebrated for the purity and impartiality with which he administered justice when placed at the head of the AULA REGIA; as well as the vigor which he displayed in asserting the privileges of
A.D. 1087. his see against the King. In the succeeding reign he was Chief Justiciar a second time after the fall of Odo; but soon quarrelled with Rufus, who was a notorious spoliator of Church property, and he was obliged to fly into Normandy, the temporalities of his see being seized into the King's hands. However, when Rufus made a northern progress to receive the homage of Malcolm,[3] King of Scotland, and perceived the veneration with which the exiled Bishop was regarded, he had the generosity to recall him to his see, and made restitution of the lands of which he had deprived it. The prelate employed the ample revenues thus restored to him in the munificent work of erecting a new
Erection of Durham Cathedral. and splendid cathedral at Durham,[4] on a plan which he had brought with him from France. He also presented to the Church a large store of books and ornaments collected by him during his banishment. Again falling under the King's displeasure, and being obliged to obey a mandate to travel towards Windsor under

[1] Simeon of Durham (12th century), historian, wrote a Chronicle extending from 616 to 1130.—*Cassell's Biog. Dict.*

[2] "He was a man of talent, accurate in giving counsel, and of great eloquence and wisdom."

[3] Malcolm III., succeeded Macbeth in 1057, died 1083.

[4] The church of Durham having been greatly neglected, the present edifice was commenced by him, and affords sufficient proof of the munificent expenditure, not only of this bishop, but of his successor, Ranulph Flambard, in its structure.—*Foss's Lives of the Judges of Eng.*

WESTMINSTER HALL.

From a Print of 1808.

the pressure of severe illness, he expired soon after his arrival there, on the morrow of the Epiphany,[1] in the year 1095. Such was his modesty, that he declined in his last moments the honor of burial in his cathedral, near the holy relics of St. Cuthbert;[2] and he was, by his own desire, interred on the north side of the chapter-house. But he himself was regarded as a Saint; miracles were worked at his shrine; and this continued the cherished place of sepulture of succeeding bishops. The monkish historians of Durham, in addition to encomiums on his piety, his liberality, his zeal for the rights of the Church, his genius, and his learning, praise him loudly for the simplicity of his manners, and the temperance of his life.[3] CHAP. I.

Flambard, Chief Justiciar.

Rufus's only other Chief Justiciar, in all respects a contrast to his predecessor, was Ralph Flambard, the "devouring Torch," who for some time held the Great Seal, and whom I have consequently described in my LIVES OF THE CHANCELLORS. To this work I must refer such of my readers as would become acquainted with his revolting atrocities and his edifying penitence. I may add, that while he was Chief Justiciar the sittings of the Curia Regis were first held in Westminster hall.[4] The Saxon Kings had founded a monastery

First sittings in Westminster Hall.

[1] Epiphany, the feast of the manifestation of Christ to the Gentiles, is celebrated on January 6.—*Webster*.

[2] St. Cuthbert, a shepherd boy, became prior of the monastery at Melrose, and afterwards of that of Lindisfarne. When the Danes came, the monks of Lindisfarne bore his relics to the banks of the Wear, and around his shrine a convent, cathedral, and city arose, called Durham.—*Cassell's Biog. Dict.*

[3] Godwin de Præs. 731. Roger de Wendover, xi. 32. Will. Malm. 486.

[4] Westminster Hall, first built by William Rufus, was almost rebuilt by Richard II., who added the noble roof of cobwebless beams of Irish oak "in which spiders cannot live," which we now see. On the frieze beneath the Gothic windows his badge, the White Hart couchant, is repeated over and over again. The Hall, which is 270 feet long and 74 feet broad, forms a glorious vestibule to the modern Houses of Parliament, and its southern extremity with the fine staircase was added when they were built. In its long existence the Hall has witnessed more tragic scenes

CHAP. I. on a piece of ground then surrounded by the Thames, and called "Thorney Island." In relation to its direc-

than any building in England except the Tower of London. Sir William Wallace was condemned to death here in 1305, and Sir John Oldcastle the Wickliffite in 1417. In 1517 three queens—Katherine of Arragon, Margaret of Scotland, and Mary of France—"long upon their knees," here "begged pardon of Henry VIII. for the 480 men and eleven women accused of being concerned in 'the Rising of the Prentices,' and obtained their forgiveness." Edward Stafford, Duke of Buckingham, was tried here and condemned in 1522, and, on hearing his sentence, pronounced the touching speech which is familiar to thousands in the words of Shakespeare [*Henry VIII.* Act ii. sc. 1.]. Here, May 7, 1535, Sir Thomas More was condemned to death, when his son, breaking through the guards and flinging himself on his breast, implored to share his fate. Here Fisher, Bishop of Rochester (1535); the Protector Somerset (1551); Sir Thomas Wyatt (1554); Thomas Howard, Duke of Norfolk (for the sake of Mary of Scotland, 1571); Philip, Earl of Arundel (1589); Robert Devereux, Earl of Essex, and Henry Wriothesley, Earl of Southampton (1600), were condemned to the block. Here sentence was passed upon the Conspirators of the Gunpowder Plot in 1606, and on the Duke and Duchess of Somerset for the murder of Sir Thomas Overbury in 1616. Here, concealed behind the tapestry of a dark cabinet (1640), Charles I. and Henrietta Maria were present through the eighteen days' trial of Thomas Wentworth, Earl of Strafford. In the same place Charles himself appeared as a prisoner on Jan. 20, 1649, with the banners taken at the Battle of Naseby hanging over his head. ["Westminster Hall," by Edward Foss.]

"Bradshaw, in a scarlet robe, and covered by his 'broad-brimmed hat,' placed himself in a crimson velvet chair in the centre of the court, with a desk and velvet cushion before him; Say and Lisle on each side of him; and the two clerks of the court sitting below him at a table, covered with rich Turkey carpet, on which were laid the sword of state and the mace. The rest of the court, with their hats on, took their seats on side benches, hung with scarlet. . . . During the reading of the charge the King sat entirely unmoved in his chair, looking sometimes to the court and sometimes to the galleries. Occasionally he rose up and turned about to behold the guards and spectators, and then sat down again, but with a majestical composed countenance, unruffled by the slightest emotion, till the clerk came to the words *Charles Stuart, as a tyrant, traitor, murderer, etc.;* at which the King laughed, as he sat, in the face of the court. The silver head of his staff happened to fall off, at which he appeared surprised; Herbert, who stood near him, offered to pick it up, but Charles, seeing that he could not reach it, stooped for it himself. When the words were read stating the charge to be exhibited 'on behalf of the people of England,' a voice, in a loud tone, called out, 'No, nor the half of the people—it is false—where are they or their consents?—Oliver Cromwell is a traitor.' This occasioned a confusion in the court; Colonel Axtell even commanded the soldiers to fire into the box from which the voice proceeded. But it was soon discovered that these words, as well as a

tion from the City of London, the metropolis of the kingdom, the new foundation received the name of "West-minster;" and here a royal palace was erected, which was enlarged and beautified by Edward the CHAP. I.

former exclamation on calling Fairfax's name, were uttered by Lady Fairfax, the General's wife, who was immediately compelled by the guard to withdraw."—*Trial of Charles I., Family Library*, xxxi.

The sentence against the King was pronounced on the 27th of January:

"The King, who during the reading of the sentence had smiled, and more than once lifted his eyes to heaven, then said, 'Will you hear me a word, Sir?'

"*Bradshaw.* Sir, you are not to be heard after the sentence.

"*The King.* No, Sir?

"*Bradshaw.* No, Sir, by your favor. Guards, withdraw your prisoner.

"*The King.* I may speak after the sentence, by your favor, Sir. I may speak after the sentence, *ever*. By your favor—

"*Bradshaw.* Hold!

"*The King.* The sentence, Sir. I say, Sir, I do—

"*Bradshaw.* Hold!

"*The King.* I am not suffered to speak. *Expect what justice other people will have.*"—*Trial of Charles I.*

In 1640 Viscount Stafford was condemned in Westminster Hall for alleged participation in the Roman Catholic plot of Titus Oates. On June 15, 1688, the Hall witnessed the memorable scene which ended in the triumphant acquittal of the Seven Bishops. In 1699 Edward, Earl of Warwick, was tried here for manslaughter. Lords Kenmure and Derwentwater, Carnwath and Nithsdale, Widdrington and Nairn were condemned here for rebellion in 1716, and Cromartie, Balmerino, and Kilmarnock in 1746, their trial being followed eight months later by that of the aged Lord Lovat. In 1760 Lawrence Shirley, Earl Ferrers, was condemned here to be hanged for the murder of his servant. In 1765 Lord Byron was tried here for the murder of Mr. Choworth; and in 1776 Elizabeth Chudleigh, Duchess of Kingston, was tried here for bigamy. The last great trial in the Hall was that of Warren Hastings (in 1788), so eloquently described by Macaulay.

But Westminster Hall has other associations besides those of its great Trials. It was here that Henry III. saw the archbishop and bishops hurl their lighted torches upon the ground, and call down terrific anathemas upon those who should break the charter he had sworn to observe. Here Edward III. received the Black Prince when he returned to England with King John of France as a prisoner after the battle of Poitiers. Hither came the English barons with the Duke of Gloucester to denounce Robert de Vere, Duke of Ireland, to Richard II.; and here, when Richard abdicated, Henry Bolingbroke claimed the realm of England as descended by right line of blood from Henry III. [Shakespeare in his *Richard II.* makes the King pronounce his abdication at this scene.]

Westminster Hall was the scene of all the Coronation banquets from the time of William Rufus to that of George IV.

CHAP. I. Confessor, but was still mean, compared with the stately structures erected by the Normans at Rouen. The Conqueror, although he observed that it contained no hall in which the great council of the nation could assemble, or in which justice could conveniently be administered, had been too much occupied with graver matters to supply the defect; but William Rufus built, adjoining to the palace at Westminster, the magnificent hall which is looked upon with such veneration by English lawyers, and which is the scene of so many memorable events in English history. This being completed at Whitsuntide,[1] 1099, the Chief Justiciar, Flambard, sat here in the following Trinity Term;[2] and the superior courts of justice have been held in it for 750 years. The concentration thus established has perhaps contributed to the ascendeney which English law and English lawyers have so long enjoyed.[3]

Erection of Westminster Hall.

It might have been expected that Henry I.,[4] who at the commencement of his reign wished to make himself popular by restoring Saxon institutions, would have abolished or reformed the office of Chief Justiciar, of which such heavy complaints had been made by the natives; but he allowed it to remain in full vigor, and he soon appointed to it the famous Roger,[5] Bishop of

A.D. 1100.

[1] Whitsuntide, the seventh Sunday after Easter; a festival of the church in commemoration of the descent of the Holy Spirit on the day of Pentecost.—*Webster's Dict.*

[2] Trinity Term (Eng. courts), the sitting of the law courts between May 22 and June 12.—*Webster's Dict.*

[3] Independently of the *prestige* attaching us to Westminster Hall, I would caution my brethren against the desire, from some partial convenience, to disperse themselves in separate bodies over different regions of the metropolis.

[4] Henry I., youngest son of William I., seized the throne on the death of William II., 1100. He established the Court of Exchequer.

[5] Foss, in his Lives of the Judges, says: "The suppression of those violations of the law which were prevalent in the last reign, the improvement in the purity of the coin, the punishment of the oppression of the royal purveyors, were the results of his wise and considerate counsels; and, though the whole government of the kingdom was intrusted to him

INTERIOR OF OLD WESTMINSTER HALL.

From a Print of 1797.

CHAP. I. Roger, Bishop of Salisbury, Chief Justiciar.

Salisbury, who rendered it more odious than it had ever been before. The extraordinary vicissitudes of his career, from his reading mass as a village curate in Normandy till he was obliged to surrender his castle of Devizes[1] to King Stephen,[2] and died miserably, I have already recorded.[3]

Ralph Basset, Chief Justiciar.

The only other Chief Justiciar of much note during this reign was Ralph Basset, son of one of the companions of the Conqueror, and the founder of a family in England of great distinction for many generations.[4] Of his judicial exploits there is no record, except at a grand assize which, during the King's absence in Normandy, he held at Huncote in Leicestershire. Here he convicted capitally, and executed, no fewer than four score and four thieves, and deprived six others of their eyes and their virility; drawing upon himself the imputation of cruelty, and not escaping the suspicion that he was influenced by a desire to enrich himself from the forfeitures which were incurred.[5] He held the

in the frequent and long-continued absences of the King in Normandy, no contemporary historian hints a doubt of his integrity, and no fact is recorded which can raise a suspicion that his ministry was distasteful to the people."

[1] The old castle of Devizes was destroyed in the 17th century, and has almost completely disappeared.—*Baedeker's Gt. Britain.*

[2] Stephen, son of Adela, daughter of William I., and of Theobald, Comte de Blois, succeeded Henry I. in 1135.

[3] Lives of Chancellors, vol. i. ch. xi.

[4] Now represented by the Baroness Basset.

[5] A.D. 1124. "Toto hoc anno fuit Rex Henricus in Normanniâ. Hoc ipso anno, post S. Andreæ festum tenuit Radulfus Basset et Regis Theini Procerum Concilium in Lethecæstrescire apud Hunde-hoge, et suspenderunt ibi tot fures quot antea nunquam; scilicet in parvo temporis spatio, omnino quatuor et quadraginta viros. Sex item viros privarunt oculis et testiculis." ["During the whole of this year King Henry was in Normandy. In his absence, after the feast of St. Andrew, Ralph Basset held a grand assize at Huncote, in Leicestershire, where were hung more thieves than ever before; forsooth, in a short time there were executed, in all, four and forty men. Also six others were deprived of their eyes and virility."] The writer goes on pathetically to describe the oppressed condition of his countrymen under the Chief Justiciar. "Admodum gravis fuit his annus. Qui quicquam honorum habebat, iis privatus erat per

CHAP. I. office for a long period, and was much more praised for the vigor than the clemency or justice with which he exercised its functions.[1]

A.D. 1135—1154. The Chief Justiciars of King Stephen were not men of much renown,[2] till the last,—who was no other than Prince Henry, afterwards his successor, and so famous under the name of Henry II.

A.D. 1153. Prince Henry (afterwards Henry II), Chief Justiciar. After the long struggle for the crown of England between the daughter[3] of Henry I. and him who pretended to be the heir male of the Conqueror, it was at last settled that he should reign during his life, and that her son by Geoffrey Plantagenet should be immediately appointed Chief Justiciar, and should mount the throne on Stephen's death.[4] I shall not attempt to rival Lord Lyttleton by attempting a history of this Chief Justiciar from his cradle to his grave. I must content myself with saying that he held the office above a year. During the first six months he actually presided in the AULA REGIS,

magna vectigalia, et per iniqua decreta; qui nihil habebat periit fame." ["This was indeed a grievous time. Whoever possessed wealth and honors was deprived of them on account of the great taxes; while he who had nothing perished from hunger."]—*Chron. Sax. ad ann.* 1124.

[1] He was succeeded by his son Richard Basset, of whom I do not find any more precise notice than by Ordericus Vitalis, who says, "Ricardus Basset, cujus in Anglia, vivente Henrico Rege, potentia, utpote Capitalis Justitiarii, magna fuit." ["Richard Basset, whose power in England as Chief Justiciar was great during the reign of King Henry."]—*Ord. Vit. ad ann.* 1136.

[2] Geoffrey Ridel, Geoffrey de Clinton, and Alberic de Vere.

[3] Matilda, daughter of Henry I., married Henry V. of Germany in 1114, and after his death, Geoffrey Plantagenet, Earl of Anjou.

[4] "Anno Gratiæ 1153, qui est annus 18 regni Regis Stephani, pax Angliæ reddita est, pacificatis ad invicem Rege Stephano et Henrico Duce Normanniæ. Rex vero constituit Ducem Justiciarium Angliæ sub ipso, et omnia negotia per eum terminabantur. Et ab illo tempore Rex et Dux unanimes erant in regimine Regni." ["In the year of grace 1153, which is the 18th year of the reign of King Stephen, peace was restored to England, King Stephen and Henry, Duke of Normandy, being mutually reconciled. The king, moreover, appointed the Duke Justiciar of England, and all matters of business were settled by him. And from that time the King and Duke were in harmony in governing the realm."]—*Hoveden.* vol. i. p. 490, n. 40.

CHAP. I. A.D. 1154.

and, with the assistance of the Chancellor and the other great officers of state, decided the causes civil and criminal which came before this high tribunal. He then paid a visit to the continental dominions which he held in his own right and in right of Eleanor[1] his wife, extending from Picardy to the mountains of Navarre. Sojourning in Normandy when he heard of the death of Stephen, he was impatient to take possession of the crown which had been secured to him by the late treaty. A long continuance of stormy weather confined him a prisoner in the haven of Barfleur, but at last he reached Southampton, and, being crowned King of England, the first act of his reign was to appoint a new Chief Justiciar.

Richard de Luci, Chief Justiciar.

The object of his choice was Richard de Luci, a powerful baron of a distinguished Norman family, who was expected to govern the realm with absolute sway in Henry's name. Although he long nominally retained his office, it was soon stripped of all its power and splendor. The Lord Chancellor had hitherto been a subordinate officer, but the towering ambition and lofty genius of Thomas à Becket,[2] almost from the moment when he received the Great Seal, reduced all the other ministers of the crown to insignificance, and, till the time when, becoming Archbishop of Canterbury, he quarrelled with his benefactor, all the power of the state was concentrated in his hands. Encroaching on the functions of the Chief Justiciar, he not only ruled all questions that came before the AULA REGIS, al-

Thomas à Becket.

[1] "Eleanor of Aquitaine in 1137 married Louis VII. of France. Divorced in 1152, she became the wife of Henry Plantagenet, afterwards Henry II. of England."—*Cassell's Biog. Dict.*

[2] "Thomas à Becket (1119–1170), son of a London merchant, under the patronage of Theobald, Archbishop of Canterbury, was made archdeacon and employed in missions to Rome. In 1162 he became Archbishop of Canterbury. Two years later his goods and the revenues of his see were confiscated, and he fled to France. Soon after his return he was murdered."—*Cassell's Biog. Dict.*

CHAP. I. though only sixth in point of rank of those who sat as judges there,[1] but the domestic government of the country and foreign negotiations were exclusively intrusted to him, and when war broke out he commanded the royal army in the field.

A.D. 1162. After the King's quarrel with the Archbishop, the importance of De Luci was very much enhanced, and we not only find judicial proceedings recorded as having taken place, "Coram Ricardo de Luci et aliis Baronibus apud West-monasterium,"[2] but we learn that he went about administering justice all over the kingdom, and that he quelled a dangerous insurrection in London. To him we are chiefly indebted for the CONSTITUTIONS OF CLARENDON,[3] by which a noble effort was made to shake off the tyranny of Rome, and which were adopted as the basis of our ecclesiastical polity at the Reformation.[4] He was excommunicated for the part he had taken in this heretical production, but afterwards made his peace with the Church. At last he was overwhelmed by the terrors of superstition, and, abandoning worldly cares and grandeur, he laid down his office, became a monk,

Constitutions of Clarendon.

[1] "He came after the Justiciar, the Constable, the Mareschal, the Seneschal, and the Chamberlain."—*Madd. Exch.* c. ii.

[2] "In the presence of Richard de Luci and other Barons at Westminster."

[3] The Constitutions of Clarendon, a code which in the bulk of its provisions simply re-enacted the system of the Conqueror. What was new was the legislation respecting ecclesiastical jurisdiction. The King's court was to decide whether a suit between clerk and layman, whose nature was disputed, belonged to the Church courts or the King's. A royal officer was to be present at all ecclesiastical proceedings in order to confine the Bishop's court within its own due limits, and a clerk convicted there passed at once under the civil jurisdiction. An appeal was left from the Archbishop's court to the King's court for defect of justice, but none might appeal to the Papal court save with the King's leave. The privilege of sanctuary in churches and churchyards was repealed, so far as property and not persons was concerned.—*Green's Hist. of the Eng. People*, vol. i. p. 157.

[4] Madd. Exch. i. 146–701.

and died wearing the cowl in a monastery which he had founded.[1] CHAP. I.

His successor was Robert, Earl of Leicester. Although inferior men now held the Great Seal, the office of Chief Justiciar did not recover its splendor till near the end of this reign, when it was filled by one of the greatest men who have appeared in English history. We are informed of only one judgment of the King's Court while the Earl of Leicester presided there, and this was upon the ex-Chancellor, Thomas à Becket, who was first amerced in 500*l.*, and, proving contumacious, was ordered to be imprisoned.[2] Robert, Earl of Leicester, Chief Justiciar.

I will therefore pass on to RANULFUS DE GLANville, equally distinguished as a lawyer, a statesman, and a soldier. Ranulfus de Glanville.

He was born in the end of the reign of Henry I., at Stratford, in the county of Suffolk; his family was noble, but I do not find any particulars of his progenitors.[3] He afforded a rare instance in those days of a layman being trained as a good classical scholar, and being initiated in all the mysteries of the feudal law. At the same time he was a perfect knight, being not only familiar with all martial exercises, but having studied the art of manœuvring large bodies of men in the field, according to the most scientific rules then known. He attached himself to several Chief Justiciars,[4] sometimes assisting them in despatching busi- His birth.

[1] "Ric. de Luci Justiciarius Angliæ, relictâ Justiciariâ potestate, factus est Canonicus regularis in Abbatiâ de Lesnes quam ipse in fundo suo fecerat." ["Richard de Luci, Justiciar of England, having laid aside his justiciary power, was made a canon regular in the Abbey of Lesnes, which he had founded on his own estate."]—*R. Hoveden*, f. 337, *a*.

[2] Hoved. vol. ii. 494, n. 1, 10, 20; 495, n. 10.

[3] "Ranulph de Glanvilla fuit vir præclarissimus genere, utpote de nobili sanguine." ["Ranulph de Glanville, descended from a noble family, was very distinguished by birth."]—See Preface to Lord Coke's 8th Rep. xxi.

[4] From his knowledge of practice, and all the forms of procedure, there

CHAP. I. ness in the AULA REGIS, and sometimes accompanying them in their campaigns.

He inherited a considerable estate from his father, and he obtained large possessions in right of his wife Berta, daughter and heiress of Theobald de Valeyinz, Lord of Parham. Part of these were situate in the county of York, where he seems to have established his principal residence. Under King Stephen he was receiver for the forfeited Earldom of Conan, and collector of the rents of the Crown in Yorkshire and Westmoreland.[1]

He is sheriff of Yorkshire. A.D. 1174.

During the year 1174, the 20th of Henry II., he was High Sheriff of Yorkshire, and in this capacity he conferred greater glory on his country than any Englishman, before or since, holding merely a civil office. Henry II. being hard pressed in his continental dominions by the unnatural alliance between his rebellious sons[2] and Louis VII., the Scots under their King, William the Lion, invaded England, and committed cruel ravages in the northern counties. Being stopped on the banks of the Tyne by the obstinate defence of the Castle of Prudhoe, Geoffrey, Bishop of Lincoln, the King's son by the Fair Rosamond,[3] collected a

Scots invade England.

seems reason to think that he must some time have acted as prothonotary or clerk of the court, although never in orders

[1] Madd. Exch. i. 297 (*g*), 430 (*b*), 328 (*p*); ii. 183 (*y*), 200 (*g*)

[2] Besides Henry, "the Younger King," who was to have England, Normandy, and Anjou, there was Richard, who had already received his mother's inheritance of Aquitaine and Poitou; and Geoffrey, for whom the King had obtained the succession to the Duchy of Britanny by betrothing him to its heiress Constance. There was also John, to provide for whom, the King wanted the other sons to give up some castles out of their promised shares of his dominions. Young Henry refused, and the King's ill-wishers—Louis of France and his own neglected wife Eleanor—stirred up the three elder youths to rebel against their father. Round the revolted sons there gathered in 1173 a strong league of discontented barons, English and foreign, aided by the Kings of France and Scotland. —*Thompson's Hist. of Eng.*, p. 72.

[3] Fair Rosamond was the daughter of Walter, Lord Clifford. She lived at Woodstock and bore to Henry, William Longsword, Earl of

large army to encounter them. At his approach they retreated to the north, and he, thinking that they had recrossed the Tweed, marched back to his see, singing TE DEUM, and celebrating very boastfully the supposed success which he had gained. The King of Scots, however, took several strong castles in Northumberland, which had at first withstood his assault, and laid siege to Alnwick[1] with his regular forces, sending skirmishing parties even beyond the Tyne and the Tees to collect provisions and levy contributions. One of these, commanded by Duncan, Earl of Fife, surprised the town of Warkworth, which they burned to the ground, massacring all the inhabitants without distinction of age or sex, and not sparing even those who had taken sanctuary in the churches and convents.

CHAP. I. A.D. 1174.

He takes William the Lion, King of Scots, prisoner.

Ranulfus de Glanville, the sheriff of Yorkshire, hearing of these excesses, without waiting for orders from the government, issued a proclamation for raising the *posse comitatus*,[2] and all classes of the inhabitants flocked eagerly to his standard. With a body of horse, in which were about four hundred knights, after a hard day's march, he arrived at Newcastle. There he was told that William the Lion, instead of repressing, encouraged the devastation committed by the marauders, and, believing that there was no longer any army to face him, entirely neglected all the usual precautions of military discipline. The gallant sheriff resolved to push forward next morning, in the hope of relieving Alnwick and surprising the besiegers. The English accordingly began their march at break of

Salisbury, and Geoffrey, Bishop of Lincoln.—*App. Encyc.*, vol. xiv. p. 431.

[1] Alnwick castle, the seat of the Duke of Northumberland, is one of the finest feudal piles in England. It has been restored and contains interesting paintings and antiquities.—*Baedeker's Great Britain*, p. 417.

[2] "The power of the county."

CHAP. I. A.D. 1174.

day, and, though loaded with heavy armor, in five hours had proceeded nearly thirty miles from Newcastle. As they were then traversing a wild heath among the Cheviot Hills they were enveloped in a thick fog, and the advice was given that they should try to find their way back to Newcastle; but Glanville, rather than stain his character with the infamy of such a flight, resolved to proceed at all hazards, and his men gallantly followed him. They proceeded some miles in darkness, being guided by a mountain stream, which they thought must conduct them to the level country. Suddenly the mist dispersed, and they saw before them in near view the castle of Alnwick beleaguered by straggling bands of Scots, and the Scottish King amidst a small troop of horsemen diverting himself with the exercises of chivalry, free from any apprehensions of danger. William at first mistook the English for a party of his own countrymen returning loaded with the spoils of a *foray*. Perceiving his error, he was undismayed, and, calling out "Noo it will be seen whilk be true *knichts*,"[1] he instantly charged the enemy. In a few minutes he was overpowered, unhorsed and made prisoner. Some of his nobles coming to the rescue, and finding their efforts ineffectual, voluntarily threw themselves into the hands of the English, that they might be partakers in the calamity of their sovereign. Glanville, prudently considering that he might be endangered by the reassembling of the scattered bands of the Scots, immediately set off with his prisoners for Newcastle, and arrived there the same evening. Thus did the valiant civilian in one day, after the fatigue of a long march, ride at the head of a band of heavy armed horse above

Glanville defeats the Scots.

[1] These words he must have spoken that they might be understood by his Lowland common soldiers. Addressing the knights themselves, he would have spoken in French, which was then the language of the higher orders in Scotland as well as in England.

seventy miles, charge a national army, and make captive a King who had threatened to carry war and desolation into the very heart of England. Having secured his royal prize in the strong castle of Richmond, he sent off a messenger to London to announce his victory.

How the news was received by Henry II.

It so happened that, the same hour at which William was taken at Alnwick, Henry had been doing penance at the tomb of St. Thomas of Canterbury.[1] Alarmed by the dangers which surrounded him from domestic and foreign enemies, and dreading that he had offended Heaven by the rash words he had spoken which led to the martyrdom of the Archbishop, he had thought it necessary to visit the shrine of the new saint. At the distance of three miles, discovering the towers of Canterbury Cathedral,[2] he alighted from his horse, and walked thither barefoot, over a road covered with rough and sharp stones, which so wounded his feet that in many places they were stained with his blood. His bare back was then scourged at his own request by all the monks of the convent, and he continued a whole day and night before the tomb, kneeling or lying prostrate on the

Henry does penance at the shrine of à Becket.

[1] All Europe was now ringing with the fame of his miracles, and, by a papal bull issued the year before, he had been declared a Saint and a Martyr, an anniversary festival being appointed on the day of his death "in order that, being continually applied to by the prayers of the faithful, he should intercede with God for the clergy and people of England."

[2] It is said that a Christian church, afterwards used as a pagan temple, was built here in Roman-British times by King Lucius; and that this was presented by Ethelbert, along with his palace, to St. Augustine (p. 26), who converted the buildings into a cathedral and monastery. Augustine's cathedral afterwards fell into decay and became more than once the prey of the flames and of the pillaging Danes, who carried off and murdered Archbishop Alphege in 1011; and at the time of the Norman Conquest it had almost entirely disappeared. *Lanfranc* (1070–89), the first Norman archbishop, accordingly undertook the erection of a completely new cathedral, a work which was continued by his successor *Anselm* and the *Priors Ernulph* and *Conrad*, and finished in 1130.—*Baedeker's Gt. Britain*, p. 28.

CHAP. I. A.D. 1174.

hard pavement, employed in prayer, and without tasting nourishment. He then journeyed on to Westminster; and he was lying in bed, very sick from the penance he had undergone, when, in the dead of night, a messenger, stained with the soil of many counties, arrived at the palace, and, declaring that he was the bearer of important despatches, swore that he must see the King. The warder at the gate and the page at the door of the bedchamber in vain opposed his entrance, and, bursting in, he announced himself as the servant of Ranulfus de Glanville. The question being asked, "Is all well with your master?" he answered, "All is well, and he has now in his custody your enemy the King of Scots." "Repeat those words," cried Henry, in a transport of joy. The messenger repeated them, and delivered his despatches. Henry, having read them, was eager to communicate the glad tidings to his courtiers, and, expressing gratitude to Ranulfus de Glanville, piously remarked that "the glorious event was to be ascribed to a higher power, for it had happened while he was recumbent at the shrine of St. Thomas."[1]

Capture of the King of Scots announced to Henry II.

Glanville was ordered forthwith to appear with his prisoner, and to carry him to Falaise in Normandy. Here William the Lion was kept in strict confinement, till the negotiation was concluded by which he was ungenerously compelled to acknowledge himself the liegeman of the King of England.

The sheriff was immediately promoted to be one of the Justiciars appointed to assist the great officers in the AULA REGIS, and to go *iters* or circuits for administering justice periodically in different parts of England.[2] In this new capacity he showed as much zeal as

[1] Newb. ii. 36. Gervase, 1427. Dalrymp. Annals, i. 129. R. Hoved. 529.

[2] There seems reason to think that he was one of a court appointed to receive petitions in the first instance, and to report upon them to the Aula

when leader of a military band, and the only fault imputed to him was that he sometimes displayed "a vigor beyond the law." These stretches of authority, however, were justified or palliated by the turbulence of the times. He now possessed the entire confidence of the King, and he gradually acquired more influence than any other minister.

One task of peculiar delicacy was committed to him. Henry, although he owed so much to his wife, proved to her the worst of husbands; and he not only entertained the Fair Rosamond and other mistresses, but he actually shut up Eleanor as a prisoner in the castle of Winchester. The government of this fortress, with the care of the royal captive, was now assigned to Glanville, and was continued to him till the death of Henry, after a lapse of sixteen years. He had contrived, however, to give satisfaction to both parties, for the King praised him for his watchfulness and the Queen for his kindness.[1]

Imprisonment of the Queen.

A.D. 1180. Glanville made Chief Justiciar.

As a reward for all these services Granville at last gained the object of his ambition, and was installed in the office of Chief Justiciar. It had been some time in commission, the commissioners being the Bishops of Winchester, Norwich, and Ely; but as soon as the Pope heard of their appointment he wrote to say that "it was the duty of pastors to feed their flocks, not to act the part of secular magistrates," and he recalled them from the courts in which they presided to the care of the dioceses to which they had been consecrated. On their resignation, Ranulfus de Glanville, with universal applause, was appointed to the office with sole and un-

Regis. After the mention of his name with five others, there is the following observation in Maddox: "Isti sex sunt Justitiæ in curia regis constituti ad audiendum clamores populi."

[1] See the authorities collected by Miss Strickland in her excellent Life of Queen Eleanor.

CHAP. I. divided sway.[1] He is the first who filled it who is celebrated for learning, impartiality, and other qualities purely judicial. Under him the AULA REGIS deserved the praise bestowed upon it by Peter de Blois[2] in a letter to the King:—"If causes," said he, "are tried in the presence of your Highness or your Chief Justiciar, then neither gifts nor partiality are admitted; there all things proceed according to the rules of judgment and justice; nor does ever the sentence or decree transgress the limits of equity. But the great men of your kingdom, though full of enmity against each other, unite to prevent the complaints of the people against the exactions of sheriffs, or other officers in any inferior jurisdictions, whom they have recommended and patronize, from coming to your royal ears. The combination of these magnates can only be truly compared to the conjunction of scales on the back of the Behemoth of the Scriptures, which fold over each other, and form by their closeness an impenetrable defence."[3]

Peter de Blois.

A.D. 1184. Yet my Lord Chief Justiciar Glanville himself did not escape calumny. The story was circulated against him, and is recorded by a contemporary historian, that, to get possession of the wife of Gilbert de Plumpton, he brought a false charge of rape against that potent Baron before the AULA REGIS, sitting at Worcester, and sentenced him to be hanged; but that the King, taking pity upon the prisoner, and knowing the motive for the prosecution, spared his life, and commuted the sentence to perpetual imprisonment.[4] This is proba-

[1] Diceto, 606. R. Hoved. 337.

[2] Peter de Blois (died circa 1200), Archdeacon of London; was employed as a diplomatist by Henry II., his works being published in 1519.—*Cassell's Biog. Dict.*

[3] Epistle 95, ad Hen. Regem.

[4] A.D. 1184. "Eodem anno cum Gilbertus de Plumtun Miles nobili prosapia ortus ductus esset in vinculis usque Wigorniam, et accusatus esset de raptu coram Domino Rege a Ranulfo de Glanvilla Justiciario Angliæ, qui eum condemnare volebat, injusto judicio judicatus est suspendi in

bly a scandalous perversion of the truth by an enemy; for we have every reason to believe that the Chief Justiciar was a man of pure morals and honorable principles; and it is incredible that Henry, who was renowned for his love of justice, should have continued to employ, in a post of high power and trust, one whom he had detected in attempting such an enormity. We need not doubt that the punishment was mitigated on account of some extenuating circumstances,—which might have been brought to the King's notice by the Judge himself. CHAP. I.

Glanville continued to fill the office of Chief Justiciar for five years longer; and his judicial reputation still went on increasing. He now composed and published in Latin, "A Treatise on the Laws and Customs of the Kingdom of England," which on some points is still of authority, and which may be perused with advantage by all who take an interest in our legal antiquities. This author is to be considered the father of English jurisprudence. Bracton, who wrote in the following century, is more methodical and elegant, but he draws largely from the Roman civil law, and is sometimes rather speculative; while Glanville actually details to us the practice of the AULA REGIS, in which he presided, furnishes us with a copious supply of precedents of writs[1] and other procedure then in use, Glanville as a law writer. Bracton.

patibulo. Rex pietate commotus præcepit custoditum manere; sciebat enim quod per invidiam fecerat hæc illi Ranulfus de Glanvilla, qui eum morti tradere volebat propter uxorem suam. Sic itaque Miles ille a morte liberatus usque ad obitum Regis fuit incarceratus." ["In the same year Gilbert de Plumpton, an earl, was brought in fetters to Worcester, and accused of rape, in the presence of the King, by Ranulfus de Glanville, Justiciar of England, who wishing to condemn him, by an unjust decision he was sentenced to be hanged; but the King, moved with compassion, spared his life; for he knew that Ranulfus de Glanville, who wished him to die, on account of his wife, had done these things through hatred. Accordingly, the Baron was imprisoned until the death of the King."]—*R. Hoved.* vol. ii. pp. 622, 623.

[1] It is curious to observe that his "Precipe quod reddat" and various

CHAP. I. A.D. 1188.

and explains with much precision the distinctions and subtleties of the system which, in the fifth Norman reign, had nearly superseded the simple juridical institutions of our Anglo-Saxon ancestors. The general reader may be amused by a translation of his PREFACE:

Preface to Glanville's book.

"The Majesty of the King should not merely be supported with arms to restrain rebels and to repel foreign invaders, but ought likewise to be adorned with laws for the peaceful government of the people.[1] May our most illustrious Sovereign conduct himself with such felicity both in peace and in war, —by the force of his right hand crushing the insolence of the proud and the violent, and with the sceptre of equity moderating his justice to the humble and obedient,—so that, as he may be always victorious over his enemies, so he may on all occasions show himself impartially just in the government of his subjects!

"How vigorously, how skilfully, how gracefully our most excellent King has conducted his arms and baffled his foes is manifest to all, since his fame has now spread over the whole world, and his splendid actions have reached even the extremities of the globe. How justly, how discreetly, and how mercifully he who loves peace, and is the author of it, has conducted himself towards his subjects is evident, since the Court of his Highness is regulated with so strict a regard to equity, that none of the judges have so hardened a front or so rash a presumption as to dare to deviate, however slightly, from the path of justice, or to utter a sentence in any measure contrary to truth.[2] Here, indeed, no poor man is oppressed by the power of his adversary, and the balance of justice is not swayed by love or by hatred. Every decision is governed by the laws of the realm, and by those customs which, founded on reason in their origin, have for a long time been established. What is still more laudable, our King disdains not to avail himself of the advice of such men (although his subjects)

other writs are precisely the same as those used in the reign of William IV. when real actions were abolished.

[1] This commencement is imitated by Bracton, Fleta, and the Scottish "REGIAM MAGISTRATUM."

[2] The writer seems not to have suspected the scandalous tales spread abroad respecting himself and Sir Gilbert and Lady Plumpton.

who, in gravity of manners, in familiarity with the laws and customs of the realm, in wisdom and in eloquence, are known to surpass others, and whom he has found by experience to use most despatch (as far as is consistent with reason) in the administration of justice, by deciding difficult questions and ending suits; acting now with more severity, now with more lenity, as they see most expedient.[1]

"The English laws, although not written, may, without impropriety, be termed *laws*. Indeed, we adopt the maxim, 'That which pleases the prince has the force of law.'[2] But I refer more particularly to those laws which evidently were promulgated by the advice of the nobles and the authority of the prince. If from the mere want of writing only they should not be considered as *laws*, then, indeed, writing would seem to confer more authority upon laws than either the authority of those framing them, or the equitable principles on which they are framed.

Preface to Glanville's book—continued.

"To reduce in every instance the laws and constitution of this realm into writing would in our times be absolutely impossible, as well on account of the ignorance of writers as of the confused multiplicity of enactments. But there are some well established rules, which, as they more frequently arise in court, it appears to me not presumptuous to put into writing, to assist the memory and for general reference. A certain portion of these I mean to submit to the reader in the following work, purposely making use of a familiar style, and of words which occur in legal proceedings. My object has been to instruct not only the professional lawyer, but such as are less accustomed to technical learning. For the sake of perspicuity I have divided the present work into BOOKS and CHAPTERS."[3]

[1] This is said to afford proof that our system of equitable jurisprudence is to be traced to the Aula Regis.

[2] Justin. Inst. li. t. 2, s. 6.

[3] Lord Coke says, "Ranulphus de Glenvilla, in the reign of King Henry II., learnedly and profoundly wrote of part of the laws of England (whose works remain extant at this day); and in the Preface he writeth that the King did govern this realm by the laws of this kingdom, and by customs founded upon reason and of ancient time obtained. By which words, spoken so many hundred years since, it appeareth that then there were laws and customs of this kingdom, grounded upon reason and of ancient time obtained, which he neither could nor would have affirmed if

CHAP. I. A.D. 1188.

As a specimen I may give the proceedings in a suit for land,—leading either to "Trial by Battle," or "the Grand Assize:"

Mode of trial by Grand Assize or by Battle.

"After three reasonable essoins, which accompany the view of the land, both parties being again present in court, the demandant shall claim in this manner: 'I demand against this H. half a knight's fee, or two ploughlands, in such a vill, as my right and inheritance, of which my father was seized in his demesne as of fee, in the time of King Henry I., and from which he took the profits to the value of 5*s.* at least, in corn, hay, and other produce; and this I am ready to prove by my freeman, I., to whom his father, when on his death-bed, enjoined, by the faith which a son owes to his father, that if he ever heard a claim concerning that land, he should prove this as that which his father saw and heard.'

"The demand being thus made, it shall be at the election of the tenant either to defend himself by the Duel, or to put himself upon the King's Grand Assize, and require a recognition 'which of the two has the greater right to the land in dispute?' But here we would observe, that after the tenant has once waged the Duel, he must abide by his choice, and cannot afterwards put himself upon the Assize.

"In the Duel, the tenant may defend himself either in his own person if he choose so to do, or by any other unobjectionable witness as his champion. But it frequently happens that a hired champion is produced in court, who, for reward, has undertaken the proof. If the adverse party should except to such a champion, alleging him to be an improper witness, from having accepted a reward, and that he is ready to prove this accusation against the champion, this matter shall be tried, and the principal duel shall be deferred. If upon this charge the champion or the demandant should be convicted and conquered in the duel, then his principal shall lose the suit, and the champion shall never from thenceforth be admitted in court as a witness for the purpose of making proof by duel for any other person. But, with respect to himself, he may be admitted either in defending his own body, or in prosecuting any atrocious personal injury, as being a violation

they had been so recently and almost presently before that time instituted by the Conqueror."—*Preface to* 8*th Rep.* xviii.

of the King's peace ; and he may also defend by duel his right to his own fee and inheritance."

The proceedings are described till at last we come to the writ of possession :—

"The King to the Sheriff of ——, greeting : I command you that without delay you give possession to M. of half a knight's fee in the vill of ——, in your bailiwick, concerning which there was a suit between him and H. in my court ; because such land is adjudged to him in my court by the duel. Witness," etc.[1]

I add the mode of proceeding in cases of *treason* :—

Procedure in cases of treason.

"When any one is charged with the King's death, or with having raised a sedition in the realm or in the army, either a certain accuser appears, or not. If the public voice alone accuses him, he shall be required to give bail, or he shall be imprisoned. The truth of the charge shall then be inquired into in the presence of the Justices, who weigh each conjecture that makes for, or against, him. If on the trial by the ordeal a person is convicted of a capital crime the judgment is of life and members, which are at the King's mercy.

"Should, however, a certain accuser appear, and give security to prosecute his plea and propound his charge,—that he had seen, or by other evidence could prove in court, the accused guilty of having conspired against the King's life, or having raised a sedition in the realm or in the army, and the accused on the other hand deny everything the other had asserted, it is usual to decide the plea by the Duel. And here it should be observed, that from the moment the duel is waged neither party can add or diminish anything from the words employed in waging the duel, or in any other measure decline or recede from his undertaking, without being held as conquered, and liable to the penal consequences of defeat. Nor can the parties be afterwards reconciled to each other by any other mode than the King's license or that of his justices."[2]

[1] B. ii. ch. i—iv.

[2] Book xiv. c. l. The most recent instance we have of a duel of this sort is that between Henry of Bolingbroke and Thomas Mowbray, Duke of Norfolk, which is very graphically described in the first act of Shakespeare's play of Richard II.

CHAP. I. A.D. 1188.

It is said that Glanville drew up this compendium of the laws of England for the public use by the command of Henry II.[1] It remained in MS. till the year 1554, when it was first printed at the instance of Sir William Stanford, a grave and learned judge of the Court of Common Pleas.[2] Its merits have been very generally acknowledged. Dr. Robertson, in his observations upon the early part of the 12th century, says, "that in no country of Europe was there at that time any collection of customs, nor had any attempt been made to render law fixed: the first undertaking of that kind was by Glanville, Lord Chief Justice of England, in his *Tractus de Legibus et Consuetudinibus*, composed about the year 1189.[3] Lord Coke thus assigns the reason for giving a valuable sketch of Glanville's life,—"in token of my thankfulness to that worthy Judge for the fruit which I confess myself to have reaped out of the fair fields of his labors. I will, for the honor of him, and of his name, and posterity which remain to this day, impart and publish, to all future and succeeding ages, what I have found of great antiquity and of undoubted verity."[4]

Glanville's book printed.

Lord Coke praises the book.

[1] Madd. Exch. 123.

[2] 4 Inst. 345, n.

[3] Charles V. vol. i. p. 296. The historian, however, seems to have overlooked the "Assizes of Jerusalem," composed in 1099; highly valued by Lord Loughborough and by Gibbon.

[4] "Ne reverendissimo illi judici videar ingratus pro fructu quem ex pulcherrimis ejus operum arvis me colegisse confiteor, in honorem ejus, et nominis, et nobilis hodie florentis, in secula futura emittere, et in medium proferri, visum est, quæ magnæ fore vetustatis et exploratæ veritatis sæpissime sum expertus."—*Preface to 8th Rep.* xviii.

Spelman says, "Hic cum ad suam usque ætatem (instar rhetrarum Lycurgi) ἄγραφος id est *non scripta* mansisset, maxima pars juris nostri; omnium primus ἐγγράφον reddere aggressus est, composito illius argumenti libro quodam, cui in antiquis MSS. iste titulus *Tractatus de legibus et consuetudinibus Regni Angliæ, tempore Regis Henrici II. compositus, justitiæ gubernacula tenente illustri viro Ranulpho de Glanvilla, Juris Regni et Antiquarum consuetudinum eo tempore peritissimo.*" ["Since up to his own time (like the laws of Lycurgus) the greatest part of our laws had remained unwritten, he first of all determined to commit them to writing; they were written in a certain book, which in ancient

CHAP. I.

Some, I am well aware, have lately attempted to deprive Glanville of the honor of the authorship of the treatise which had so long passed under his name; but, in suggesting that it must have been written by an ecclesiastic employed by him, they appear to have little other reason beyond the assumed incompetency of one who was a layman and a warrior to write it; and they forget the manners of the age when they object to a grave and learned judge throwing off his robes and laying aside his pen, to put on a coat of mail and to grasp a spear.[1]

Glanville's conduct to the Welsh.

Glanville continued with energy to exercise the functions of his office in preserving the peace of the kingdom, as well as in presiding in the AULA REGIS. In the year 1181, the Welsh, during the King's absence in Normandy, having made an incursion into England, and killed Ranulfus de Poer, sheriff of Gloucestershire, the Chief Justiciar, as guardian of the realm, drew together an army, marched against the mountaineers, and drove them back to the woods and fastnesses of their own country.[2] A partisan warfare was kept up A.D. 1185.

manuscripts bears this title, "Treatise of the Laws and Customs of the English Kingdom, written in the time of King Henry II., that illustrious man, Ranulfus de Glanville, holding the office of justiciar, most skilled at that time in the law and ancient customs of the Kingdom."]—*Gloss.* p. 338.

[1] The objection hardly deserves notice, which arises from the title-page in the most ancient MS. copy of the work, saying that it was written in the time of Henry II., "the illustrious Ranulph de Glanville, who, of all in those days, was the most skilled in the law and ancient customs of the realm, then holding the helm of justice." It is truly observed that he would not thus have praised himself, but the title-page is evidently the composition of a later age. Hoveden evidently considered Glanville the author of the book which goes by his name, and probably thought that the learning and ability which it displays contributed to his elevation,—thus narrating his appointment as Chief Justiciar: "Henricus Rex Angliæ, pater, constituit Ranulphum de Glanvilla suum Justiciarium totius Angliæ, cujus sapientiâ conditæ sunt leges subscriptæ quas Anglicanas vocamus." ["King Henry of England appointed Ranulfus de Glanville his Justiciar of England, by whose wisdom were established what we call our English laws."

[2] Benedict. Abbas, ad ann. 1181.

CHAP. I. between the two nations for some years, till at last Glanville was sent by Henry to treat with Rees ap Gryffith, and the other chiefs of South Wales, not only for the purpose of finishing the war, and bringing back those who were called rebels to their fealty, but likewise for retaining a body of their foot to serve in the English army against Philip, King of France. Glanville's mission was in all respects most successful. He perceived, as Lord Chatham[1] did with respect to the Scotch Highlanders six centuries afterwards, that the best way of preventing them from annoying England was to employ them against foreigners, and that they would be faithful in proportion as they themselves were trusted. The Welsh very readily agreed to keep within their ancient boundaries, and to acknowledge Henry as their sovereign liege lord: they furnished a body of auxiliaries, who served with high reputation against his enemies on the Continent; and a basis of conciliation was established, which subsisted till Edward I. determined to crush the Princes of Wales, and to bring the whole principality under his own immediate rule.[2]

He ends the war in Wales.

As an acknowledgment of Glanville's services, civil and military, there was now conferred upon him the additional dignity of Dapifer.[3]

A.D. 1186. Glanville's prohibition in the suit between Henry II. and the monks of Canterbury.

The only other important affair, during the present reign, in which our Chief Justiciar is stated to have been concerned was a dispute between the King and the monks of Canterbury. As they collected immense riches from the miracles of St. Thomas, Henry had attempted to establish a rival foundation near this city; and, that they might preserve their monopoly, they prevailed on Pope Urban III. to send him an

[1] William Pitt, an English statesman, 1708–1778.
[2] Benedict. Abbas, ad ann. 1185, 1186.
[3] Madd. Exch. i. 24.

apostolical mandate, ordering him to put a stop to the building. CHAP. I.

Supported by the present Archbishop of Canterbury,[1] much more obsequious than his sainted predecessor, he disregarded the mandate, and was more eager than ever to mortify the monks. His Holiness thereupon appointed the abbots of Battle,[2] Feversham, and St. Augustine to enforce the execution of the mandate. They, holding an ecclesiastical court under the Pope's authority, were about to issue process against all connected with the new foundation, when Glanville, as Chief Justiciar, issued a writ of prohibition, which is still extant, in the following form: He prohibits an ecclesiastical court.

"R. de Glanville, etc., to the Abbot of Battle, greeting: I command you on behalf of our Lord the King, by the allegiance which you owe him, and by the oath which you have sworn to him, that you by no means proceed in a suit between the Monks of Canterbury and the Lord Archbishop of that See, until you shall have answer made to me thereupon; and, all delay and excuses being laid aside, that you appear before me in London, on Saturday next after the Feast of St. Margaret the Virgin, there to make answer in the premises. Witness," etc.[3]

[1] Baldwin, Thomas (*d.* 1191), an English monk who was made Archbishop of Canterbury in 1184. He crowned Richard I., preached the Crusade through Wales, and accompanied Richard to the Holy Land.—*Cassell's Biog. Dict.*

[2] Battle Abbey, one of the most interesting and venerable historical monuments in England, was founded by William the Conqueror in fulfilment of a vow made by him during the battle fought here with Harold, the English king, in 1066. Though generally known as the "Battle of Hastings," the battle is more accurately named after the heights of *Senlac*, on which William found the Saxons entrenched behind a stockade on his march from Pevensey, and which lie a short distance to the S.E. of the town of Battle. The abbey, indeed, stands on the very spot where Harold fell. The abbey was entrusted to the care of the Benedictine Order, and the minster was consecrated in 1095. At the Reformation (1538) it was presented to *Sir Anthony Browne*, Henry VIII.'s Master of the Horse, who converted the monastic buildings into a private dwelling-house and added the banqueting-hall. Since then it has passed through various hands.—*Baedeker's Gt. Britain*, p. 39.

[3] Appendix to Litt. Hist. H. II. vol. vi. 427. It is supposed that there

CHAP. I.

Glanville visits Canterbury.

The suit being spun out for some years, and Clement, a new Pope, vigorously taking up the cause of the monks, Glanville attempted to bring about an amicable settlement of the difference, and took a journey to Canterbury, that upon the spot he might negotiate with better effect. The subprior said that he and his brethren much desired the King's mercy,—*Glanville, C. J.* "You yourselves will have no mercy; but, from your attachment to the Court of Rome, refuse to submit to the advice of your sovereign or of any other person."—*Subprior.* "Saving the interests of our monastery, and the rights of the Church, we are ready to submit to the King; but we are greatly deterred from implicitly trusting to the King, by reason that he has suffered us to remain during almost two years deprived of all our possessions, and in a measure imprisoned within our walls."—*Glanville, C. J.* "If you doubt the King, there are bishops and abbots of your order, and there are barons and churchmen belonging to the court, who, should you trust your cause to them, would certainly do you justice."—*Subprior.* "All these you mention are so partial on the side of the archbishop, so complaisant to the King, and so unfriendly to us, that we do not venture to confide in their arbitration."—*Glanville, C. J.* (hasting away with much indignation). "You monks turn your eyes to Rome alone; and Rome will one day destroy you!"—This controversy was at last compromised, and there was religious peace in the country during the remainder of the reign of Henry II.

A new Crusade. A.D. 1188.

The passions of men were now absorbed in the new Crusade. Europe had been thrown into a state of consternation and alarm by the intelligence that Saladin[1]

was a similar writ to each of the two other legates, but this is the only one extant.

[1] Saladin (1137–1193), Sultan of Egypt and Syria, invaded Palestine in

CHAP. I. A.D. 1189.

had taken Jerusalem, and that nearly all the conquests of the first crusaders had been recovered by the Infidels. A parliament being held on the 30th of January, in the year 1189, the Archbishop of Canterbury, "by the authority of God, of the blessed apostles Peter and Paul, and of the Chief Pontiff, denounced excommunication against all persons who for seven years should begin or foment any war among Christians; and declared a plenary absolution from all sins to all persons, whether ecclesiastics or laymen, who should take the cross." The same day the Primate, and his vicar the Bishop of Rochester, preached before the King and Parliament *on the mystery of the Cross*; and, pointing out the sin and shame imputable to all who professed to be disciples of Jesus, from his sepulchre being left in the hands of believers in the false prophet Mahomet, exhorted men of all degrees, from the King on his throne to the meanest of his subjects, forthwith to join the gallant and pious bands who were marching for the East, and, by assisting in the great enterprise, to insure to themselves bright glory in this world, and eternal salvation in the next. The King expressed his determination to march for Palestine as soon as the affairs of state in which he was engaged would permit. But what was the astonishment of all present, when the Chief Justiciar, Ranulfus de Glanville—known to be vigorous and energetic, but not suspected of enthusiasm, now well stricken in years, who had spent the best part of his life in studying the law and administering justice, who had a wife and many children and grandchildren the objects of his tender attachment—rose up as soon as the King had concluded his speech, and, asking the Archbishop to invest him with the cross, was enlisted as a crusader

The Crusade preached.

Glanville takes the cross.

1187, defeated the crusaders at Tiberias, and took Jerusalem.— *Cassell's Biog. Dict.*

CHAP. I. with all the vows and rites used on such a solemn occasion.

So much in earnest was he, that he wished forthwith to set forward for the Holy Land. From the accumulated profits of his office, he was abundantly able to equip himself and the knights whom he meant to take in his train, without following the general example of selling or mortgaging his lands. But the young princes[1] engaged in another unnatural rebellion, and the King laid his commands on the Chief Justiciar to delay his journey till tranquillity should be restored. Before this consummation, the unhappy Henry expired at Chinon of a broken heart.

Death of Henry II. Sept. 3, 1189.

Glanville was present at the scene when, on the approach of Richard, blood gushed from the dead body, in token, according to the superstition of the age, that the son had been the murderer of the father. The new monarch, now stung with remorse, renounced all the late companions of his youth who had misled him, and offered to confirm all his father's councillors in their offices. This offer was firmly refused by Glanville, who had serious misgivings as to the sincerity of Richard, and who, now wearing the cross, was bound by his vow, as well as incited by his inclination, to set forward for the recovery of Jerusalem. However, he discharged the duties of the office for some weeks, till a successor might be appointed; and he attended, with the rank of Chief Justiciar, at Richard's coronation—when he exerted himself to the utmost to restrain the people from the massacre of the Jews,[2] which disgraced that solemnity.

Massacre of the Jews.

[1] Richard and John.

[2] The Jews, who had been expressly forbidden to show themselves at the coronation, attempted to make their way into the royal presence laden with costly gifts. They were expelled with insults and blows, the cry of "the Jews" was raised, and the populace roused to fury. All the afternoon of that Sunday and the whole of the following night were

CHAP. I. A.D. 1189.

Some authors represent that he was deprived of his office at the death of Henry II., and obliged to pay a heavy fine for imputed judicial delinquency; but there is no foundation for the story, beyond his voluntarily contributing a sum of money towards the equipment of the army now embarking for Palestine. He was treated with the greatest favor not only by the new King, but by Eleanor, the Queen Mother, who had long been his prisoner, and who, being now set at liberty, was destined to be Regent of the kingdom.[1]

Glanville departs on the Crusade.

Richard himself had taken the cross, and was preparing for that glorious expedition in which, by his unrivalled gallantry, he acquired his appellation of "the Lion-hearted." He therefore asked Glanville to accompany him, and to fight under his banner. But such was the impatience of the Chief Justiciar to tilt with a Saracen, that he declined the offer, and joined a band of Norman knights, who were to march through France and to take ship at Marseilles for Syria.

passed in murder, robbery, and destruction. This riot led to others at York, Lynn, Stamford, and Lincoln.—*Pike's Hist. of Crime in Eng.*, vol. i. p. 160.

[1] Richard of Devizes says, "Ranulfus de Glanvilla, regni Anglorum rector et regis oculus, depostatus et custodiæ traditus, ire saltem sibi liberum et redire redemit quindecim mille libris argenti, et cum hoc nomen Glanvilla tanta fuisset die præterito, nomen scilicet super omne nomen, ut quisque, cui concessum esset a Domino, loqueretur inter principes et adoraretur a populo, proximo mane non superfuit unus in terra qui vocaretur hoc nomine. Ranulfus de Glanvilla, quo multus fuerat suo tempore desertior dum præpotuit, privatus jam factus ex principe, in tantum hebuit præ dolore, ut gener ejus Radulfus de Ardenna ejusdem oris ratione deperderet quicquid oris ejus judicio fuerat consecutus." ["Ranulph de Glanville, governor of the English kingdom and favorite of the King, having been deprived of his office and committed to custody, was at length freed, by paying a fine of fifteen thousand pounds of silver; and the next morning not one remained in the land by the name of Glanville, a name which had been so great, recognized by princes and worshipped by the people. Ranulph de Glanville became so changed through grief at being deprived of his high office that even his son-in-law, Ralph de Ardenna, did not recognize him."] (p. 7, 8.) But this chronicler, like some of his successors, is much given to exaggeration, and sacrifices accuracy for effect.—See Hoveden, iii. 20–35.

CHAP. I. Glanville is killed at the siege of Acre, A.D. 1190.

Unfortunately, no farther account has come down to us of his journey; and we read no more of him, except that in the following year he was killed, fighting valiantly at the siege of Acre.[1]

Of Glanville's numerous offspring, only three daughters survived him. They were married to great nobles; and he divided among them his vast possessions before he joined the crusade. Collateral branches of his family continued to flourish till the end of the 17th century; and the name of Glanville, although now without a living representative, will ever be held in honored remembrance by Englishmen.[2]

King Richard I., eager to rescue the holy sepulchre from the Infidels, and reckless as to the means he employed to raise supplies for the equipment of his expedition, upon the resignation of Ranulfus de Glanville,

[1] Richard of Devizes, after stating that Baldwin, Archbishop of Canterbury, and Ranulf de Glanville, with others, had been sent forward by the Kings of France and England with a powerful army, adds, "ex quibus Baldewinus archiepiscopus et Ranulfus de Glanvilla obierunt in obsidione civitatis, quam Latini *Acras*, Judæi *Accaron* dicunt, dum ad huc reges in Sicilia morarentur." ["Of whom Baldwin the archbishop and Ranulfus de Glanville perished in the siege of the city, which the Romans call Acras, the Jews Accaron, while the Kings were tarrying in Sicily."]—*Ricardus Divisiensis, de Rebus gestis Ricardi Primi*, p. 19.

In *Stowel* v. *Lord Zouch*, Plowden 368, *b*, where Catline, C. J., in citing the authority of his great predecessor, says, "Glanville was a judge of this realm a long time ago, for he died in the time of King Richard I. at the city of Acres in the borders of Jury."

Lord Coke merely says, "Provectiori ætate ad Terram Sanctam properavit, et ibidem contra inimicos crucis Christi strenuissime usque ad necem dimicavit." ["When more advanced in years, he hastened to the Holy Land, and there fought most strenuously, until his death, against the enemies of the Cross of Christ."]—*Preface to 8th Rep* xviii.

Spelman says, "Exutus autem est officio Justitiarii anno I. Ricardi I. et deinde profectus in Terram Sanctam in obsidione Acon moriturus est." ["He was divested of the office of Justiciar in the first year of Richard I., and then advancing into the Holy Land, he was killed in the siege of Acre."]—*Gloss.* p. 338.

This celebrated siege lasted two whole years, and Acre held out till after the arrival of Richard I. in the summer of 1191, when he performed the prodigies of valor which placed him at the head of crusading chivalry.

[2] See Lord Lyttleton's Hist. of H. II., vol. iii. 135–440. Rot. Cur. R. 6, R. I. Roger de Wendover, iii. 36. Hoveden, ad an. 1190.

CHAP. I. A.D. 1189. Hugh Pusar, Bishop of Durham, Chief Justiciar.

put up the office of Chief Justiciar to sale, and the highest bidder was Hugh Pusar, Bishop of Durham. The two extremes of the career of this prelate were marked by extraordinary profligacy, while during a long interval between them he was much honored for his virtues and his good conduct. Being a nephew of King Stephen, he was brought up in the court of that worthless sovereign, and his morals were depraved even beyond the common licentious standard prevailing there. Nevertheless, taking priest's orders, he was made Archdeacon of Winchester; and, without any symptom of reformation, was appointed to the bishopric of Durham. If any sort of external decorum was preserved, the lives of churchmen were not strictly scrutinized in those days; but the archdeacon had openly and ostentatiously kept a harem in his parsonage-house, and the Archbishop of York refused to consecrate him,—objecting, that he had not reached the canonical age for being made a successor of the apostles; and reprobating his bad moral character, evidenced by his having three illegitimate sons by as many mothers. The bishop-elect complained bitterly of this stretch of authority, and appealed to Rome. While the appeal was pending, both the Pope and the Archbishop died; and Hugh, backed by royal solicitations, induced the new Archbishop to consecrate him, on an expression of penitence and promise of amendment.

22d Jan. 1153.

His licentious youth.

His meritorious middle age.

He was as good as his word; and, turning over a new leaf, he devoted himself to his spiritual duties, and became a shining ornament to the episcopate. So he went on steadily for no less than forty years. During this long period he built many churches in his diocese, and he added to his cathedral the beautiful structure called the GALILEE, which remains to this day a monument of his taste. So much respected was

CHAP. I. he by his own order, that he represented the province of York at the Council of Tours in 1163, and at the Council of Lateran in 1179.[1]

His seven years of blindness.

But, at the moment when he was doing penance for his early sins, Godric, a pious hermit, had foretold that, "although he would long see the light very clearly, he was to be afflicted with blindness seven years before his death." His physical vision remained unimpaired till his eyes were finally closed; but the prophecy was supposed to be fulfilled by his foolish and vicious actions during the last seven years of his life. On the death of Henry II., of whom he had stood in great awe, he felt a sudden ambition to mix in politics, and he had an easy opportunity to gratify his inclination. Notwithstanding his princely liberality, he had amassed immense riches, and the highest offices and honors of the state were now venal. At a vast price, he bought from Richard the Chief Justiciarship, and the Earldom of Northumberland,—not then a mere empty title, but a dignity to which important jurisdictions and emoluments were still attached. It is said that the King, when girding him with a sword at his investiture, could not refrain from a jest upon his own cleverness in converting an old bishop into a young earl. Very soon afterwards he was installed in the AULA REGIS. Although he had a slight tincture of the civil and canon law, he was utterly ignorant of our municipal institutions. But he showed that all he cared for was to reimburse himself for his great outlay, and he was guilty of rapine and extortion exceeding anything practised by any of his predecessors.

A.D. 1189.

His rapine and extortion.

Richard, whose departure for Palestine had been delayed longer than was expected, heard of these enormities, and declared that, as a check upon the

[1] Convened by Alexander III. in the Lateran basilica or hall of justice at Rome.

Bishop of Durham, William Longchamp, the Chancellor, must be associated with him in the office of Chief Justiciar. Pusar, having in vain remonstrated, came to the compromise that England should be divided between the two Justiciars, and that all the counties north of the Trent should be left at his mercy. He now tried to levy upon this poorer moiety the revenue he had expected to draw from the whole kingdom; but at last made himself so odious, that Longchamp marched a small military force to the north, deposed him entirely from the Chief Justiciarship, deprived him of the Earldom of Northumberland, made him prisoner, and kept him in close custody till he gave hostages to deliver up all the castles committed to his charge. He appealed to Richard, now performing prodigies of valor in the East; and that monarch, wishing, or pretending to wish, to do him justice, sent letters ordering him to be restored: but these were entirely disregarded by Longchamp. The ex-Chief Justiciar died unredressed and unpitied, affording (as it was said) a fine illustration of the text of Scripture, "No man can serve God and Mammon."[1]

CHAP. I. A.D. 1191.

His death.

William Longchamp, who, uniting in himself the offices of Lord Chancellor and Chief Justiciar, ruled

William Longchamp.

[1] "Ranulphus de Glanevilla Regni Procurator, cum jam grandævus esset et videret a Rege novitio multa minus consulte et improvide actitari, solemniter renuncians officio, Dunelmensem Episcopum habuit successorem, qui nec obluctans injunctum a Rege suscepit officium: sed si proprio fuisset contentus officio, divini juris multo decentius quam humani Minister extitisset, cum nemo possit utrique prout dignum est deservire, secundum illud Dominicum, *Non potestis Deo servire et Mammonæ.*" ["Ranulph de Glanville, governor of the realm, having resigned his office, since he was now advanced in years, and also because the new King was displaying little judgment and wisdom, the Bishop of Durham, nothing loth, succeeded to the office, and undertook the work imposed by the King. It was said that he was well deserving of that Scriptural text, 'No man can serve God and Mammon,' who, if he had been content with the work most suitable for himself, would have excelled as a minister of divine law."]—*Chron. Walt. Hem.* ch. 48. See God. Præs. 753. Roger de Wendover, ii. 298; cxi. 8–15.

CHAP. I. England during the absence of Richard in Palestine and his captivity in Germany, is one of the most interesting characters to be found in mediæval history; but I have already published whatever I have been able to collect respecting his extraordinary career.[1]

Walter Hubert, Archbishop of Canterbury, Chief Justiciar.

After his fall, WALTER HUBERT,[2] who, from being a poor boy, educated out of charity by Ranulfus de Glanville, had reached the dignity of Archbishop of Canterbury, had the secular office of Chief Justiciar likewise bestowed upon him.

From the rolls of the Curia Regis still extant,[3] and from contemporary chroniclers, I am enabled to give an account of the manner in which Hubert, while Chief Justiciar, dealt with a demagogue, who for some time gave great disturbance to his government.

A.D. 1193. Case of William-with-the-Long-Beard.

William Fitz-Osbert, a citizen of London, being bred to the law, is denominated "legis peritus,"[4] although he possessed but a very small portion of learning; he was of a lively wit, and surpassing eloquence; and he

[1] Lives of Chancellors, vol. i. ch. v.

[2] Immediately after the coronation of Richard I. he was elected to the see of Salisbury, and in the following year he accompanied that monarch on the crusade, and, with Archbishop Baldwin and his uncle Ranulph de Glanville, was placed in command of the forces before Acre. He alone of the three survived the campaign, and by his spirit and wisdom was of the greatest service to the army during Richard's illness, being mainly instrumental in procuring the truce with Saladin when the King of France had deserted the cause. Before his return to England he had the satisfaction of visiting Jerusalem.—*Foss's Lives of the Judges*, page 700.

[3] The Rolls of the Curia Regis held before the Chief Justiciar, from the 6 Richard I. 1194, have been published by the Record Commissioners. Sir Francis Palgrave, in his Introduction to them, says, in very striking language. "Comparing these records with the commentary furnished by the Year Books, and, lastly, opening the volumes of the Reporters properly so called, we could—if human life were adequate to such a task—exhibit what the world cannot elsewhere show, the judicial system of a great and powerful nation running parallel in development with the social advancement of the people whom that system ruled." The Rolls of the Curia Regis are not so interesting as might have been expected, as they for the most part merely state the names of the parties, the nature of the action, the plea, and the judgment.

[4] "Skilled in the law."

is the earliest instance recorded in England of a man trying to raise himself by popular arts. His stature being mean, he endeavored to give importance to his looks by nourishing his beard, contrary to the custom of the Normans. Hence he was generally called "*Willyam-with-the-longe-berde.*" Although of Norman descent, he pretended to take part with the Anglo-Saxons, and to be their advocate. The dominant race settled in London had a town of their own, "Ealdormannabyrig," still known as the ALDERMANBURY; while the rest of the city was inhabited by the oppressed natives. *Longbeard* first distinguished himself by speaking at the Folkmotes, which were still allowed to be held for laying on assessments, although not to assist in making laws as in former times. Not succeeding so well as he expected in obtaining the applause of the mob, he suddenly became a great courtier, and tried to gain the favor of Cœur de Lion by pretending that he had discovered a treasonable plot, into which his elder brother, Richard Fitz-Osbert, had entered. Having appealed him of high treason before the Curia Regis, he swore that, at a meeting to consider of a further aid to pay the King's ransom, he had heard the appellee say, "In recompense for the money taken from me by the Chancellor within the Tower of London, I would lay out forty marks to purchase a chain in which the King and the Chancellor might be hanged together. Would that the King might always remain where he now is! And, come what will, in London we never will have any other king except our mayor, Henry Fitz-Ailwin, of London Stone."[1] The

He becomes a courtier.

[1] Built into the Church of St. Swithin, facing the Station, is the famous *London Stone*, now encased in masonry and only visible through a circular opening with an iron grille. It is supposed by Camden to have been a Roman Milliarium—the central terminus whence all the great Roman roads radiated over England, and which answered to the Golden Milestone in the Forum at Rome. It is probably now a mere fragment of its former self.—*Hare's Walks in London*, vol. i. p. 329.

CHAP. I. A.D. 1193.

appellee pleaded *not guilty;* and, availing himself of his privilege as a citizen of London to defend himself by compurgation, many respectable persons came forward to attest their belief in his innocence; and he was acquitted. *Longbeard* complained bitterly that Hubert, the Chief Justiciar, had decided the cause corruptly; and, returning to the patriotic side, he now contrived, by inveighing against Norman oppression, to raise an insurrection against the Government, 52,000 citizens enrolling themselves as his adherents. He likewise called a folkmote in St. Paul's Churchyard, and here delivered a forcible and captivating discourse to the assembled people, inviting them to adhere to him steadily as the protector of the poor and the vindicator of their ancient rights. For some time he set the Government at defiance, but his popularity rapidly declining, Hubert, the Chief Justiciar, sent a body of troops into the City to apprehend him. After a slight skirmish, he was obliged to take refuge in the church of St. Mary-le-Bow,[1] and he retired to the lofty spire, in which he proposed to stand a siege. The Archbishop, having in vain sent him a summons to "come out and abide the law," thought that he might use a freedom with his own church which would have been sacrilege in a layman, and directed that the structure should be set on fire. *Longbeard* was obliged to abandon his stronghold, and, attempting to escape, he was secured, bound with fetters and manacles, and carried to the Tower of London. Here an extraordinary sitting of the AULA REGIS was held; and the "proceres," or more wealthy citizens of London, being called in as a jury, or as assessors, they advised that he should be

He calls a folkmote in St. Paul's Churchyard.

He is sent to the Tower.

[1] St. Mary-le-Bow, the first church in London built on arches of stone, whence, in the reign of William the Conqueror, it was called "St. Marie de Arcubus or Le Bow in West Cheaping."—*Hare's Walks in London*, vol. i. p. 232.

CHAP. I. A.D. 1196.

condemned to instant death. Sentence was immediately pronounced, and executed with great barbarity. Stripped naked, and tied by a rope to a horse's tail, *Longbeard* was dragged over the rough streets and flinty roads to Tyburn, where his lacerated and almost lifeless carcass, after the infliction of many cruelties, was hung in chains.[1]

Hubert's temporary triumph.

Hubert thus acquired a temporary triumph; but his violation of the right of sanctuary, and the outrage he had committed on a church of uncommon sanctity, caused great scandal, and afterwards led to his own fall. The clergy, as a body, took up the matter, partly from religious feeling, and still more from envy towards the Archbishop; and the monks of Canterbury in particular complained to the Pope that their Archbishop acted as a Justiciar, sitting as a judge in capital cases—whereby he not only broke the canons forbidding ecclesiastics to meddle in affairs of blood, but was so entirely engrossed in secular pursuits that all his ecclesiastical duties were entirely neglected and cast aside. They concluded their accusation with a statement how, "contrary to all the privileges and immunities of Holy Church, he had violated the sanctuary of St. Mary-le-Bow, whence *William-with-the-Loud-Berde* was forcibly taken, condemned to death, and hanged on the tree." The Pope addressed a mandate to Richard, requiring him, as he tendered his soul's health, to remove the Archbishop from the Justiciarship. This would have been quite enough to

Accused by the clergy.

The Pope's mandate.

[1] Rot. Cur. Regis, vol. i. 69, 95. Hoveden, 668, 765. Neubrigensis, 557, 562. Diceto, 691. M. Paris, 181. Gervasius, 1591. Knyghton, 1412. Sir Francis Palgrave, in his Introduction to the Rotuli Curiæ Regis, quotes an authority which I have not seen, "Annals of London contained in Liber de Antiquis Legibus, MS.," describing "how the Heretyke called *With-the-Longe-Berde* was drawen and hanged for heresye and cursed doctryne that he had taughte." From this it would appear that the Archbishop had attempted to give a religious turn to the affair, and excuse his own sacrilege by imputing heresy to his victim.

CHAP. I. A.D. 1196.

satisfy the petitioners; but, to the great mortification of the hierarchy, his Holiness furthermore enjoined the King thenceforth to abstain from employing any prelate in secular affairs, and he addressed a concurrent mandate to the prelates strictly prohibiting them from accepting employments so uncongenial to their station in the Church. The King obeyed, and Hubert was deposed from the Chief Justiciarship; but the general regulation produced very little fruit, for the grasping Archbishop contrived to obtain a high civil office in the next reign, and ecclesiastical ambition soon became more rampant in England than it had ever been.[1]

Hubert deposed from the Justiciarship.

Geoffrey Fitzpeter, Chief Justiciar.

King Richard appointed, in Archbishop Hubert's place, GEOFFREY FITZPETER, a powerful Baron, with great possessions both by inheritance and marriage; and, like Glanville, well skilled in the laws and customs of the realm. He had acted as a Justice of the Forest, as a Justice Itinerant, and as a Puisne Judge in the Aula Regis.[2] He was at the same time Sheriff of the united counties of Hertford and Essex, in which he held many manors. His military talents were likewise distinguished. The contemporary chroniclers inform us that, as soon as he was appointed "Proto-Justiciarius Angliæ," he led a powerful army against the Welsh and entirely defeated the restless Gwenwynwyn, who had besieged the English garrison placed by William de Brause in Maud's Castle. Three thousand seven hundred of the enemy are said to have been killed in the conflict, and the single Englishman who fell is said to have been killed by the erring shaft of a fellow-soldier.[3]

He defeats the Welsh.

[1] Lives of Chancellors, vol. i. ch. vi. Gervasius, 1614. Hoveden, 779. M. Paris, 193.

[2] On this account he was exempted from the payment of scutage and other assessments, and in the entry recording the fact he is described as "resident at the Exchequer."—*Mad. Exch.* ii. 390, *n.*

[3] Hoveden, 780, 781. Gervasius, 164, 165. R. de Diceto, 703.

CHAP. I. A.D. 1199.

On the death of Richard I., Fitzpeter was continued in his office of Chief Justiciar by John, and was very active in executing the measures of the Government, as well as in the administration of justice. "At the same time he appears to have joined in the King's amusements, as a payment of five shillings was made to him, *ad ludum suum*.[1] In 11 John there is a curious entry on the Great Roll of his fining in ten palfreys and ten hawks, that the King of Scotland's daughter might not be committed to his custody; but he was excused the palfreys. He was, no doubt, famous for his choice of hawks, for which he seems to have had an expensive taste, if we may judge from his having purchased one from the King at the extravagant price of four tunels of wine."[2] Withal he must have been a *bon vivant*, for we are told that he paid a penalty for breaking the canons of the Church by eating flesh on fast-days.[3]

Fitzpeter joins in the King's amusements.

However, neither by the great nor the agreeable qualities which he possessed could he long retain the favor of the capricious tyrant now on the throne: and, having in vain remonstrated against the course of policy which produced such disasters, he resigned his office. Till the year 1213 he remained in a private station. Then he was reappointed, at the request of the Barons, in the hope that he might put an end to the confusion and misery in which the kingdom was involved. All ranks submitting willingly to his sway, he had wonderful success in restoring order and the due administration of justice, and every one was delighted except the infatuated John, who grieved to see himself crossed in his love of tyranny. Unhappily,

Resigns, A.D. 1202.

Is reappointed, A.D. 1213.

[1] "For his own game;" i.e. for diverting the King.

[2] Foss's Judges of England, vol. ii. 64, cites 1 Rot. de Præst. 7 John. Cole's Documents, 272, 275. Mad. Exch. i. 462. Rot. de Fin. 6 John, 243.

[3] Rot. Misæ. 14 John. Cole's Doc. 248.

CHAP. I. Death of Fitzpeter, A.D. 1214.

this able Chief Justiciar died suddenly in the following year. When the King heard of his death, he laughed loudly, and said, with a profane oath, "Now I am again King and Lord of England!"[1]

A contemporary historian thus sounds his praise: "He was the chief pillar of the state,—being a man of high birth, learned in the law, possessed of great wealth, and closely connected with all the chief nobility by blood or friendship. Hence the King dreaded him above all other mortals. He steadily ruled the realm. But, after his decease, England resembled a ship tossed about in a storm without a rudder."[2]

Trial of the case of Fauconbridge *v.* Fauconbridge.

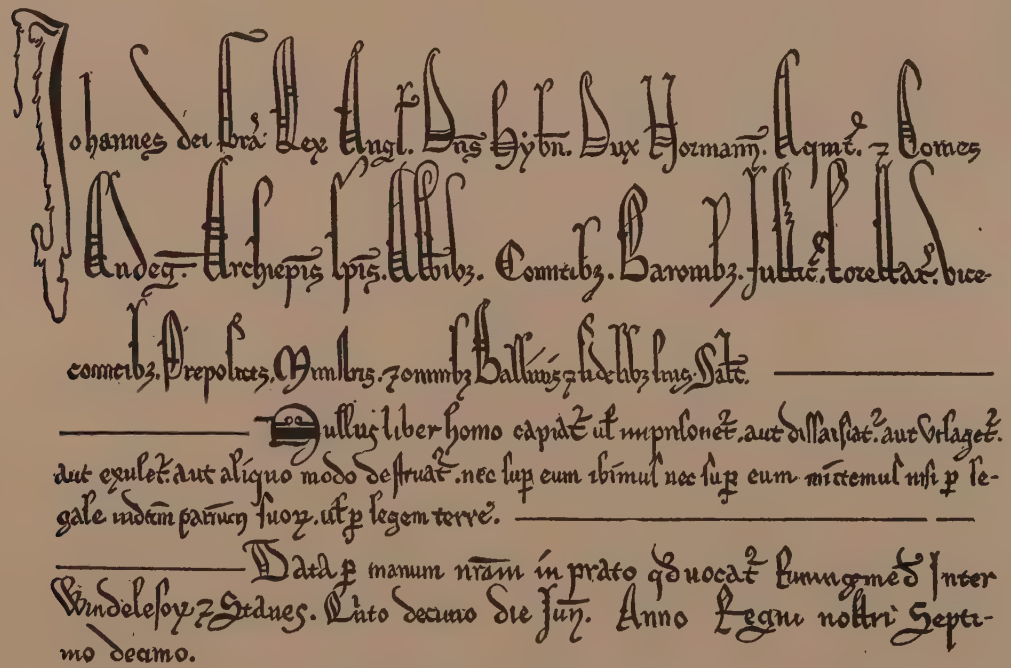
Shakspeare, in his drama of KING JOHN, introduces this Chief Justiciar as one of the *dramatis personæ*, and gives us a trial before the AULA REGIS, the King himself being present in person. This was what the lawyers call a "*legitimacy case*," the action being brought to recover the large estates, in Northamptonshire, of the late Sir Robert Fauconbridge, Knt., which were claimed by the plaintiff, as his son and true heir, on the ground that an elder brother who had got possession of them was the son of Richard Cœur de Lion. The trial is represented as having been conducted with great fairness; for the doctrine was admitted, "Pater est quem nuptiæ demonstrant,"[3] subject to the exception of the absence of the husband *extra quatuor maria*,[4] and it was satisfactorily shown

[1] "Accepto verò de morte ejus nuncio, Rex cachinnando dixit: 'Per pedes Domini, nunc primò sum Rex et Dominus Angliæ.'"—*M. Par. in. ann.* 1214.

[2] "Erat autem firmissima Regni columna; utpote vir generosus, legum peritus, thesauris, reditibus et omnibus bonis instauratus, omnibus Angliæ Magnatibus sanguine vel amicitia confœderatus. Unde Rex ipsum præ omnibus mortalibus sine delectione formidabat: ipse enim lora regni gubernabat. Unde post ejus obitum, facta est Anglia quasi in tempestate navis sine gubernaculo."—*M. Paris.*

[3] "He is the father who is named in the marriage contract."

[4] "Beyond four seas."



SPECIMEN OF MAGNA CHARTA.

Engraved from one of the Original Copies in the British Museum. The passages are a portion of the Preamble, the Forty-sixth Clause, and the Attestation.

that at the time to which the eldest son's origin must by the laws of nature be ascribed, while Lady Fauconbridge was in England, old Sir Robert was employed upon an embassy in Germany. Much weight was given to the evidence of the Dowager Queen, Eleanor, who declared that the defendant had "a trick of Cœur de Lion's face," that she "read in his composition the tokens of her son, and that she was sure she was his grandame." So, by the advice of Lord Chief Justice Fitzpeter, judgment was given for the plaintiff; while the defendant, kneeling before the King, rose SIR RICHARD PLANTAGENET.[1] CHAP. I. Sir Richard Plantagenet.

In right of his wife, this chief of the law became Earl of Essex; and the earldom was enjoyed by his descendants till 1646, when it became extinct by the death of Robert Devereux, Earl of Essex, the great parliamentary general, without issue.[2]

John's intervening Chief Justiciars, Simon de Pateshull, Eustace de Fauconberg, Richard de Mucegos, Walter de Crespiny, and Saherus, Earl of Winchester, did not gain much celebrity either by their administration of the law or by their military exploits. When Fitzpeter died he was succeeded by PETER DE RUPIBUS,[3] who seems to have enjoyed great admiration in his own time, although he has not been much known by posterity. He was a native of Poictou, and distinguished himself as a stout soldier in the wars of Richard I., by whom he was knighted. Although, by his education and habits, better qualified to command an army than to preside over a diocese, yet, being liked Peter de Rupibus.

[1] *King John*, Act i. scene 1. This scene corroborates the supposition that Shakspeare, either before he left Stratford or on his coming to London, had been employed in an attorney's office. He is uniformly right in his law and in his use of legal phraseology, which no mere quickness of intuition can account for.

[2] Dug. Bar. i. 703. See Roger de Wendover, cxi. 49–273.

[3] Sometimes called "*Des Roches*."

CHAP. I. by King John, who did not stand on such niceties, he
A.D. 1204. was made Bishop of Winchester, and afterwards Chief
A.D. 1213. Justiciar.[1] His elevation caused much envy, which he was at no pains to soften; and on this occasion he
A.D. 1214. remained but a short time in office, although he showed vigor and ability.[2] His great rival was Hubert de Burgh, who contrived within a year after his elevation
A.D. 1216. to supersede him, and to hold the office of Chief Justiciar till the death of King John.

Peter de Rupibus in favor with Henry III.

A.D. 1221.

Peter de Rupibus, however, was again in favor at the commencement of the next reign, and was appointed tutor to the infant Sovereign, who became very much attached to him. He was employed at the coronation to consecrate his royal pupil; and, being restored to his office of Justiciar, he was first minister as well as supreme judge. However, he increased the ill will which prevailed against him by advising the resumption of grants of the domain and revenues of the Crown which the King, with a boyish levity, had lavished upon his courtiers; and he made himself still more unpopular by betraying such a partiality for his countrymen, the Poictevans, that they engrossed almost every place of honor or profit. About this time sprung up in England that jealousy of foreigners, and that disposition to despise them, which have ever since actuated the great mass of our countrymen. The Normans had been highly popular at the Court of the

The Poictevans.

[1] This commission is still extant: "Rex Archiepiscopis, etc. Constituimus Justitiarium nostrum Angliæ P. Winton. Episcopum quamdiu nobis placuerit ad custodiendum loco nostro terram nostram Angliæ et pacem regni nostri. Ideo vobis mandamus quod ei tanquam Justic. nostro Angliæ intendentes sitis et respondentes. Dat." etc. ["The King to the Archbishops, etc. We have appointed P. Winton our Justiciar of England. As long as he was bishop he pleased us by guarding our land and the peace of our realm. Therefore we command you to recognize him as our Justiciar of England."]

[2] "Diu non duravit in officio: prudens autem et potens." ["He did not remain long in office, but he was wise and powerful."]—*Spel. Gloss* 340.

CHAP. I.

later Anglo-Saxon Kings. Having conquered the country, they long regarded all of Anglo-Saxon blood as helots, while they treated Frenchmen and Italians who came here in quest of preferment as equals. But, after the loss of the Continental possessions which had belonged to the Kings of England, our nobles of Norman extraction began to consider themselves as Englishmen, and there was a rapid fusion of the two races into one nation. The intercourse of the inhabitants of this island with the Continent was very much lessened, and the prejudices as well as the virtues of islanders gathered strength among them from generation to generation. Peter de Rupibus excluded all who were born in England from employment, and treated them with contumely, after the fashion of the Justiciars of the Conqueror and his sons. By preferring a foreigner to a piece of ecclesiastical preferment which was coveted by the famous Roger Bacon,[1] then one of the King's chaplains, he incurred the enmity of that philosopher, who took every opportunity, both in his sermons and in private conversation, to set the King against him. It is related that on one occasion Roger asked Henry "what things a prudent pilot in steering a ship was most afraid of?" and Henry answering that "Roger himself ought best to know, as he had himself made many voyages to distant parts," Roger replied, "Sir, he who steers a trireme, and he who steers the vessel of the state, should, above all things, beware of *stones* and *rocks*, or 'Petræ et Rupes.'" Hubert de Burgh, his old rival, took advantage of the combination against the favorite, and contrived again to turn him out from the place of Chief Justiciar, and to become his successor.

Anglo-Saxons regarded as helots.

Roger Bacon.

Hubert de Burgh.

[1] Roger Bacon (1214–1292) was an English monk and scientific investigator; he was accused of sorcery because he demanded reform among the clergy.—*Cassell's Biog. Dict.*

CHAP. I.

A.D. 1227. Peter de Rupibus takes the cross.

Peter de Rupibus, now yielding to the passion of the age, took the cross, and found no difficulty in obtaining a dispensation to bear arms in so pious a cause, although wearing a mitre. He is said to have fought valiantly in Palestine, but we have no particulars of his single combats, or the numbers he killed in the general *mêlée*.[1]

Returns to England, A.D. 1231.

After an absence of several years he returned, and all the affection of his royal pupil towards him was revived. He again had the patronage of the Court, and again he yielded to the besetting sin of preferring his countrymen. "Naturales," says M. Paris, "curiæ suæ ministros a suis removit officiis, et Pictavenses extraneos in eorum ministeriis surrogavit."[2] He even carried his insolence so far as to declare publicly that "the Barons of England must not pretend to put themselves on the same footing with those of France, or assume the same rights and privileges."[3] The consequence was, that the English Bishops combined against him with the English Barons, and a law was passed, to which the King most unwillingly gave the royal assent, "That all foreigners holding office under the Crown should be banished the realm." They went so far as to declare "that if the King did not immediately dismiss his foreigners they would drive both him and them out of the kingdom, and put the crown on another head more worthy to wear it."[4] Peter made a stout resistance, but, owing to the jealousy of his

The Bishops and Barons combine against him.

[1] Spelman, who had examined all the chronicles, is obliged to say in general terms, "Exacto munere Terram Sanctam cruce-signatus proficiscitur. Multa illic ejus auspiciis gesta sunt feliciter." ["A dispensation having been obtained, he advanced into the Holy Land, bearing the cross. Many battles were fought valiantly under his direction."]—*Gloss.* p. 346.

[2] "He removed from their offices the rightful ministers of his court, and put in their places the foreign Poictevans."

[3] M. Paris, 265.

[4] Ibid.

spiritual brethren, he was excommunicated and obliged to fly. CHAP. I. A.D. 1233.

He went to Rome to appeal against the injustice which had been done him. Here his military prowess stood him in good stead. Finding Pope Gregory IX.[1] engaged in war, he put himself at the head of his Holiness's army and gained a great battle. In consequence, he was not only absolved from excommunication, but ordered to be reinstated in his bishopric. Accordingly he returned to England, and was received in solemn procession by the monks and clergy of his cathedral. At the last stage of his career he devoted himself wholly to his spiritual duties, and, in the odor of sanctity, he died, in his episcopal palace at Farnham,[2] on the 5th of June, 1238. He was buried in the north aisle of Winchester Cathedral, where is still to be seen a mutilated figure representing him in black marble, with a mitre on his head, but without a sword by his side. Although he had gone through so many adventures, founded several religious houses both for monks in his own diocese and for pilgrims at Joppa, and filled such a space in the eyes of his contemporaries, he is now only mentioned in the dry chronicles of the Bishops of Winchester or of the Chief Justiciars of England.

He gains a battle for the Pope.

A.D. 1238. His death.

His rival still makes a conspicuous figure in English history. HUBERT DE BURGH[3] had the advantage

Hubert de Burgh.

[1] Gregory IX. (*d.* 1241), elected in 1227; carried on an almost continuous struggle with the Emperor Frederick II., whom he excommunicated, first for not going on crusade, and secondly, on his return, for speeches he was reported to have made. He finally called a council to depose Frederick, who, however, captured the fleet which carried most of the bishops. —*Cassell's Biog. Dict.*

[2] Farnham castle, the residence of the Bishops of Winchester, overlooks the town of that name in the southwest angle of Surrey. It was built by Henry de Blois in the 12th century, destroyed by Henry III., but rebuilt subsequently.—*S. J. Low and F. S. Pulling's Dict. of English Hist.*

[3] Burgh, Hubert de (Earl of Kent). This distinguished man traced

CHAP. I. of being born in England, although, like all the nobility of the time, he was of foreign extraction. William Fitzadeline, his father's elder brother, had been Steward to Henry II., and, accompanying that monarch into Ireland, established there the powerful and distinguished family now represented by my friend the present Marquess of Clanricarde. Hubert, afterwards the famous Justiciar, was early left an orphan, and was very slenderly provided for, but he received from nature the highest gifts both of person and understanding, and, through the care of his maternal relations, he was carefully educated not only in all martial exercises but in all the learning of the age. He gained some distinction by serving in the army under Richard I., towards the conclusion of the reign of that monarch;[1] and, on the accession of King John, he was sufficiently prominent at court to be one of the pledges that the convention of the new Sovereign with Reginald, Earl of Boulogne, should be faithfully observed.[2] Soon after, he was made Lord Chamberlain; and now it is that Shakspeare assigns to him the custody of Arthur, the son of Geoffrey.

Hubert de Burgh under Richard I.

His character by Shakspeare.

It is not easy to discover the view taken by our immortal dramatist of the character of Hubert de Burgh, whom he represents with a very tender heart,

his ancestry as high as the Emperor Charlemagne, from whose fifth son, Charles, Duke of Ingeheim, descended Harluin de Burgh, who married Herleva or Arlotta, the mother of William the Conqueror, and had by her two sons, viz., Odo, Bishop of Bayeux; and Robert, Earl of Moreton. Robert's son, William, who rebelled against Henry I., and, being defeated, was not only deprived of his eyes, but imprisoned for life, is stated to have left two sons, one of whom was John de Burgh, the father (or more probably the grandfather) of Hubert. (*Biog. Universelle.*)—*Foss's Lives of the Judges of Eng.*

[1] One of the earliest notices of him in our records is that he was surety to the Crown for Petrus de Maillai, who agreed to pay 7000 marks, "pro habenda in uxorem Ysabellam filiam Roberti de Turneham cum jure suo," etc.—*Mad. Exch.* ii. 211.

[2] Rot. Chart. 1 John, 30, 56.

but who is made to say, when solicited to rid the usurper of the "serpent in his way," "He shall not live;" and who deliberately and seriously makes preparations for putting out the poor young Prince's eyes with hot irons.[1] According to true history, the Chamberlain always showed kindness to Arthur, and never on any occasion pandered to the evil inclinations of John. Yet he enjoyed the favor of this capricious tyrant, and was constituted by him Warden of the Marches of Wales, Governor of the Castle of Dover, and Seneschal of Poictou. He was likewise sent by him as ambassador to France, and he negotiated a peace between the two kingdoms. In the midst of these high employments, he condescended to act as Sheriff of several English counties, being responsible for the preservation of the peace, and for the due collection of the royal revenues within them.

CHAP. I.

His many offices.

In the controversies which arose between John and the Barons, Hubert remained faithful to his master, bnt gave him good advice, and tried to instil into him some regard for truth and plighted faith. Being present with him at Runymede, he prevailed upon him to sign the Great Charter, and he afterwards sincerely lamented the violation of its provisions.

The Great Charter.

Though praised warmly by historians for his open and straightforward conduct, I am afraid that he was seduced into duplicity and intrigue by his desire to

[1] Hubert exclaims *aside*, and therefore sincerely—

"If I talk to him, with his innocent prate
He will awake my mercy, which lies dead:
Therefore I will be sudden, and despatch."

And, after the fit of compassion had conquered him, he thus addresses the Prince:

"Well, see to live: I will not touch thine eyes
For all the treasures that thine uncle owes:
Yet am I sworn, and *I did purpose*, boy,
With this same very iron to burn them out."

King John, Act iv. sc. 1.

CHAP. I. obtain the office of Chief Justiciar, the darling object of his ambition. He professed much friendship for Peter de Rupibus, but he is suspected of having tripped up his heels in the end of the year 1215, and to have taken an unfair advantage of the unpopularity under which this prelate then labored. He was now ap-
A.D. 1215. pointed Chief Justiciar, but had little enjoyment in his elevation. The kingdom was in a state of distraction from internal discord, and its independence was threatened by the invasion of a French army. He gallantly defended Dover Castle against Prince Louis, and gained a considerable victory over a French fleet in the Channel. The administration of justice, however, was long entirely suspended, insomuch that Hubert had never been installed in the AULA REGIS, when his functions were determined by the King's miserable death in the Castle of Newark.

28th Oct. 1216. For the first three years of the new reign, the office of Chief Justiciar was superseded by the appointment of the Earl of Pembroke, the Earl Marshal, as Protec-
A.D. 1219. tor of the realm, with absolute power. On the death of that nobleman, Hubert was restored to the office of Chief Justiciar, and there was an apparent reconciliation between him and Peter de Rupibus, who was intrusted with the education of the young King.[1] The wily Poictevan, availing himself of his influence over the mind of his pupil, by and by had his revenge, and,
A.D. 1221. once more Chief Justiciar, he engrossed all the powers of the Crown. Hubert retired from Court, and prudently "bided his time." Perceiving the odium into which his rival had fallen, he formed a confederation of nobles and churchmen against him, and compelled
A.D. 1224. him to seek for safety by taking the cross, and setting off for the Holy Land.[2]

[1] M. Paris, 247–251. Waverley, 183. Gul. Armor. 90.

[2] Dr. Lingard gives, from the contemporary chronicles, the following

CHAP. I.

For some years Hubert exercised despotic sway in England. He was created Earl of Kent, and, in the vain hope of perpetuating his power, he obtained a grant for life of the office of Chief Justiciar, which hitherto had always been held during pleasure. Moreover, he usurped a similar appointment to the Chief Justiciarship of Ireland.

Hubert de Burgh appointed Chief Justiciar for life.

When without a rival, it is admitted that he conducted himself honorably as well as prudently. He displayed a knowledge of the law, and a zeal to do justice to all suitors who came before him, for which

graphic account of "an event which established the authority of Hubert, and induced his rival to banish himself from the island under pretence of making a pilgrimage. Among the foreigners enriched by John was a ferocious and sanguinary ruffian named Fawkes, who held the castle of Bedford by the donation of that monarch. At the assizes at Dunstable, he had been amerced for several misdemeanors in the sum of 3000*l.*; but, instead of submitting to the sentence, he waylaid the judges at their departure, and, seizing one of them, Henry de Brinbrook, confined him in the dungeon of the castle. Hubert willingly grasped the opportunity of wreaking his vengeance on a partisan of the Bishop of Winchester. The King was induced to invest in person the fortress of this audacious rebel; and the clergy spontaneously granted him an aid from themselves and their free tenants. Two towers of wood were raised to such a height as to give the archers a full view of the interior of the castle; seven military engines battered the walls with large stones from morning till evening; and a machine, termed a *cat*, covered the sappers in their attempts to undermine the foundations. Fawkes, who had retired into the county of Chester, had persuaded himself that the garrison would be able to defend the castle for twelve months. But the barbican was first taken by assault; soon afterwards the outer wall was forced, and the cattle, horses, and provender, in the adjacent ward, fell into the hands of the victors: a breach was then made in the second wall by the miners; and the royalists, though with considerable loss, obtained possession of the inner ward: a few days later the sappers set fire to the props which they had placed under the foundations of the keep; one of the angles sank deep into the ground, and a wide rent laid open the interior of the fortress. The garrison now despaired of success. They planted the royal standard on the tower, and sent the women to implore the King's mercy. But Hubert resolved to deter men from similar excesses by the severity of the punishment. The knights and others to the number of eighty were hanged; the archers were sent to Palestine to fight against the Turks; and Fawkes, who now surrendered himself at Coventry, was banished from the island, together with his wife and family."—See M. Paris, 270. Dunst. 142–145. New Rym. 175. Rot. Claus. 639. Annal. Wig. 486.

CHAP. I. he had not hitherto had credit; while he preserved tranquillity at home, and raised the consideration of England with foreign nations to a pitch unknown since the death of Cœur de Lion. "Multa benè in re judiciariâ," says Matthew Paris, "multa strenue in militiâ gessit."[1]

Charter of the Forest.

The only grave act of misgovernment imputed to him was the annulling of the CHARTER OF THE FOREST,[2]—a concession which was most reasonable, and which had been passionately claimed both by the nobility and the people.[3] However, Hume doubts whether this act was done by his advice, characterizing him as "a man who had been steady to the Crown in the most difficult and dangerous times, and who yet showed no disposition in the height of his power to enslave or oppress the people."[4]

"Hubert's Folly."

But, while others were obliged to surrender valuable possessions which they held under royal letters patent, he was annually enriched by new grants of forfeitures, escheats and wardships; and those whom he disobliged declared that he was guilty of much greater rapacity than his banished rival, or any of his predecessors. The temper of the times may be estimated from the derisive title of "Hubert's Folly" given to a castle ineffectually erected by him to repress the incursions of the Welsh.[5] An unsuccessful expedi-

[1] M. Paris, ad ann. 1232. But though very scrupulous while sitting on the bench, he was, like other Justiciars, always ready to exercise a vigor beyond the law when in the field. In the 15th year of Henry III., hearing that the Welsh had committed great outrages, especially about Montgomery, he marched thither, and, having taken many prisoners, he struck off their heads and sent them to the King; which so provoked Lewellyn, Prince of Wales, that, raising all the power he could, he retaliated on the English, setting fire even to the churches, in which crowds who had taken sanctuary were burned.

[2] The Charter of the Forest declared that no man should lose life or limb for taking the King's game.—*Thompson's Hist. of Eng.* p. 91.

[3] M. Paris, p. 232.

[4] Hist. of Eng. ii. 159.

[5] Roger de Wendover, iv. 173.

tion into France, in which he accompanied the King, inflamed the public discontent, and precipitated his fall. CHAP. I.

It so happened that at this very time Peter de Rupibus returned to England from Palestine, having been preceded by exciting reports of the gallantry which he displayed in assisting to recover the holy sepulchre, while his old enemy had been enjoying ease and amassing riches at home. All now predicted the fall of the obnoxious minister. By the subtle advice of his enemies, instead of any violence being offered to him a great council was called, and an order was made upon him to answer for all the wardships which he had held, all the rents of the royal demesnes which he had received, and all the aids and fines which had been paid into the Exchequer while he filled the office of Chief Justiciar. Seeing that his ruin was determined upon, he took to sanctuary in the priory of Merton. Being immediately removed from his office of Chief Justiciar, he asserted that he held the appointment for life, by a grant under the Great Seal; but he was told that the patent was illegal and void; and Stephen de Segrave was appointed his successor, at the instigation of Peter de Rupibus, who at present preferred the enjoyment of power without the envy of office. A.D. 1232.

Hubert removed from his office of Chief Justiciar, and takes to sanctuary, A.D. 1232.

Proclamation was now made through the City of London by a herald that "all manner of persons who had any charge to make against the ex-Chief Justiciar were to come forth, and they should be heard." He was not only accused of treason to the King in the negotiations he had carried on, but of poisoning some of the nobility, of abstracting from the royal treasury a gem which had the virtue of rendering the wearer invulnerable, and of gaining the King's favor by sorcery and enchantment.

Accused of treason.

It was first resolved to drag him from his asylum

CHAP. I. by force, and, with this view, the Mayor of London and a body of armed citizens were sent to storm the priory; but the King, being warned by the Archbishop of Dublin of the sacrilege about to be committed, agreed to allow the accused to remain there unmolested for five months, that he might prepare for his trial. Hubert, finding himself no longer watched, left his sanctuary and proceeded towards Bury St. Edmunds[1] to visit his wife; but the Government, afraid of his intentions, despatched a body of 300 horsemen with orders to arrest him and convey him to the Tower of London. Being in bed when he heard of their approach, he fled naked to the parish church of Boisars, and, on the steps of the altar, with the consecrated host in one hand and a silver cross in the other, awaited the arrival of his pursuers. Unmoved by the sanctity of the scene which they beheld, they seized him, placed him on horseback, tied his feet under the horse's belly, and proceeded with their captive towards the metropolis amidst the derisive shouts of the populace. The Bishop of Winchester, either respecting the privileges of the Church, or afraid of exciting sympathy in favor of a depressed rival, caused orders to be given that the prisoner should be replaced on the steps of the altar from which he had been taken; and the Sheriff of Essex was charged under penalty of death to prevent his escape. To render this impracticable, a deep moat was dug around the sacred building in which he was confined, and on the fortieth day hunger or despair compelled him to surrender himself.

Hubert leaves his sanctuary and is captured.

He is replaced in sanctuary but is forced by hunger to surrender.

[1] Bury St. Edmunds, a bright and interesting little town with 16,000 inhabitants, first came into notice as the burial-place of St. Edmund, the last King of East Anglia, whose shrine here was long one of the chief resorts of English pilgrims. The abbey erected in the 11th century over his tomb soon attained great wealth and importance. See the characteristic account of Bury by *Carlyle*, in "Past and Present."—*Baedeker's Gt. Britain*, p. 450.

CHAP. I.

He is confined in the Tower of London.

After a short confinement in the Tower, he was brought before a council of his peers assembled in Cornhill. The accusations against him being read, he declared that he should make no defence, and that he placed his body and his lands and goods at the King's pleasure. Sentence was passed, whereby, being allowed to retain his patrimonial inheritance and the lands he had gained by marriage, he was to forfeit all the rest of his property to the Crown, and was to be kept in safe custody in the Castle of Devizes[1] till he should enter the order of the Knights Templars.[2]

He is kept in custody in the Castle of Devizes.

The following year he was dreadfully alarmed by the news that the custody of this castle had been transferred to a retainer of Peter de Rupibus; and, that he might not fall into the hands of his mortal enemy, he dropped from the castle wall into the moat, in the obscurity of the night, and again took sanctuary in a neighboring church. The guard hastened after him with lights and clubs, and, finding him prostrate before the high altar with a cross in his hands, carried him back again into stricter custody in the castle. The Bishop of Salisbury, within whose diocese this outrage had been committed, threatened to excommunicate all concerned in it. In accordance with the respective obligations and privileges of the parties, the King restored Hubert to the church from which he had been forced, but at the same time ordered the Sheriff of Wiltshire to besiege him there, and to starve him to death unless he chose voluntarily to surrender. In

Attempt to escape.

[1] The Castle of Devizes, erected in the reign of Henry I. and destroyed in the 17th century, has almost completely disappeared.—*Baedeker's Gt. Britain*, p. 107.

[2] At the beginning of the 12th century (1117), nine French knights bound themselves to protect pilgrims on their way to the Holy Land, and received the name of Templars because their arms were kept in a building given to them for that purpose by the abbot of the convent called the Temple of Jerusalem.—*Brewer's Dict. of Phrase and Fable.*

CHAP. I. this desperate condition, two of the soldiers who had formerly served under him took compassion upon him, furnished him with some food, clothed him in a military habit, and, conveying him into Wales, put him under the protection of the Earl of Pembroke.[1]

He is conveyed into Wales.

A.D. 1239. Afterwards, at an assembly of the Barons held at Westminster, the King preferred articles of impeachment against him, accusing him of usurping the office of Chief Justiciar, of treason, of rapacity, and of trying to prevent the King's marriage with the daughter of the Duke of Austria by saying that the King squinted, had a leprous appearance, and was not qualified for wedlock.[2] By his answers he denied all these charges, insisting that he had been appointed Justiciar by King John at Runnymede, and that he had never exercised the powers of that office without due warrant.[3]

The King prefers articles of impeachment against him.

Finally, a compromise was effected by which he surrendered four of his strongest castles, and released all right to the office of Chief Justiciar,—receiving a pardon for all offences, and being allowed to retain all his other possessions. He now became disgusted with public life, and he spent the rest of his days in seclusion. After repenting of his many irregularities, and receiving the consolations of religion, he quietly expired at Banstede, in Surrey, on the 12th day of May, 1243.

Death of Hubert de Burgh.

His body, being brought to London, was honorably interred in the church of the Black Friars[4] in Hol-

[1] William Mareschall.

[2] "Prorsus inutilis amplexibus alicujus ingenuæ mulieris."—*M. Paris.*

[3] 1 St. Tr. 14.

[4] Blackfriars takes its name from the Dominican monks who came to England in 1221, and first settled in Holborn on land now occupied by Lincoln's Inn. In 1276 they moved to the banks of the Thames, where their monastery and church rose to great splendor through the constant favor of Edward I., who deposited the heart of his beloved Eleanor at Blackfriars, when her body was taken to Westminster. The belief that "to be buried in the habit of the Order was a sure preservative against the attacks of the devil" afterwards led to the interment of many great and

born; a house to which he was a benefactor, having given it, among other things, his inn at Westminster, which became the town residence of the Archbishops of York, and afterwards the royal palace of Whitehall. He was married four times; all his wives being high born, and the last no less a person than the daughter of William the Lion,[1] King of Scotland. This marriage took place at York when he was Chief Justiciar the second time, the Archbishop of Canterbury performing the ceremony, and the King and many of the nobility assisting at it.[2] His descendants, after flourishing for some generations, became extinct in the male line. He was not an author like Glanville, but he is supposed to have patronized Bracton,[3] who, as a jurist, was the great glory of this reign. CHAP. I. His descendants extinct in the male line. Bracton.

The most touching panegyric ever pronounced

wealthy personages in the monastic church, including Hubert de Burgh, Earl of Kent, and his wife Margaret of Scotland; Tiptoft, Earl of Worcester, beheaded in the Wars of the Roses; and Sir Thomas and Dame Maude Parr, father and mother of Queen Katherine Parr.—*Hare's Walks in London*, vol. i. p. 438.

[1] William, "the Lion," King of Scotland (*d.* 1214), came to the throne in 1165; took part in the rising of the sons of Henry II. in 1173, and having been captured was compelled to do homage for his kingdom, which homage was redeemed by a payment to Richard I.—*Cassell's Biog. Dict.*

[2] Spelman, 340. See Dugdale's Baronage, and Hasted's History of Kent. Notwithstanding the open and solemn manner in which this marriage was celebrated, it was afterwards made an article of charge against him, "that whereas William, King of Scots, had delivered two of his daughters to John, King of England, under condition that the eldest should be married to Henry, Prince of England, or, in the event of his death, to Richard, Earl of Cornwall, yet that Hubert himself had taken her to wife while Henry was under age and incapable of solemnizing the marriage." The defence made by Hubert was, "that he knew nothing of any treaty for marrying the Princess of Scotland to Henry or Richard; that the Princesses were to be bestowed in marriage by the King of England, with the approbation of the nobility, and that in consequence the eldest was so bestowed on him, Hubert." "If the controverted article existed," says Lord Hales, "we must admire the effrontery of Hubert; if not, the ignorance or malice of his accusers."—*Annals of Scotland*, i. 170.

[3] His work "De Legibus et Consuetudinibus Angliæ" "is a finished and systematic performance, giving a complete view of the law in all its titles, as it stood when it was written."—*Reeve's Hist. of Eng. Law*, ii. 86.

CHAP. I. upon Hubert was by an Essex blacksmith, who, being required to forge fetters to secure him when they were carrying him prisoner to the Tower of London, exclaimed, "Do what you please with me; I would rather die than put fetters on him. Is he not the faithful and magnanimous Hubert, who has so often rescued England from the ravages of foreigners, and restored England to the English—who served his Sovereign so firmly and faithfully in Normandy and Gascony that he was sometimes compelled to eat horse-flesh, his very enemies admiring his constancy—who preserved Dover, the key of England, against the King of France and all his power—and who secured our safety by subduing our enemies at sea? May God be judge between him and you for such unjust and inhuman treatment!"[1]

Hubert de Burgh's popularity.

After the rivalry of Peter de Rupibus and Hubert de Burgh had been terminated by the ruin of both, there began the struggle between the Crown and the Barons, which was not terminated till Simon de Montfort[2] fell in the fatal battle of Evesham, more than thirty years afterwards. During this period, several reached the dignity of Chief Justiciar who were neither distinguished as judges, nor gained much political or military renown; and whom we shall, therefore, quickly despatch. Hubert's immediate successor was Stephen de Segrave, who had previously been a

Struggle between the Crown and the Barons.

Steven de Segrave.

[1] See Roger de Wendover, iv. 247–253; Rot. Liberat. 10; Rot. Pat. 11; Roger de Wendover, iii. 293–380; Rot. Claus. i. 319–322.

[2] Simon de Montfort (*d.* 1265), Earl of Leicester, was born in France, but came to London in 1231, and married the King's sister; was appointed Governor of Guienne in 1246, but provoked much complaint from the severity of his rule, and resigned in 1253. Soon after his return he headed the constitutional party against Henry III., and gained the practical control of the government after the battle of Lewes, but part of the baronage, being jealous of his influence, joined the Royalists against him, and he was defeated and slain at Evesham. The people, however, canonized him; hymns were composed in his honor, and miracles wrought at his tomb.—*Cassell's Biog. Dict.*

common justiciar, or puisne judge, in the AULA REGIS.[1] He was a rare instance, in those days, of a man being in a high civil station who was of obscure origin; but this was accounted for by the circumstance of his having begun his career as a churchman. He was then knighted, and showed extraordinary prowess in the field. Last of all, he addicted himself to jurisprudence. When he had gained the object of his highest ambition, he cared little for the interests of the suitors, he recommended arbitrary measures to the King, and he enriched himself by rapacity. Having obtained a dispensation from the Pope to marry, notwithstanding his religious vows, he made good use of his privilege, for he had successively two wives of the distinguished families of Le Despencer and Hastings; and the Earls of Berkeley, the Earls of Egremont, and all the branches of the house of Howard,[2] are descended from him.[3] CHAP. I. A.D. 1232.

Next came Hugo de Pateshulle, who had the reputation of integrity as a judge, but nothing is said of his learning or ability. He resigned his office on being elected Bishop of Lichfield and Coventry. Of A.D. 1235. Obscure Chief Justiciars.

[1] Madd. Exch. i. 63, 65.

[2] Their earliest known ancestor was a judge under Edward I.; and his descendants remained wealthy landowners in the eastern counties till early in the 15th century they were suddenly raised to distinction by the marriage of Sir Robert with a wife who became heiress of the houses of Arundel and Norfolk, the Fitz-Alans and the Mowbrays.—*Green's Hist. of the Eng. People*, vol. ii. p. 142.

[3] See Spelman, 341. He is thus pithily despatched by M. Paris: "In juventute sua de clerico factus Miles, licet de humili genere oriundus, strenuitate sua ultimis diebus adeo ditatus et exaltatus est, ut inter primos regni reputatus, pro Justiciario habitus est, et omnia fere regni negotia pro libitu disposuit, sed semper plus sui amicus quam reipublicæ." ["In his youth, after having been a churchman, he was knighted, although of humble origin, and by his activity he became so rich and distinguished later in life as to be classed among the foremost in the realm; he was appointed Justiciar, and disposed of almost all the affairs of the kingdom according to his pleasure, but always considered his own interests more than those of the state."]

CHAP. I. A.D. 1239. his successor, Gilibertus de Segrave,[1] still less is known, for the industrious Spelmanis obliged to say, "Ego vero *nihil* de eo reperi:" and all that is related of Philip Lovel, who followed, is, that when he was A.D. 1258. thrust out of office by the Barons he died of grief.[2] Concerning John Maunsel, whom the Barons substituted as Chief Justiciar, I have already told all that is memorable, as he had before filled the office of Lord Chancellor.[3]

A.D. 1259. We now come to a Chief Justiciar pronounced to have been "a distinguished soldier, and learned in the law of the land."[4]

Hugh Bigod, Chief Justiciar.

Hugh Bigod was a younger son of Roger Bigod, Earl of Norfolk; and, although he declined to take orders, he afforded an extraordinary instance of a layman acquiring a profound knowledge both of the civil and municipal law. At the same time he was initiated in military exercises, and was considered a gallant and accomplished knight. He was appointed governor of the Castle of Pickering; and he accompanied the King in an expedition against the Welsh, as well to assist in negotiation as in the field. But he was persuaded by his elder brother, the famous Roger Bigod, the fourth

[1] Gilbert de Segrave was the second son of Stephen de Segrave, by Rohese, the daughter of Thomas le Despencer; but his elder brother, John, dying in his father's lifetime, he succeeded to the property on his father's decease in 1241. He was raised to the bench at Westminster in 35 Henry III., 1251, and was one of the Justiciars appointed to hear such pleas of the City of London as were wont to be determined by the Justices Itinerant.—*Foss's Lives of the Judges.*

[2] "Judicio Baronum ejicitur ex officio, an. 1258, et sequenti anno pro mentis amaritudine diem obiit."—*M. Paris.*

[3] Lives of Chancellors, i. ch. vii.

[4] "Nobiles firmius confœderati constituerunt sibi Justiciarium Militem illustrem et legum terræ peritum Hugonem Bigod, qui officium Justiciariæ strenuè peragens, nullatenus permittat jus regni vacillare." ["The firmly-allied nobles appointed Hugh Bigod, a distinguished knight and learned in the law of the land, who, performing the duties of Justiciar with vigor, greatly strengthened the power of the law."]—*M. Paris.*

Earl of Norfolk of that name, who headed the Barons against Henry, to join their party; and at the parliament held at Oxford, when the famous "PROVISIONS"[1] were agreed to which vested the royal authority in a small oligarchy, he was constituted Chief Justiciar, and the Tower of London was committed to his charge.

1 June 1258. "Provisions of Oxford."

Notwithstanding the violent manner in which he was appointed, he administered justice with great impartiality as well as vigor; and it was said that there had not been such a judge in England since Ranulfus de Glanville. With Roger de Thurkolby and Gilbert de Preston, two very learned *puisnies*, as his companions, he made a circuit through every county in the kingdom, putting down disturbances, punishing malefactors, and justly deciding civil rights. He cashiered Richard de Grey, who had been constable of Dover Castle, and warden of the Cinque Ports;[2] and he was as little moved by the piteous looks of the poor as by the scornful glances of the powerful.[3]

Bigod's administration.

1259, 1260.

For some reason not satisfactorily explained to us, while universally applauded, and while the party by

[1] By the "Provisions of Oxford" it was agreed that the Great Council should assemble thrice in the year, whether summoned by the King or no; and on each occasion "the Commonalty shall elect twelve honest men who shall come to the Parliaments, and at other times when occasion shall be when the King and his Council shall send for them, to treat of the wants of the King and of his kingdom. And the Commonalty shall hold as established that which these Twelve shall do."—*Green's History of Eng. People*, vol. i. p. 275.

[2] A group of seven towns situated in Sussex and Kent. The original members of the group were Hastings, Romney, Hythe, Dover, and Sandwich, to which the "ancient towns" of Winchelsea and Rye were afterwards added. They owe their existence as a corporate body to the fact that in the early history of England there was no standing navy. Hence, whenever invasion was threatened or contemplated, it was necessary to rely mainly upon the services of the seaboard towns.—*Low and Pulling's Dict. of Eng. History.*

[3] "Angliam de comitatu in comitatum circuit, omnibus justitiam lance æquissima distribuens: vultu nec motus pauperum, nec potentum flaccidus supercilio."—See Spelm. 341.

CHAP. I.

Hugh Bigod resigns the Justiciarship.

whom he had been elevated was yet triumphant, he resigned his office when he had held it little more than a year. Some say that the Barons had resolved to make it an annual office; some, that they were jealous of his popularity; and others, that he would no longer be associated with them in their scheme to usurp the prerogatives of the Crown. He afterwards again took the King's side, and fought for him in the battle of Lewes. When the rout began, he fled the field, but was accompanied by the Earl of Warrenne and other brave knights. Notwithstanding the proofs they had given of their courage, they did not escape the satirical notice of Peter Langtoft,[1] who thus described their flight:

At the battle of Lewes.

Peter Langtoft.

> "The Erle of Warenne, I wote, he escaped over the se,
> And Sir Hugh Bigote als with the Erle fled he."

When the royal authority was restored by the victory at Evesham, he was again appointed to the government of Pickering Castle; but the office of Chief Justiciar, such as it had been, was thought to be too powerful to be given to any subject, and it could not well be offered to him shorn of its splendor.

Death of Hugh Bigod.

We have no particulars of the closing scene of his life, but it must have occurred soon after, as we know, from the Fine Rolls, that on the 7th of November, 1266, his son Roger did homage to the King at Kenilworth[2]

[1] Peter de Langtoft, an English monk of the 14th century; wrote, in French verse, a *Chronicle of England*, translated by Robert de Brunne.—*Cassell's Biog. Dict.*

[2] Kenilworth Castle, one of the finest and most extensive baronial ruins in England, was originally founded by Geoffrey de Clinton, chamberlain of Henry I., about 1120. In the 13th century it passed into the hands of Simon de Montfort, and was maintained for six months by his son against the royal forces (1266). In 1362 Kenilworth came by marriage to John of Gaunt, who added largely to it. The castle afterwards became royal property, and in 1563 was presented by Queen Elizabeth to her favorite, the Earl of Leicester. Leicester spent enormous sums of money in enlarging and improving the building, and in 1575 entertained

as heir to his lands.[1] CHAP. I.

Hugh le Despencer, Chief Justiciar.

On the resignation of Hugh Bigod, the Barons appointed Hugh le Despencer as his successor. This Justiciar was celebrated more for his bravery than for his learning; but if he was not always quite impartial as a judge, he at least had the merit of being always true to his party. He was said to have been descended from Robert le Despencer, steward to William the Conqueror; but as the royal steward for the time being was called, long after the Conquest, "Le Despencer," there is a doubt as to the time when the name of the office passed into a surname,[2] and whether his ancestor was not some noble who had held it more recently. Antiquaries dispute even as to the immediate ancestors of Hugh, although they all agree that he was of noble blood. We do not know much of his training, and he is first mentioned by historians as the companion of Richard, King of the Romans, the brother of Henry III., when that prince went into A.D. 1257. Germany in pursuit of the imperial crown. On his return to England he joined the Barons, who were in A.D. 1258. arms against the King; and when they carried the

his royal patroness here in the magnificent style immortalized by Scott. Cromwell gave the castle to some of his officers, who demolished the stately pile for the sake of its materials and scattered its costly collections. After the Restoration it passed into the hands of the Earls of Clarendon, who still retain it. Perhaps no other English castle has had more varied points of contact with English history, from the stormy and semi-barbarous times of Simon de Montfort, down through the pompous and courtly luxury of the Elizabethan period, to the iconoclastic days of the Protectorate; while under the touch of the "Magician of the North" it has renewed its youth in our own era, and, ruin though it be, is more familiar and present to contemporary thought than almost any occupied mansion in the country.—*Baedeker's Gt. Britain*, p. 243.

[1] Rot. Fin. ii. 448.

[2] In Scotland the office retained its Saxon appellation, and hence we have the illustrious family name of Stewart or Stuart; although, generally speaking, French was spoken at the Scotch as well as at the English court—of which we have a proof in the office of taking charge of the royal table-linen having given rise to the name, so distinguished in our day, of *Napier*.

CHAP. I. "Provisions of Oxford," he was one of the twelve commissioners in whom the exercise of the royal prerogative was vested. In the course of the following year, he went as an Itinerant Justice into several counties, and gave entire satisfaction to the ruling powers, although not to the suitors.

When he was elected Chief Justiciar, there were soon heavy complaints against him; and his partiality or incapacity very much strengthened the reaction in favor of the royal authority. At last, Henry, having received from the Pope a dispensation from his oath to observe the "Provisions of Oxford," assembled a Parliament at Westminster, in which he had a large majority. Here Le Despencer being ordered to deliver up the Rolls of Chief Justiciar[1] at the same time that the usurping Chancellor was ordered to deliver up the Great Seal, they joined in saying that they could not do so without the consent of the Barons, by whom they had been appointed; but the King, with general approbation, dismissed him, and appointed Philip Basset Chief Justiciar in his stead.

Reaction in favor of the King.

Le Despencer dismissed. July 1261.

Hugh le Despencer, maintaining that he had not been lawfully superseded, still claimed to be entitled to perform the functions of the office, and, the tide again turning in favor of the Barons, the King was obliged to recognize him as Chief Justiciar. The following year, open hostilities being resumed, he placed himself at the head of a strong military force, destroyed the houses of Philip Basset and the loyalist nobles in Westminster, imprisoned the King's judges, even pillaged foreign merchants, and extorted large sums of money by cruelties on the Jews.

He is again recognized as Chief Justiciar.

A.D. 1263. His hostile conduct towards the loyalists.

[1] At this time the Chief Justiciar seems to have held in his hand certain parchment rolls as the emblem of his office: "Rex vocatis ad se Justiciario et Cancellario nuper institutis a Baronibus, sigillum suum sibi reddi, et *rotulos* de Justiciaria sibi mandavit restitui."—See Spel. 341.

CHAP. I.

In the battle of Lewes our Chief Justiciar commanded one of the wings of the army, and with his own hand took prisoner Marmaduke de Twenge, whose ransom was fixed at 700 marks. Immediately after, no fewer than six strong castles were placed under his government, and he had a grant of 1000 marks for his better sustentation in the office of Chief Justiciar. He was likewise appointed one of the six commissioners to treat with the Pope's legate and the King of France, as mediators relative to the reformation of the state.

He receives 1000 marks.

He continued to do the judicial business of the office regularly till again called into the field, to make head against the formidable force assembled under Prince Edward for the re-establishment of the royal authority. When the two armies came in sight of each other, near Evesham, the Earl of Leicester, in consideration of his age and infirmities, advised him to leave the field, but he refused to disgrace his ermine by such poltroonery; and the two were slain together, manfully making head against mighty odds, and refusing quarter which was offered to them.

Prince Edward. 4th Aug. 1265.

Death of Hugh le Despencer, last of the Chief Justiciars.

Hugh le Despencer is to be considered the last of those remarkable men who, for above two centuries, exercised conjointly the functions now belonging to the first judge in the land and to the commander-in-chief of the forces. Such a combination (as was seen in the Roman republic) certainly has a powerful tendency to develop the highest faculties of the mind, and produces characters of greater eminence than are to be found when the sword and the gown are permanently disunited.

His descendants.

The son and grandson of the last of the Chief Justiciars acquired a most unenviable celebrity in the reign of Edward II.; but he is now honorably represented by the present Baroness le Despencer, and

CHAP. I. some of the most illustrious of the nobility of England are descended from him.

Philip Basset, Chief Justiciar.

We need not be long delayed by Philip Basset, the rival Chief Justiciar. He was of the great family of that name which I have before mentioned, and which occurs much more frequently than any other name in our judicial annals. He began his political life in *opposition*, being associated with the Barons under De Montfort; but he soon went over to the Court, and became a special favorite of the feeble Henry. He was enriched by grants of various wardships, forfeitures, and shrievalties; was constituted governor of the castles of Oxford, Bristol, Corff, and Shireburn, and managed all the affairs of the King of the Romans. He had a very uneasy place as Chief Justiciar, but there was an interval while he enjoyed the title when he actually was allowed to perform the duties of the office, and during a short absence of the King in Gascony he acted as Regent of the kingdom.[1] The royal cause declining, his house in Westminster was burned by his rival, and he was obliged to fly for safety. At the battle of Lewes he fought bravely in the royal cause, and he resisted the victorious rebels sword in hand, until he fell from loss of blood, when he was taken prisoner along with his sovereign. He was then placed in Dover Castle, and kept a close prisoner there in the care of a younger son of the Earl of Leicester, till he was liberated on the final overthrow of that chieftain. It was generally thought that he would be restored to his office of Chief Justiciar; but the resolution had been taken to reform it, and, till this object should be fully accomplished, the more prudent course seemed to be to fill it with a man who was well acquainted with the administration of justice, and who

A favorite of the King and enriched by him.

A.D. 1253.

A.D. 1262.

He acts as Regent.

He is taken prisoner at the battle of Lewes.

[1] Still he went through the routine business of his office, and all the mandates on the Fine Roll are signed by him.—*Rot. Fin.* ii. 278–385.

LEWES, FROM THE DOWNS NEAR MOUNT HARRY.

never could be formidable as a military leader. However, the ex-Chief Justiciar continued to enjoy the royal favor. He was one of those appointed to carry into execution the "Dictum of Kenilworth,"[1] and he continued a member of the King's Council till his death. This must have happened in the autumn of 1271; for in the Fine Roll, under date 2d November, 56 Hen. III., there is an entry of an order for the constable of the Castle of Devizes to give it up to Elyas de Rabeyn, "because Philip Basset, his lord, is gone the way of all flesh."

"Dictum of Kenilworth." April 1266.

Basset's death.

He is reckoned by some antiquaries the last of the true Chief Justiciars, as they considered Hugh le Despencer an usurper of the office between the battle of Lewes and the battle of Evesham, and they hold that its character was entirely altered before the conclusion of this reign.[2]

I wish that I could have been justified in concluding the list of Chief Justiciars with Simon de Montfort himself: a life of him might be made most interesting and instructive, for not only did he achieve wonderful adventures by political intrigue and by military skill, and meet with striking vicissitudes of fortune, but he is to be honored as the founder of a representative system of government in this country, and the chief framer of that combination of democracy with mon-

Whether Simon de Montfort was ever Chief Justiciar?

De Montfort the founder of a representative system of government.

[1] "Dictum de Kenilworth," 1266, was the name given to the treaty made between King Henry III. and the remains of the baronial party, who, after the battle of Evesham, shut themselves up in Kenilworth Castle, where, after a siege of several months, they capitulated. This ordinance was then drawn up, declaring the plenary power of the King, annulling the acts of De Montfort, providing that the liberties of the Church should be maintained, that all persons, with the exception of the De Montforts and a few others, might compound for their offences with a fine, and that all who submitted within forty days should be pardoned.—*Low and Pulling's Dict. of Eng. Hist.*

[2] Dugdale says, "Of those who had the office of Justiciarius Angliæ, Philip Basset was the last, the King's Bench and Common Pleas having afterwards one in each court."—*Or. Jur.* p. 20: and see Spel. Gloss. p. 342.

CHAP. I. archy and aristocracy which has served as a model for all modern nations among whom freedom has flourished. I might make a pretence for an attempt to narrate his exploits and delineate his character, for he has been introduced among the Chief Justiciars; and three records are quoted, bearing date respectively 10th May, 7th June, and 8th June, 1265, in which the Earl of Leicester is styled "Justiciarius," which, possibly, might mean "Justiciarius Angliæ," the title by which Bigod, Le Despencer, and Basset were sometimes designated when they undoubtedly filled the highest office in the law. But an attentive examination of these records will show that he had only sat on a special commission: there is no proof that he ever was appointed to the office of Chief Justiciar, or acted in it; and there is no period to which his tenure of the office can be ascribed, except when, with his entire concurrence, it was filled by Hugh le Despencer, his partisan and dependant. When he called his famous parliament, with representatives from counties and boroughs to mingle in legislation with the hereditary nobility, he might easily have assumed the office of Chief Justiciar if he had been so inclined; but, on the contrary, he seems, with other constitutional improvements, to have meditated its abolition or reform, and there is great reason to believe that he suggested the new judicial system which was fully adopted and established in the succeeding reign, and under which justice is administered at this day in England.[1]

Records concerning him.

No proof that he was Chief Justiciar.

His constitutional improvements.

After the Barons had been effectually crushed, a partial trial of this system was made during the remainder of the life of the feeble Henry, with the sanction of his energetic son, who, before setting forth for Palestine, established a wise system of administration

1 Spelman, 342; Brady's England, i. 650, 651; Rot. Fin. ii. 405; Leland's Coll. ii. 378; Lives of Chancellors, i. ch. ix.

—a foretaste of his own happy reign. From the confusion introduced by the Barons' wars, and the consequent defective state of our records at that era, a doubt has been started whether the office of Chief Justiciar was filled up between the death of Hugh le Despencer in August, 1265, and March, 1268, when Robert de Brus was appointed to it. There is, however, strong reason to believe that in this interval it was held by Henry de Bracton, one of the greatest jurists who ever lived in any age or any country. He was, undoubtedly, a Justiciar at this time: in the commissions in which his name is mentioned no one had precedence of him; and we have the authority of Lord Ellesmere and others, who have carefully investigated the subject, for concluding that he was Chief Justiciar.

CHAP. I.

A.D. 1265—1268.

Henry de Bracton, Chief Justiciar.

It would be a matter of the highest interest to know how a man so enlightened and accomplished was formed during the very darkest period of English history, when the civilization introduced by the Normans seemed to be entirely obliterated, and when the amalgamation of races in this country had not yet begun to produce the native energy and refinement which afterwards sprang from it: but while we have the pedigree, at least up to the Conquest, and a minute account of the military exploits, of those who were employed in desolating the world, we have no information whatever of the origin, and very little of the career, of a man who explained to his savage countrymen the benefits to be derived from an equitable system of laws defining and protecting the rights of every class of the community,—who, drawing his sentiments from the rich fountain of Roman jurisprudence, expressed them in the Latin tongue with a purity seldom reached by the imitators of the Augustan age, and who was rivalled by no English juridical writer till Blackstone arose five centuries afterwards. He is

But little information of his career.

Unrivalled as a juridical writer till Blackstone arose.

CHAP. I. said, on uncertain authority, to have studied at Oxford, and there to have obtained the degree of Doctor of both laws. We know that he had taken holy orders, for, by letters patent, granting to him a house during the minority of the heir, he is designated "dilectus *clericus* noster."[1] He is supposed to have practised in the common-law courts of Westminster, and he certainly must have had great practical experience in juridical procedure, as well as a profound scientific knowledge of jurisprudence in all its departments. But we are not clearly informed of any part of his professional career till we find that, in the year 1245, he was appointed a Justice Itinerant for the counties of Nottingham and Derby, and in the following year for the northern counties. Such employment was compatible with his continuing to practise as a barrister during the terms, and his name does not appear in the Fine Rolls till four years later. He then certainly was a Justiciar or Judge of the AULA REGIS, and so he continued for many years.[2]

Twice Justice Itinerant.

A.D. 1250.

The probability is, that he was promoted to be Chief Justiciar in 1265, soon after the battle of Evesham, and that he held the office till he died in the end of the year 1267. All notice of him in the Rolls then ceases, and we certainly know that another Chief Justiciar was appointed in the beginning of 1268. We have no information respecting his descendants, although the greatest nobles in England might have been proud to trace him in their line.

Bracton's death.

His descendants not known.

His book, "De Legibus et Consuetudinibus Angliæ."

His memory will be preserved as long as the law of England, by his work, "De Legibus et Consuetudinibus Angliæ."[3] It must have been finished just

[1] "Our beloved clerk."

[2] He is sometimes named Bratton, and sometimes Bretton, in the Rolls; but these are distinctly proved to be the identical Henry de Bracton of whom we are treating.

[3] "Concerning the Laws and Customs of England."

about the time when he is supposed to have been Chief Justiciar, for it contains references to changes in the law introduced shortly before, and it takes no notice of the statute of Marlbridge,[1] which passed in the 52nd year of Henry III. The chief defect imputed to the work is its frequent introduction of the Roman civil law; but this will be found to be by way of illustration, not as authority; and there seems great reason to regret that the prejudices of English lawyers in all ages have inclined them to confine their attention almost exclusively to the technicalities of their own peculiar code,—ever more distinguished for precision than for enlarged principles. The work we are considering certainly gives a complete view of the municipal law of England in all its titles as it stood when the author wrote; and for systematic arrangement, for perspicuity, and for nervousness, it cannot be too much admired.[2]

CHAP. I.

Its introduction of the Roman civil law.

A complete view of the municipal law.

I now come to a "CHIEF" who, we certainly know by existing records, was appointed "CAPITATIS JUSTICIARIUS AD PLACITA CORAM REGE TENENDA," the modern designation of the presiding Judge in the Court of King's Bench; and he is placed by Dugdale at the head of the new list, who have exercised merely judicial functions. However, there had been no law passed by the Legislature since MAGNA CHARTA to change our judicial system; and, although a separate tribunal now existed for civil suits, there is reason to think that the AULA REGIS continued till the accession of Edward I. without any farther statutable alter-

First Chief Justice who acted merely as a judge. A.D. 1268.

[1] Parliament of Marlborough, 1267, reënacted as a statute of the realm the Provisions of 1259, with very few alterations, the most important being that the appointment of the royal ministers and the sheriffs was now left in the hands of the King.—*Low and Pulling's Dict. of Eng. Hist.*

[2] See Reeve's Hist. of Eng. Law, ii. 86, 281; Lives of Chancellors, i. ch. ix.; 2 St. Tr. 693; Rot. Cl. ii. 77; Rot. Fin. 82–458.

CHAP. I. Understanding with regard to the Aula Regis.

ation, there being merely an *understanding* that the person who presided in it was no longer to interfere in military affairs or in the government of the kingdom, whether the sovereign was at home or abroad.

The choice made of a Chief, who was to be, like Bracton, a mere civilian, seems a curious one; for, instead of a lawyer, born in obscurity, who had pushed himself into notice by success in his profession, he was the head of a great Norman baronial house; he had in his veins the blood of the Kings of Scotland; he enjoyed large possessions in that kingdom; he was in the succession to a throne; he actually became a competitor for it; his grandson, after giving the English the severest defeat they ever sustained, swayed the sceptre with glory and felicity; and our gracious Queen, Victoria, in tracing her line to the Conqueror and to Cerdic,[1] counts this Chief Justiciar among her ancestors.

Lord Chief Justice Bruce.

Origin of the Bruces.

Robert de Brus, or Bruis (in modern times spelled *Bruce*), was one of the companions of the Conqueror; and having particularly distinguished himself in the battle of Hastings, his prowess was rewarded with no fewer than ninety-four lordships, of which Skelton, in Yorkshire, was the principal. The Norman knights, having conquered England by the sword, in the course of a few generations got possession of a great part of Scotland by marriage. They were far more refined and accomplished than the Caledonian thanes; and, flocking to the court of the Scottish Kings, where they made themselves agreeable by their skill in the tournament and in singing romances, they softened the hearts and won the hands of all the heiresses. Hence the Scottish nobility are almost all of Norman extraction; and most of the great families in that

Robert de Brus at Hastings.

[1] Cerdic (*d.* 534), Saxon chieftain, founder of the kingdom of Wessex.—*Cassell's Biog. Dict.*

kingdom are to be traced to the union of a Celtic heiress with a Norman knight. Robert, the son of the first Robert de Brus, whom we have commemorated, having married early and had a son, Adam, who continued the line of De Brus of Skelton, became a widower while still a young man, and, to assuage his grief, paid a visit to Alexander I.,[1] then King of Scots, who was keeping his court at Stirling.[2] There the beautiful heiress of the immense lordship of Annandale, one of the most considerable fiefs held of the Crown, fell in love with him; and in due time he led her to the altar. A Scottish branch of the family of De Brus was thus founded under the designation of Lords of Annandale. The fourth in succession was "Robert the Noble," and he raised the family to much greater consequence by a royal alliance, for he married Isabel, the second daughter of Prince David, Earl of Huntingdon, grandson of David I., sometimes called St. David, and said to have been "a sore saint to the Crown," from the number of monasteries he had endowed from the royal domains.[3] Robert de Brus, the subject of this sketch, was their eldest son.

Scottish branch of the Bruces.

Lords of Annandale.

Royal alliance of "Robert the Noble."

The Chief Justice his son.

From the time of William the Conqueror and Malcolm Canmore, until the desolating wars occasioned by the dispute respecting the right of succession to

[1] Alexander I. of Scotland (*d.* 1124) ascended the throne in 1107. He married the daughter of Henry I. of England.—*Cassell's Biog. Dict.*

[2] Stirling, an ancient town with 16,000 inhabitants, is situated on the Forth, 35 miles above Edinburgh, and was formerly a favorite residence of the Scottish sovereigns. The picturesque and venerable castle is situated upon a lofty height overlooking the town and resembling the castle-rock of Edinburgh. Stirling Castle plays a prominent part in Scottish history. In 1304 it was taken by Edward I. of England after a siege of three months, but it was retaken by Bruce ten years later, after Bannockburn. James II. (1430) and James V. (1512) were born in the castle; and here, in 1452, James II. stabbed the rebellious Earl of Douglas.—*Baedeker's Gt. Britain*, p. 485.

[3] Four of these are within a few miles from the spot where I am now writing,—Jedburgh, Melrose, Dryburgh, and Kelso.

CHAP I. the Scottish crown, England and Scotland were almost perpetually at peace; and there was a most familiar and friendly intercourse between the two kingdoms, insomuch that nobles often held possessions in both, and not unfrequently passed from the service of the one government into that of the other. Thus we account for the exact uniformity of the laws of the two nations, which is so great that Scottish antiquaries have contended that their code, entitled "Regiam Majestatem,"[1] was copied by the English; although there can be no reasonable doubt that the northern and more barbarous people were the borrowers.

"Regiam Majestatem."

A.D. 1224—1268.

Birth of the Chief Justice.

Our Robert,[2] son of "Robert the Noble" and the Scottish Princess, was born at the Castle of Lochmaben, about the year 1224. The Skelton branch of the family still flourished, although it became extinct in the next generation by the death, without issue male, of Peter de Brus, the eighth in descent from Robert who fought at Hastings. At this time a close intercourse was kept up between "Robert the Noble" and his Yorkshire cousins; and he sent his heir to be educated in the south under their auspices. It is supposed that the youth studied at Oxford; but this fact does not rest on any certain authority. In 1245, his father died, and he succeeded to the lordship of Annandale. One would have expected that he would now have settled on his feudal principality, exercising the rights of *furca et fossa*, or "pit and gallows," which he possessed without any limit over his vassals; but by his English education he had become quite an Englishman, and,

He is educated in England.

He succeeds to the lordship of Annandale.

[1] "Royal Majesty."

[2] Robert de Brus was the fifth Lord of Annandale, to which he succeeded in 29 Henry III., 1245, on the death of his father, Robert the Noble, who, by his marriage with Isabel, the second daughter of Prince David, Earl of Huntingdon and Chester, grandson of David I., King of Scotland, became one of the greatest subjects in Europe.—*Foss's Lives of the Judges.*

CHAP. I.

paying only very rare visits to Annandale, he sought preferment at the court of Henry III. What surprises us still more is, that he took to the gown, not the sword; and instead of being a great warrior, like his forefathers and his descendants, his ambition seems to have been to acquire the reputation of a great lawyer. There can be little doubt that he practised as an advocate in Westminster Hall from 1245 till 1250. In the latter year, we certainly know that he took his seat on the bench as a Puisne Judge, or Justiciar; and, from thence till 1263, extant records prove that payments were made for assizes to be taken before him,—that he acted with other Justiciars in the levying of fines,—and that he went circuits as senior judge of assize. In the 46th year of Henry III. he had a grant of 40*l.* a year salary, which one would have supposed could not have been a great object to the Lord of Annandale. In the Barons' wars, he was always true to the King; and, although he had no taste for the military art, he accompanied his royal master into the field, and was taken prisoner with him at the battle of Lewes.

He seeks preferment at the English court.

He is a Puisne Judge.

He is taken prisoner in the battle of Lewes.

The royal authority being reëstablished by the victory at Evesham, he resumed his functions as a Puisne Judge; and for two years more there are entries proving that he continued to act in that capacity. At last, on the 8th of March, 1268, 52 Henry III., he was appointed "Capitalis Justiciarius ad placita coram Rege tenenda." Unless his fees or presents were very high, he must have found the reward of his labors in his judicial dignity, for his salary was very small. Hugh Bigod and Hugh le Despencer had received 1000 marks a year "ad se sustentandum in officio Capitalis Justitiarii Angliæ,"[1] but Chief Justice de Brus was reduced to 100 marks a year. Such delight did

A.D. 1268.

He is made Chief Justice.

His salary reduced to 100 marks.

[1] "For maintaining himself in the office of Chief Justice of England."

CHAP. I. he take in playing the Judge, that he quietly submitted both to loss of power and loss of profit.

He loses the office on the death of Henry III.

He remained Chief Justice till the conclusion of this reign, a period of four years and a half, during which he alternately went circuits and presided in Westminster Hall. None of his decisions have come down to us, and we are very imperfectly informed respecting the nature of the cases which came before him. The boundaries of jurisdiction between the Parliament, the AULA REGIS, and the rising tribunal afterwards called the Court of King's Bench, seem to have been then very much undefined.

A.D. 1272.

On the demise of the Crown, Robert de Brus was desirous of being reappointed; but it was resolved to fill the office with a regularly trained lawyer, and there is reason to fear that he was not much better qualified for it than the military chiefs who had presided in the AULA REGIS before the common law of England was considered a science. He was so much mortified by being passed over, that he resolved to renounce England for ever; and he would not even wait to pay his duty to Edward I., now returning from the holy wars.

His mortification at not being reappointed.

He returns to Scotland.

The ex-Chief Justice posted off for his native country, and established himself in his Castle of Lochmaben, where he amused himself by sitting in person in his court baron, and where all that he laid down was, no doubt, heard with reverence, however lightly his law might have been dealt with in Westminster Hall.

A.D. 1286.

Occasionally he paid visits to the court of his kinsman, Alexander III., but he does not appear to have taken any part in Scottish politics till the untimely

A.D. 1290.

death of that monarch, which, from a state of peace and prosperity, plunged the country into confusion and misery.

There was now only the life of an infant fe-

male,[1] residing in a distant land, between him and his plausible claim to the Scottish crown. He was nominated one of the negotiators for settling the marriage between her and the son of Edward I., which, if it had taken place, would have entirely changed the history of the island of Great Britain. From his intimate knowledge both of Scotland and England, it is probable that the "Articles" were chiefly of his framing, and it must be allowed that they are just and equitable. For his own interest, as well as for the independence of his native country, he took care to stipulate that, "failing Margaret and her issue, the kingdom of Scotland should return to the nearest heirs, to whom of right it ought to return, wholly, freely, absolutely, and without any subjection."[2]

CHAP. I.

He is a commissioner for negotiating the marriage of the Maid of Norway with the son of Edward I.

The Maid of Norway having died on her voyage home, the ex-Chief Justice immediately appeared at Perth with a formidable retinue, and was in hopes of being immediately crowned King at Scone;[3]—and he had nearly accomplished his object, for John Baliol, his most formidable competitor[4] in point of right,

On her death he claims the crown of Scotland.

[1] Alexander had wedded his only daughter to the King of Norway, and after long negotiation the Scotch parliament proposed the marriage of Margaret, "the Maid of Norway," the girl who was the only issue of this marriage and so heiress of the kingdom, with the son of Edward I.—*Green's Hist. of Eng. People*, vol. i. p. 325.

[2] Some historians, both English and Scotch, have supposed that the Robert Bruce employed in this negotiation was the son of the Chief Justice who so romantically became Earl of Carrick, by being forced by the heiress of that great domain to marry her; but Lord Hales clearly proves that it was Robert the father.—See Dalrymple's Annals, i. 198, 204.

[3] Scone is in the eastern part of Scotland, near Perth. The palace is on the site of the Augustine abbey in which the early Scottish Kings were crowned.—*Baedeker's Gt. Britain*, p. 499.

[4] Of the thirteen pretenders to the throne of Scotland only three could be regarded as serious claimants. By the extinction of the line of William the Lion the right of succession passed to the daughters of his brother David. The claim of John Baliol, Lord of Galloway, rested on his descent from the elder of these; that of Robert Bruce, Lord of Annandale, on his descent from the second; that of John Hastings, Lord of Abergavenny, on his descent from the third.—*Green's Hist. of Eng. People*, vol. i. p. 326.

CHAP. I. always feeble and remiss in action, was absent in England. But, from the vain wish to prevent future disputes by a solemn decision of the controversy after all parties should have been heard, the Scotch nobility in an evil hour agreed to refer it, according to the fashion of the age, to the arbitration of a neighboring sovereign; and fixed upon Edward I. of England, their wily neighbor.

The matter referred to Edward I. A.D. 1291.

Robert de Brus acknowledges Edward I. as Lord Paramount of Scotland.

It is a great reproach to the memory of the ex-Chief Justice that, at the famous meeting on the banks of the Tweed, when the English Chancellor, in the presence of the notables of both nations, asked him "whether he acknowledged Edward as Lord Paramount of Scotland, and whether he was willing to ask and receive judgment from him in that character, he expressly, definitively, and absolutely declared his assent."[1]

He afterwards pleaded his own cause with great dexterity, and many supposed that he would succeed. Upon the doctrine of *representation*, which is familiar to us, Baliol seems clearly to have the better claim, as he was descended from the eldest daughter of the Earl of Huntingdon: but Bruce was one degree nearer the common stock; and this doctrine, which was not then firmly established, had never been applied to the descent of the crown.[2]

Baliol's claim.

A.D. 1292. Decided against Bruce.

When Edward I. determined in favor of Baliol, influenced probably less by the arguments in his favor than by the consideration that from the weakness of his character he was likely to be a more submissive vassal, Robert de Brus complained bitterly that he was wronged, and resolutely refused to acknowledge the title of his rival. He retired in disgust to his Castle of Lochmaben, where he died in November, 1295, in the seventy-second year of his age.

His death.

[1] R. Fœd. vol. ii. 545. [2] See Dalrymple's Annals, i. 215–243.

CHAP. I. His descendants.

While resident in England he had married Isabel, daughter of Gilbert de Clare, Earl of Gloucester, by whom he had several sons. Robert, the son of Robert the eldest, became Robert I., and one of the greatest of heroes. The descent of the crown through him to the Stuarts is, of course, universally known. The family of the Chief Justice is still kept up in the male line by the descendants of his younger son, John, among whom are numbered the Earl of Elgin, the Earl of Cardigan, and the Marquess of Aylesbury.[1]

[1] See Dugd. Chr. Ser. Rot. Fin. ii. 79, 545 ; Dugd. Bar. Coll. Peerage.

CHAPTER II.

THE LIVES OF THE CHIEF JUSTICES FROM THE ACCESSION OF EDWARD I. TO THE APPOINTMENT OF CHIEF JUSTICE TRESILIAN.

CHAP. II. A.D. 1272.

WE now arrive at the era when our judicial institutions were firmly established on the basis on which, with very little alteration, they have remained to the present day. Although the AULA REGIS had existed down to the conclusion of the reign of Henry III., and cases of peculiar importance or difficulty were decided before the Chief Justiciar, assisted by the great officers of state,[1] it had gradually ceased to be a court of original jurisdiction, and it had been separating into distinct tribunals to which different classes of causes were assigned. Edward I., our JUSTINIAN, now not only systematized and reformed the principles of English jurisprudence, but finally framed the courts for the administration of justice as they have subsisted for six centuries. "In his time the law did receive so sudden a perfection, that Sir Matthew Hale does not scruple to affirm that more was done in the first thirteen years of his reign to settle and establish the distributive justice of the kingdom, than in all the ages since that

The Aula Regis separated into distinct tribunals.

Judicial institutions of Edw. I.

Distributive justice settled and established.

[1] A remnant of the Aula Regis subsisted to our own time in the "Exchequer Chamber" into which cases of great importance and difficulty continued to be adjourned, to be argued before all the judges. The practice of judges reserving points of criminal law arising before them on the circuit, I consider as having had a similar origin. The rule which prevailed—that both in civil and criminal cases the opinions of the majority of the judges in the Exchequer Chamber should overrule the opinions of the majority of the judges of the court in which the cases originated, and in which formal judgment was to be given—admits of no other solution.

time put together."[1] The AULA REGIS he utterly abolished as a court of justice; and he decreed that there should no longer be a Justiciar with military and political as well as judicial functions. "The Court of our Lord the King before the King himself," or "Court of King's Bench," was constituted. Here the King was supposed personally to preside, assisted by the first common-law judge, denominated "Chief Justice, assigned to hold pleas in the Court of our Lord the King before the King himself," and by other justices or "puisne judges." This was the supreme court of criminal jurisdiction, and was invested with a general superintendence over inferior tribunals. MAGNA CHARTA had enacted that civil actions should be tried before judges always sitting in the same place, so that the suitors might not be compelled to follow the King in his migrations to the different cities in his dominions; and the section of the AULA REGIS which had subsequently sat at Westminster now became the "Court of Common Pleas," having a Chief Justice and Puisnies, with an exclusive jurisdiction which it still preserves over "real actions,"—although, by ingenious fictions, other courts stripped it of much of its business in the trial of "personal actions." The management of the estates and revenues of the Crown had been early intrusted to certain members of the AULA REGIS, who were called "Barons of the Exchequer." They now formed an entirely separate tribunal called the "Court of Exchequer," with the Lord Treasurer and the Chancellor of the Exchequer to preside over them—being in strictness confined merely to fiscal matters in which the Crown was concerned, but gradually usurping both legal and equitable jurisdiction between subject and subject, by countenancing the fiction that the suitors were the King's debtors, or the King's account-

CHAP. II. The Aula Regis abolished as a court of justice.

"Court of King's Bench" constituted.

"Court of Common Pleas."

"Court of Exchequer."

[1] 4 Bl. Com. 425; Hale's Hist. C. L. p. 162.

CHAP. II. The Chancellor advanced in precedence.

ants. The Chancellor, from being the sixth in precedence of the great officers of state, was now advanced to be the first, and he was intrusted with the power of doing justice to the subject where no remedy was provided by the common law. The appellate jurisdiction of the AULA REGIS was vested in the great council of the nation now called the Parliament, and, on the division of the legislature into two chambers which soon followed, remained with the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, who had the Judges as their assessors.

Appellate jurisdiction vested in the Parliament.

All juridical knowledge was long monopolized by the clergy; but while the civil and common law continued to be cultivated by them exclusively, a school of municipal or common law had been established for laymen, who gradually formed themselves into societies called "Inns of Court,"[1] devoting their lives to

[1] Just beyond the site of Temple Bar we may turn aside into the repose of the first of the four Inns of Court (Middle Temple, Inner Temple, Lincoln's Inn, and Gray's Inn), which Ben Jonson calls "the noblest nurseries of humanity and liberty in the kingdom." Here, beside the bustle of Fleet Street, yet utterly removed from it, are the groups of ancient buildings described by Spenser. The earliest residence of the Knights Templars was in Holborn, but they removed hither in 1184. After their suppression in 1313 Edward I. gave the property to Aymer de Valence. At his death it passed into the hands of the Knights of St. John of Jerusalem, but was leased to the Inns of Court, so called because their inhabitants, who were students of the law, belonged to "the King's Court." It is interesting to notice how many of the peculiar terms used by the Templars seem to have descended with the place to their legal successors. Thus the sergeants-at-law represent the *fratres servientes*—"freres serjens" of the Templars; and the title of Knight reappears in that of the Judges. The waiters were, and are still, called panniers, from the *panarii*, bread-bearers, of the Templars; and the scullions are still called wash-pots. The register of the Temple is full of such entries as "On March 28th died William Brown, wash-pot of the Temple." Before the Temple was leased by the lawyers, the laws were taught in hostels—*hospitia curiæ*, of which there were a great number in the metropolis, especially in the neighborhood of Holborn, but afterwards the Inns of Court and Chancery increased in prosperity till they formed what Stow describes as "a whole university of students, practisers or pleaders, and judges of the laws of this realm, not living on common stipends, as in the other universities it is for the most part done, but of their owne private maintenance." The name of *Hostel* was continued in that of *Inn*.

GATEWAY TO LINCOLN'S INN.

From "Loftie," Inns of Court.

legal pursuits. From the body of professional men thus trained, Edward resolved to select his Judges; and he appointed RALPH DE HENGHAM Chief Justice of the King's Bench, and THOMAS DE WEYLAND Chief Justice of the Common Pleas, allowing them a salary

The prosperity of the lawyers, however, was not without its reverses, and such was their unpopularity at the time of Jack Cade's rebellion that they were chosen as his first victims. Thus, in Shakespeare's *Henry VI.* (Pt. II. Act iv. sc. 2), Dick, the Butcher of Ashford, is introduced as saying, "The first thing we do, let's kill all the lawyers;" to which Cade replies, "Nay, that I mean to do. Is not this a lamentable thing, that of the skin of an innocent lamb should be made parchment? that parchment, being scribbled over, should undo a man?" And in scene 7 Cade says, "Now go some and pull down the Savoy; others to the Inns of Court; down with them all!" In the end, Jack Cade really did the lawyers no harm, but their houses were pulled down in the invasion of Wat Tyler, and their books burnt in Fleet Street. Nevertheless the Inns of the Temple continued to increase in importance till the reign of Mary I., when the young lawers had become such notorious fops that it was actually necessary to pass an Act of Parliament to restrain them. Henceforth they were not to wear beards of more than three weeks' growth upon pain of a fine of forty shillings; and they must restrain their passion for Spanish cloaks, swords, bucklers, rapiers, gowns, hats, or daggers at their girdles. Only Knights and Benchers might luxuriate in doublets or hose of bright colors, except scarlet or crimson; and they were forbidden to wear velvet caps, scarf-wings to their gowns, white jerkins, buskins, velvet shoes, double shirt-cuffs, or feathers and ribbons in their caps. The Temple was not finally conferred upon the lawyers till the time of James I., who declared in one of his speeches in the Star Chamber that "there were only three classes of people who had any right to settle in London—the courtiers, the citizens, and the gentlemen of the Inns of Court." The division into two Halls dates from the time of Henry VI., when the number of students who frequented the Temple first made it necessary, and the two Halls have ever since maintained a distinct individuality. Though their gateways rise almost side by side on the right of Fleet Street, and their courts and passages join, the utmost distinction exists in the minds of the inmates. Before any student can be admitted to either of the four Societies of the Inns of Court, he must obtain the certificate of two barristers, and in the case of the Middle Temple that of a bencher, to show he is "aptus, habilis, et idoneus moribus et scientia." On his admission, he has the use of the library, may claim a seat in the church or chapel of the Inn, and can have his name set down for chambers. He must then keep *commons*, by dining in hall for twelve terms, of which there are four in each year. Before keeping terms, he must also deposit £100 with the treasurer, to be returned, without interest, when he is called to the Bar. No student can be *called* till he is of three years' standing, and twenty-one years of age: after he is called, he becomes a *Barrister*. The call is made by the *Benchers*, the governing body of seniors, chosen for their

CHAP. II. of only sixty marks a year, but adding a small pittance

"honest behavior and good disposition," and "such as from their experience are of best note and ability to serve the kingdom."

Lectures are given at each of the Inns, which are open to all its students; examinations take place and scholarships are awarded: but a man may be called to the Bar who has not attended lectures or passed examinations, though *keeping commons* by dining in hall is an indispensable qualification.

The Inns of Court are interesting to others besides lawyers, for they are the last working institutions in the nature of the old trade guilds. It is no longer necessary that a shoemaker should be approved by the company of the craft before he can apply himself to making shoes for his customers, and a man may keep an oyster-stall without being forced to serve an apprenticeship and be admitted to the Livery of the great Whig Company; but the lawyers' guilds guard the entrance to the law, and prescribe the rules under which it shall be practised. There are obvious advantages in having some authority to govern such a profession as the Bar, but it is sufficiently remarkable that the voluntary societies of barristers themselves should have managed to engross and preserve it.

A dull red-brick *Gateway*, by Wren (1684), forms the entrance to *Middle Temple Lane*. The site was formerly occupied by a gate decorated with the arms of Cardinal Wolsey, which was erected by Sir Amias Paulet while he was the cardinal's prisoner in the other Temple Gate-house, in the hope of appeasing his displeasure.

The second *Gate-house* belonging to the *Inner Temple* was once surmounted by gables and annexed to very picturesque buildings of great extent. Only a fragment of the ornamental portion remains, adorned with the feathers of Henry, Prince of Wales. A hairdresser of lively imagination has set up an inscription declaring it to have been the palace of Henry VIII. and Cardinal Wolsey, but it was really built in the time of James I., when it was the office for the duchy of Cornwall. Afterwards it became "Nando's," a coffee-house, where the foundation of Lord Thurlow's fortunes was laid. Some lawyers overheard him here arguing cleverly about some famous cause, and the next day he received his first important brief. The sides of this gate are adorned with the arms of the Inner Temple, as that of the Middle Temple is with the lamb bearing the banner of Innocence and the red cross, which was the original badge of the Templars. Here the shields bear a horse, now representing Pegasus, with the motto, "Volat ad astera virtus," but when this emblem was originally chosen it was a horse with two men upon it, the two men on one horse being intended to indicate the poverty of the Templars. The men gradually became worn from the shield, and when it was restored they were mistaken for wings; hence the winged horse.

It was at No. 1 on the right of the *Inner Temple Lane* (now rebuilt as Johnson's Buildings) that Dr. Johnson lived from 1760 to 1765.

The labyrinthine courts of the Temple are all replete with quaint associations. The Inner Temple is the least so. Most of it was destroyed by the great fire of 1666, which even "licked the windows" of the Temple Church, and what remained perished in the fire of January, 1678, when the Thames and the pumps were frozen so hard that no water could be ob-

to purchase robes, and stimulating their industry by fees on the causes they tried. CHAP. II.

tained, and all the barrels of ale in the Temple cellars were used to feed the fire-engines. The old *Inner Temple Hall* of James I.'s time (where the last revel of the Inns of Court took place in 1733, when Mr. Talbot was made Lord Chancellor) was replaced in 1870 by a handsome perpendicular Gothic hall from designs of *Sidney Smirke*.

Hare Court is so called from Nicholas Hare (1557), Master of the Rolls in the time of Mary I. *Crown Office Row* was the birthplace of Charles Lamb, who afterwards lived in 4 Inner Temple Lane.

It was in *King's Bench Walk* that William Murray, afterwards Earl of Mansfield, had chambers (No. 5), and here that he was visited as client by Sarah, Duchess of Marlborough, who came late in the evening, and was disgusted at finding him gone out to a supper-party. "I could not tell who she was," said the servant, reporting her visit, "for she would not tell me her name, but she swore so dreadfully that I am sure she must be a lady of quality."

Turning to the Middle Temple, it will be interesting to remember that Chaucer was one of its students in the reign of Edward III., and, while here, gave a sound thrashing to a Franciscan friar who insulted him in Fleet Street. On the first floor of No. 2, *Brick Court*, lived the learned Blackstone. Here the great lawyer was immersed in writing the fourth volume of his famous Commentaries ; but in his calculation of the trials of legal life there was one which he had not foreseen. Oliver Goldsmith had taken the rooms above him, and sorely was he disturbed by the roaring comic songs in which the author of "Vicar of Wakefield" was wont to indulge, and by the frantic games of blind-man's-buff which preceded his supper-parties, and the dancing which followed them. Here Sir Joshua Reynolds, coming in suddenly, found the poet engaged in furiously kicking round the room a parcel containing a masquerade dress which he had ordered and had no money to pay for ; and here, on April 9, 1774, poor Goldsmith died.

The pleasantest part of the Middle Temple is the *Fountain Court*, with its little fountain.

In this court is the *Middle Temple Hall*, an admirable Elizabethan building (of 1572) with a screen, which is very handsome, though it is not, as is often said, made from the spoils of the Spanish Armada, being thirteen years earlier in date. The order of the military monks is preserved here during dinner, the Benchers on the dais representing the knights, the Barristers the priors or brethren, the Students the novices. The old Cow's Horn is preserved, by the blowing of which the Benchers used to be summoned to dinner. It is a fact worth notice, as showing the habits of these Benchers in former days, that when the floor of the Middle Temple Hall was taken up in 1764, no less than a hundred pair of (very small) dice were found beneath it, having slipped through between the ill-adjusted boards. In the time of Elizabeth the Benchers were so quarrelsome a body that an edict was passed that no one should come into hall with other weapons than a sword or a dagger ! The feasts of Christmas, Halloween, Candlemas, and Ascension were formerly kept here with great

CHAP. II. His origin.

The De Henghams had long been settled at Thet-

splendor, a regular Master of the Revels being elected, and the Lord Chancellor, Judges, and Benchers opening the sports by dancing solemnly three times around the sea-coal fire.

Chancery Lane is a long winding street where the great Lord Strafford was born (1593), and where Izaak Walton, "the father of angling," lived as a London linen-draper (1627–1644).

The Lane and its surrounding streets have a peculiar legal traffic of their own, and abound in wig-makers, strong-box makers, and law stationers and booksellers. In former times when the Inns of Court were more like colleges at Oxford and Cambridge, and when the students which belonged to them lived together within their walls, dined together, and shared the same exercises and amusements, the Inns of Court always had Inns of Chancery annexed to them. These were houses where the younger students underwent a course of preparation for the greater freedom of the colleges of the Inns of Court. Now the Inns of Chancery are comparative solitudes: readers of Dickens will recollect the vivid descriptions of Symond's Inn in "Bleak House." On the right of Chancery Lane, behind St. Dunstan's Church, are the dark brick courts of *Sergeants' Inn*, originally intended only for judges and the sergeants-at-law who derive their name from the *fratres servientes* of the Knights Templars. The sergeants still address each other as brothers. The degree of Sergeant is the highest attainable in the faculty of law, and indispensable for a seat on the judicial bench. The courts of Sergeants' Inn join those of the earliest foundation of those Inns of Chancery which we have been describing, *Clifford's Inn*, so called because the land on which it stands was devised in the reign of Edward II. to "our beloved and faithful Robert de Clifford." It was in the hall of Clifford's Inn that Sir Matthew Hale and seventeen other judges sat after the Great Fire to adjudicate upon the perplexed claims of landlords and tenants in the destroyed houses—a task which they accomplished so much to the satisfaction of every one concerned that their portraits are all preserved in Guildhall in honor of patient justice. Farther down Chancery Lane, on the same side, is an old dingy courtyard containing the *Rolls Court* and *Chapel*. The latter was originally built in the time of Henry III., but rebuilt by Inigo Jones in 1617, when Dr. Donne preached the consecration sermon. Bishop Atterbury and Bishop Butler were Preachers at Rolls, and also Bishop Burnet, who was dismissed on account of the offence given to King and Court by his preaching a sermon here on the text, "Save me from the lion's mouth; thou hast heard me from the horns of the unicorns."

On the left of Chancery Lane is the noble brick *Gateway* of *Lincoln's Inn*, bearing the date 1518, and adorned with the arms of Sir Thomas Lovell, by whom it was built in the reign of Henry VIII. It is ornamented by inlaid brickwork of different colors, in the style of Hampton Court, and is the only example remaining in London, except the gate of St. James's. Stretching along the front of the Inn, on the interior, are a number of curious towers and gables with pointed doorways and Tudor windows, forming, with the chapel opposite upon its raised arches, one of the most picturesque architectural groups in London. It is upon this gate-

ford in Norfolk; and the head of the family, towards

way that Fuller describes Ben Jonson as working with his Horace in one hand, and a trowel in the other, when "some gentlemen pitying that his parts should be buried under the rubbish of so mean a calling, did of their bounty manumize him freely to follow his own ingenious inclinations."

The name Lincoln's Inn came from Henry de Lacy, Earl of Lincoln. *ob.* 1312, whose town-house once occupied its site. Its courtyards have a look of antiquity. On the left of the ground-floor, at No. 24 in the "Old Buildings" were the rooms of Oliver Cromwell's secretary Thurloe from 1645 to 1659, where his correspondence was discovered behind a false ceiling. There is a tradition that the Protector came thither one day to discuss with Thurloe the plot of Sir Richard Willis for seizing the persons of the three princes, sons of Charles I. Having disclosed his plans, he discovered Thurloe's clerk apparently asleep upon his desk. Fearing treason, he would have killed him on the spot, but Thurloe prevented him, and after passing a dagger repeatedly over his unflinching countenance he was satisfied that the clerk was really asleep. He was not asleep, however, and had heard everything, and found means to warn the princes. Two of the old gables have sun-dials with the mottoes—"Qua redit, nescitis horam,"—"Ex hoc momento pendet æternitas." The Perpendicular Chapel, at the right of the entrance, was built from designs of Inigo Jones, and is raised upon arches, which form a kind of crypt, open at the sides, where Pepys went "to walk under the chapel, by agreement." The stained windows are remarkably good; they represent different saints, and it is not to be wondered at that Archbishop Laud thought it odd that so much abuse should be raised against his windows at Lambeth, while these passed unnoticed, yet would not speak of it lest he should "thereby set some furious spirit on work to destroy those harmless goodly windows to the just dislike of that worthy society." The chapel bell was taken by the Earl of Essex, at Cadiz, in 1596. William Prynne, the Puritan, was buried here. Drs. Donne, Usher, Tillotson, Warburton, and Heber were preachers of Lincoln's Inn. In the porch is a monument to Spencer Perceval (murdered May 11, 1812), Attorney-General and Treasurer of Lincoln's Inn. Crossing one end of the old-fashioned brick square of *New Inn*, we reach a handsome group of brick buildings by *Hardwicke*, 1843–45, comprising the *Hall* and the *Library*. In the former are a great fresco by *G. F. Watts* (1854–59), representing "The Origin of Legislation," *Hogarth's* picture of Paul before Felix, and a fine statue of Lord Eldon by *Westmacott*. The latter contains a valuable collection of manuscripts, chiefly bequeathed by Sir Matthew Hale. One of the curious customs, preserved till lately at Lincoln's Inn, was that a servant went to the outer hall door and shouted three times "Venez manger" at twelve o'clock, when there was nothing on the table.

The ancient

> "Walks of Lincoln's Inn
> Under the elms,"

mentioned by Ben Jonson, have perished; but *Lincoln's Inn Fields*,

CHAP. II. the end of the reign of Henry III., had gained distinc-

"perplexed and troublous valley of the shadow of the Law," as Dickens calls it, is still the largest and shadiest square in London, and was laid out by Inigo Jones. Its dimensions have been erroneously stated to be the same as those of the Great Pyramid, which are much larger. The square was only railed off in 1735, and till then bore a very evil reputation. It was here (Sept. 20 and 21, 1586) that Babington and other conspirators for Mary Queen of Scots were "hanged, bowelled, and quartered, even in the place where they used to meet and conferre of their traiterous purposes." Here, also, the brave and upright William, Lord Russell, unjustly suffered for alleged high treason, attended by Tillotson and Burnet on the scaffold.

If we follow Chancery Lane into Holborn, a long series of gables of the time of James I. breaks the sky-line upon the right, and beneath them is a grand old house, following the bend of the street with its architecture, projecting more and more boldly in every story, broken by innumerable windows of quaint design and intention, and with an arched doorway in the centre. This is the entrance to *Staple Inn*, originally a hostelry of the merchants of the Wool Staple, who were removed to Westminster by Richard II. in 1378. It became an Inn of Chancery in the reign of Henry V., and since the time of Henry VIII. has been a dependency of Gray's Inn.

Beyond the miniature *Hall*—eminently picturesque, with its high timber roof and lanthorn, its stained windows and ancient portraits and busts of the Cæsars—is a second court containing some admirable modern buildings on a raised terrace (by *Whig and Pownall*, 1843), of the architecture of James I., devoted to the offices of the taxing masters in Chancery. It was to Staple Inn that Dr. Johnson removed from Gough Square, and here that—to pay the expenses of his mother's funeral and fulfil the few debts she left behind her—he wrote, what he described to Miss Porter as a little story book—i.e., his "Rasselas." A little lower down on the same side of Holborn a passage under a public-house forms the humble entrance to *Barnard's Inn*, a little Inn of Chancery belonging to Gray's Inn. Again, there are tiny courts with a single tree growing in them, and flowers lining the window-sills, divided by a tiny hall with a baby lanthorn, and a line of quaint windows decorated by coats of arms and set in a timber framework.

On the opposite side of the street is *Furnival's Inn*, which was called after a Sir William Furnival, who once owned the land. It was an Inn of Chancery attached to Lincoln's Inn. Its buildings are shown by old prints to have been exceedingly stately, and were for the most part pulled down in the time of Charles I., and it was entirely rebuilt in 1818. A statue of Henry Peto, 1830, stands in the modern courtyard. Sir Thomas More was a "reader" of Furnival's Inn, and Dickens was residing here when he began his "Pickwick Papers." Very near this was Scroope's Inn, described by Stow as one of the "faire buildings" which stood on the north side of "Old Borne Hill," above the bridge. It belonged to the sergeants-at-law, but is entirely destroyed. On the opposite side of the street, close to where St. Andrew's Church now stands,

CLIFFORD'S INN.

From "Loftie," Inns of Court.

tion as a knight in several passages of arms, had been a Judge in the AULA REGIS, and had acted as a Justice in Eyre.[1] Ralph, a younger son of his, having a greater taste for law than for military exercises, was, while yet a boy, placed in the office of a prothonotary in CHAP. II.

was Thavie's Inn, the most ancient of all the Inns of Court, which in the time of Edward III. was the "hospitium" of John Thavie, an armorer, and leased by him to the "Apprentices of the Law." Its buildings were destroyed by fire at the end of the last century. Gray's Inn Lane leads from the north of Holborn to *Gray's Inn*, which is the fourth Inn of Court in importance. It derives its name from the family of Gray de Wilton, to which it formerly belonged. Its vast pink-red court, with the steep roofs and small-paned windows which recall French buildings, still contains a handsome hall of 1560, in which, on all festal meetings, the only toast proposed is "the glorious, pious, and immortal memory of Queen Elizabeth," by whom the members of Gray's Inn were always treated with great distinction. Sir William Gascoigne, the just judge who committed Henry V. as Prince of Wales to prison for contempt of court; Cromwell, Earl of Essex; Bishop Gardiner; Lord Burleigh; Sir Nicholas Bacon, and the great Lord Bacon, were members of Gray's Inn, as were Archbishop Whitgift, Bishop Hall, and Archbishop Laud. Lord Bacon wrote the "Novum Organum" here, a work which, in spite of King James, who declared it was "like the peace of God, which passeth all understanding," was welcomed with a tumult of applause by all the learned men of Europe. Dr. Richard Sibbes, who wrote the "Soul's Conflict" and the "Bruised Reed," was a Preacher in this Inn, and died here in one of the courts.

Gray's Inn is described by Dickens in "The Uncommercial Traveller." The trees in *Gray's Inn Gardens* were originally planted by Lord Bacon, but none remain of his time. On the west side of the gardens "Lord Bacon's Mount" stood till lately, answering to his recommendation in his "Essay on Gardens"—"a mount of some pretty height, leaving the wall of the enclosure breast-high, to look abroad into the fields." These gardens were a fashionable promenade of Charles II.'s time. Pepys, writing in May, 1662, says:

"When church was done, my wife and I walked to Graye's Inne, to observe the fashions of the ladies, because of my wife's making some clothes."

The characteristics of the four Inns of Court are summed up in the distich—

"Gray's Inn for walks, Lincoln's Inn for wall,
The Inner Temple for a garden, and the Middle for a hall."
—*Hare's Walks in London*, vol. i. p. 57 *et seq.*

[1] The Justices in Eyre were itinerant judges, who rode the circuit to hold courts in the different counties.—*Webster's Dict.*

CHAP. II. His progress in the law.

London, and not only made himself master of the procedure of the courts, but took delight in perusing Glanville, Bracton, and Fleta, which, in those simple and happy times, composed a complete law library. Without the clerical tonsure, he became a candidate for business at the bar; but such was the belief that the characters of *causidicus*[1] and *clericus*[2] must be united, that, to further his success, he was obliged to take holy orders, and he was made a canon of St. Paul's.[3] His reputation in Westminster Hall was now greater than that of any other man of his time; and while he was little more than thirty years of age, on the principle of *detur digniori*[4] he was made Chief Justice of the Court of King's Bench, and received the honor of knighthood.

A canon of St. Paul's.

His wide reputation.

A.D. 1278—1286. Law books composed by him.

He fully answered the expectation which had been formed of him for industry, learning, and ability. His great object was to establish a regular *procedure* in his court calculated to expedite suits and to prevent fraud. He began with publishing a collection of writs which he had carefully made and revised, known by the name of REGISTRUM BREVIUM,[5] and pronounced by Lord Coke to be "the most ancient book on the law."[6] Next, he composed an original work, which is still extant, and quoted in Westminster Hall as the "Summæ of Lord Chief Justice Hengham." It is written in Latin, and divided into two books, called "Hengham Magna" and "Hengham Parva," giving

"Registrum Brevium."

The "Summæ."

[1] Advocate.

[2] Clerk or clergyman.

[3] It was to conceal the want of clerical tonsure, that the sergeants-at-law, who soon monopolized the practice of the Court of Common Pleas, adopted the *coif*, or black velvet cap, which became the badge of their order.

[4] "Let it be given to the more worthy."

[5] "Collection or Register of Writs."

[6] 4 Inst. 140; 3 Rep. Preface, vii. He means, of permanent authority in the common law; which earlier treatises could not be considered.

instructions with regard to the mode of conducting actions, particularly writs of right, of dower, and of assize, from the *præcipe* to the *execution* of the judgment. It continued in MS. till the reign of James I., when it was printed and published with the following title-page: CHAP. II. Printed in the reign of James I.

"RADULPHI
de
HENGHAM
EDWARDI Regis I.
Capitalis olim Justitiarii
SUMMÆ,
Magna Hengham et Parva vulgo
nuncupatæ. nunc primum ex vet. Codd.
MSS. lucem prodeunt.

LONDINI.
Bibliopolarum Corpori excuditur.
M.DC.XVI."[1] Its title-page.

The Latinity is barbarous even for a lawyer, and the arrangement not very good. From a quaint analogy to the Mosaic account of the creation, he supposes the work of conducting a suit to be divided into six days; and he describes what is to be done each day—in "casting an essoin,"[2] "demanding a view," etc.[3] But it may be considered as creating order out of chaos in the legal world, and, with all its faults, it must have The service rendered by it.

[1] "The Summæ, usually called Hengham Magna and Hengham Parva, of Ralph de Hengham, formerly Chief Justice of King Edward I. These writs, collected from ancient Codd. MSS., now appear for the first time. Published in London by the Body of Booksellers. 1616."

[2] In England the first three days of a term are called essoin-days, as three days are allowed for the appearance of suitors.—*Webster's Dict.*

[3] I give a specimen:

"SECUNDUS DIES. Secundo die placiti potest reus facere defaltam si velit ex consuetudine regni, dum tamen essoniatus fuerit primo die ordine præmonstato. Petens autem expectans quartam diem ipso die offerat se liti sic versus ipsum reum in hæc verba: 'Rchardus le Jay se profre vers William Huse de play de terre,'" etc. ["The Second Day. On the second day of the suit, the defendant is able to demand a view if he wishes, in accordance with the custom of the realm, provided that an essoin shall have been cast on the first day in the manner already shown. The plaintiff awaiting the fourth day, on that day appears in the suit against the defendant, addressing the latter in these words: 'Richard le Jay presents himself against William Huse,'" etc.]—*Hengham Magna*, ch. viii.

CHAP. II.

been of essential service to those who were to practise before the learned author.

De Hengham's despatch of judicial business.

He gave much satisfaction by his despatch of judicial business. The Judges of the King's Bench still travelled about with the sovereign, and mounted their tribunal wherever he might be. Thus Chief Justice Hengham led a wandering life, and was stationed from time to time at Winchester, Gloucester, York, and other cities. He was summoned to the parliament held at Shrewsbury, and joined in the inhuman sentence by which the Prince of Wales[1] was condemned to die as a traitor for gallantly defending the independence of his country.[2]

His concurrence in the Prince of Wales's inhuman sentence.

A.D. 1286.

The conquest and settlement of Wales being completed, Edward went abroad in order to make peace between Alphonso, King of Aragon, and Philip the Fair, who had lately succeeded Philip the Hardy on the throne of France. In such favor was Chief Justice de Hengham, that he was appointed Guardian of the kingdom, although this trust no longer was attached to his office;—the King declaring, like the Duke of Vienna,—

He is appointed Guardian of the kingdom.

> "You must know we have with special soul
> Elected him our absence to supply;
> Lent him our terror, drest him with our love,
> And given his deputation all the organs
> Of our own power."

The courtiers probably replied,—

> "If any in all England be of worth
> To undergo such ample grace and honor,
> It is *De Hengham*."

Yet he was supposed to have misconducted himself almost as much as "Lord Chief Justice Angelo."[3]

[1] David, Prince of Wales, brother of Llewellyn-ap-Gryffyth, was executed in 1284.—*Appl Encyc., article "Wales."*

[2] Rot. Parl., 6 Ed. I.

[3] The deputy of Vincentio, Duke of Vienna.—*Shakspeare's Measure for Measure*, Act i. sc. 1.

CHAP. II. A.D. 1289.

The King remained in Aquitaine nearly three years, and at last coming home rather unexpectedly, though not in disguise, found many disorders to have prevailed, both from open violence and from the corruption of justice. Tumults had broken out in many parts of England (it was said) from the rapacity of De Hengham; and robberies on the highways had become so frequent, that no one could travel from town to town without a strong escort. What was worse, it was alleged that the Lord Chief Justice, instead of vigorously and impartially enforcing the law, had himself taken bribes, and had connived at a wholesale trade in bribery carried on by his brother Judges.

He is charged with bribery.

The King, without inquiry, threw them all into prison, and summoned a parliament, before which they might be brought to trial. The kingdom was certainly found in a very disturbed state, but no specific act of misgovernment could be fastened on De Hengham. He and most of the other Judges, however, had taken money from the suitors, which was considered evidence of judicial corruption. They were put to answer at the bar of the House of Lords, and many witnesses were examined against them. All except two, John de Matingham and Elias de Beckingham, were found guilty, dismissed from their offices, and heavily fined. To disgrace them still more, their successors were required to swear, when entering on office, "that they would take no bribe, nor money, nor gift of any kind, from such persons as had suits depending before them,—except a breakfast." [1]

Convictions of the Judges

De Hengham was fined 7000 marks, and for some time labored under deep disgrace.[2] But the evidence

De Hengham is fined 7000 marks.

[1] 1 Parl Hist. 38.

[2] Tyrrell, in his History, sets down the fines as follows:

"Sir Ralph de Hengham, C. J. . . . . 7000 marks.
Sir John Loveton . . . . . 3000 "
Sir William Brompton . . . . . 3000 "

CHAP. II.

against him is not preserved, and there is reason to think that he suffered unjustly from popular prejudice and royal precipitancy. The salary allowed to him was so exceedingly small, that he could not subsist without fees, and, the amount of these not always being well defined, the taking of them was liable to be misconstrued into extortion or bribery. In after-times the current of public opinion ran strongly in his favor; and in Richard III.'s reign it was said "the only crime proved against him was, that, out of mere compassion, he had reduced a fine which he had set upon a poor man from 13*s.* 4*d.* to 6*s.* 8*d.*"[1] The tradition prevailing in the reign of Elizabeth was, that from the fine upon the Chief Justice himself a clock-house was built at Westminster, furnished with a clock to be heard in Westminster Hall.[2] Upon this story, however, Blackstone remarks, "that (whatever instances may be found of the private exertion of mechanical genius in constructing horological machines) clocks came not into common use till an hundred years afterwards, about the end of the 14th century."[3]

Opinions respecting him in after-times.

Tradition regarding the Westminster clock-house.

Sir Solomon Rochester	4000 marks.	Justice of Assize.
Sir Richard Boyland	4000 "	Justices Itinerant.
Sir Thomas Soddington	2000 "	Justices Itinerant.
Sir Walter Hopton	2000 "	Justices Itinerant.
Sir William Saham	3000 "	
Robert Lithbury	1000 "	Master of the Rolls.
Roger Leicester	1000 "	
Henry Bray	1000 "	Escheator and Judge for the Jews.

And, what is more remarkable, Adam de Stratton, a certain Clerk of the Court, was fined no less than 32,000 marks of new money, besides jewels and silver plate."

[1] Year-Book, M. 2 Richard III. 10.

[2] 3 Inst. 72; 4 Inst. 255.

[3] Com. vol. iii. 410. Lord Coke was more credulous, and thus palavers in his 4th Institute (f. 255): "Radulphus de Ingham, Chief Justice of England, a very poor man being fined before him at 13*s.* 4*d.*, in another tearm, moved with pity, caused the record to be rased and made 6*s.* 8*d.*; for which he (for his fine) made the clock (to be heard into Westminster Hall) and the clock-house in Westminster, which cost him 800 marks, and continueth unto this day, which sum was entered into the roll. And

CHAP. II.

The ex-Chief Justice bore his misfortunes with magnanimity, and gradually recovered the confidence both of the King and of the public. About eleven years afterwards we find him one of the Justices in Eyre for the general perambulation of the forests;[1] and near the conclusion of this reign he was employed to negotiate a treaty with the Scots, the King having failed in all his attempts to rob them of their independence.[2]

A.D. 1300.

A.D. 1305.

De Hengham is restored to public employment. 8th July, 1307.

His death. A.D. 1308.

At the accession of Edward II., De Hengham was again actually replaced on the Bench, being appointed Chief Justice of the Court of Common Pleas;[3] and he continued to fill this office with much credit till his death in the end of the following year. He was buried in St. Paul's Cathedral, where a marble monument was erected to his memory with the following rhyming epitaph:

> "Per versus patet hos, Anglorū qd jacet hîc flos;
> Legum qui tuta dictavit vera statuta,
> Ex Hengha dict' Radulph' vir benedict'."[4]

He may be truly considered the father of the Common-Law Judges. He was the first of them who never put on a coat of mail; and he has had a long line of illustrious successors contended with the ermined robe.

De Weyland, Chief Justice of the Common Pleas.

Of the contemporary Judge, DE WEYLAND, I find nothing related prior to his appointment of Chief Jus-

almost in the like case in the reign of Queen Elizabeth, Sir Robert Catlyn, Chief Justice of England, would have had Justice Southcote (one of his companions, justice of the King's Bench) to have altered a record, which the justice denyed to doe, and said openly in court 'that he meant not to build a clock house.'" See 3 Pryn. Rec. 401, 402; Dugd. Chron. Ser. 26; 1 Hale, P. C. 646, 647.

[1] Rot. in Furr. Lond., 29 Ed. I. m. 8.

[2] 1 Rot. Parl., 33 Ed. I.

[3] Dugd. Chron. Ser. 34.

[4] "These lines show that one who was an ornament to his country lies here; a most praiseworthy man, called Ralph de Hengham, who composed true and just statutes of the laws."

CHAP. II. tice of the Common Pleas. He likewise was esteemed a great lawyer, and he long gave high satisfaction as a magistrate. He several times acted as Justice Itinerant, and was zealous in detecting and punishing criminals.[1] But unfortunately, his salary being only sixty marks a year, he seems without scruple to have resorted to very irregular courses for the purpose of increasing his riches.

His conduct.

A.D. 1289. When arrested, on the King's return from Aquitaine, conscious of his guilt, he contrived to escape from custody, and, disguising himself in the habit of a monk, he was admitted among friars-minors in a convent at Bury St. Edmunds. However, being considered a heinous offender, sharp pursuit was made after him, and he was discovered wearing a cowl and a serge jerkin. According to the law of sanctuary, then prevailing, he was allowed to remain forty days unmolested. At the end of that time the convent was surrounded by a military force, and the entry of provisions into it was prohibited. Still it would have been deemed sacrilegious to take him from his asylum by violence; but the Lord Chief Justice preferred surrendering himself to perishing from want.[2] He was immediately conducted to the Tower of London. Rather than stand a trial, he petitioned for leave to abjure the realm; this favor was granted to him on condition that he should be attainted, and forfeit all his lands and chattels to the Crown.[3] Having walked barefoot and bareheaded, with a crucifix in his hand,

He absconds in disgrace.

He abjures the realm.

[1] Madd. Exch. ii. 66, c. l. k.

[2] One account says, "He took upon him the habit of a gray friar, but, being discovered by some of his servants, he was watched and guarded, and, after two months' siege, went out, forsaking his friar's coole, and was taken and sent to the Tower."—See 4 *Bloomfield's Norfolk*. 631.

[3] The property forfeited by him was said to have been worth upwards of 100 000 marks, or 70,000*l*., "an incredible sum," says Blackstone, "in those days, before paper credit was in use, and when the annual salary of a Chief Justice was only sixty marks."—*Com*. iii. 410.

CHAP. II. His punishment, and his infamy in after-times.

to the seaside at Dover, he was put on board a ship and deported to foreign parts. He is said to have died in exile, and he left a name often quoted as a reproach to the Bench till he was superseded by Jeffreys and Scroggs.[1]

De Thornton, Chief Justice of King's Bench. A.D. 1289.

The immediate successor of De Hengham as Chief Justice of the King's Bench was GILBERT DE THORNTON, who, I make no doubt, was a worthy man, but who could not have been very distinguished, for all that I can find respecting him is that he was allowed a salary of 40*l.* a year.[2] He was overshadowed, as sometimes happens, by a puisne who sat by him, and who

[1] Oliver St. John, in his speech in the Long Parliament against the Judges who decided in favor of ship-money, compares them with the worst of their predecessors: "Weyland, Chief Justice of the Common Pleas in the time of Edward I., was attainted of felony for taking bribes, and his lands and goods forfeited, as appears in the Pleas of Parliament, 18 Ed. I., and he was banished the kingdom as unworthy to live in that state against which he had so much offended."

Lingard says that "Weyland was found guilty of having first instigated his servants to commit murder, and then screened them from punishment" (vol. iii. 270); but he cites no authority to support so serious a charge; and the historian on this occasion does not display his usual accuracy, as he makes Weyland Chief Justice of the King's Bench, elevating De Hengham at the same time to the office of "Grand Justiciary."

In a MS. chronicle in the Bodleian Library, cited by Dugdale (Chron Ser. 1288), there is this entry: "Tho. de Weyland, *eo quod malè tractavit populum*, ab officio Justiciarii amotus, exhæredatus, et a terra exulatus."

Speed gives a melancholy account of the sufferings of the English, at this time, between the Jews and the Judges. "While the Jews by their cruel usuries had one way eaten up the people, the Justiciars, like another kind of Jews, had ruined them with delay in their suits, and enriched themselves with wicked convictions." He then relates with great glee "how Sir Thomas Weyland, being stripped of all his lands, goods, and jewels, which he had so wickedly got, was banished like the felons he had tried."—*Hist. of G. B.* p. 558.

George Jeffreys, 1648–1689, was Chief Justice of the King's Bench (1683) and Lord Chancellor (1685). Already notorious for his brutal behavior on the Bench, he branded his name by his cruelty in punishing the adherents of the Duke of Monmouth.—*Cassell's Biog. Dict.*

Sir William Scroggs, 1623–1683, was an English judge who became notorious for his subservience to the Court, and was removed from the Bench in 1681, after an abortive impeachment.—*Cassell's Biog. Dict.*

[2] "Gilbertus de Thornton, capitalis Justic. habet XL*l.* per annum, ad se sustentandum."—Lib. 18 Ed. I. m. 1.

CHAP. II. Roger le Brabaçon.

at last supplanted him. This was ROGER LE BRABAÇON,[1] who, from the part he took in settling the disputed claim to the crown of Scotland, is an historical character. His ancestor, celebrated as "the great warrior," had accompanied the Conqueror in the invasion of England, and was chief of one of those bands of mercenary soldiers then well known in Europe under the names (for what reason, historians are not agreed) of Routiers, Cottereaux, or *Brabançons*.[2] Being rewarded with large possessions in the counties of Surrey and Leicester, he founded a family which flourished several centuries in England, and is now represented in the male line by an Irish peer, the tenth Earl of Meath. The subject of the present sketch, fifth in descent from "the great warrior," changed the military ardor of his race for a desire to gain distinction as a lawyer. He was regularly trained in all the learning of "Essoins" and "Assizes,"[3] and he had extensive practice as an advocate under Lord Chief Justice de Hengham. On the sweeping removal of almost all the Judges in the year 1290, he was knighted, and appointed a Puisne Justice of the King's Bench, with a salary—which one would have thought must have been a very small addition to the profits of his heredi-

His ancestor "the great warrior."

His practice under De Hengham.

He is appointed Puisne Justice of King's Bench.

[1] The name is sometimes spelt Brabaçon, Brabançon, Brabason, and Brabanson.

[2] Hume, who designates them "desperate ruffians," says: "Troops of them were sometimes enlisted in the service of one prince or baron, sometimes in that of another; they often acted in an independent manner, and under leaders of their own. The greatest monarchs were not ashamed, on occasion, to have recourse to their assistance; and as their habits of war and depredation had given them experience, hardiness, and courage, they generally composed the most formidable part of those armies which decided the political quarrels of princes."—Vol. i. 438.

It was said that some of these bands, at least, had been originally formed in Brabant.—*Pike's Hist. of Crime in Eng.*, vol. i. p. 156.

[3] Assize in the old English law was the name applied to the trial of issues relating to the freehold, by a species of jury called recognitors, who were allowed to decide upon their own personal knowledge without the examination of witnesses.—*Appl. Encyc.*, vol. v. p. 430.

tary estates—of 33*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.* a year.[1] He proved a most admirable Judge; and, in addition to his professional knowledge, being well versed in historical lore, he was frequently referred to by the Government when negotiations were going on with foreign states.

He is employed by Edw. I. in the dispute about the crown of Scotland. A.D. 1291.

Edward I., arbitrator by mutual consent between the aspirants to the crown of Scotland, resolved to set up a claim for himself as liege lord of that kingdom, and Brabaçon was employed, by searching ancient records, to find out any plausible grounds on which the claim could be supported. He accordingly travelled diligently both through the Saxon and Norman period, and—by making the most of military advantages obtained by Kings of England over Kings of Scotland, by misrepresenting the nature of homage which the latter had paid to the former for possessions held by them in England, and by blazoning the acknowledgment of feudal subjection extorted by Henry II. from William the Lion when that prince was in captivity, without mentioning the express renunciation of it by Richard I.—he made out a case which gave high delight to the English Court. Edward immediately summoned a parliament to meet at Norham, on the south bank of the Tweed, marched thither at the head of a considerable military force, and carried Mr. Justice Brabaçon along with him as the exponent and defender of his new *suzeraineté*. The Scottish nobles being induced to cross the river and to assemble in the presence of Edward, under pretence that he was to act only as arbitrator, Sir Roger by his order addressed them in French (the language then spoken by the upper classes both in Scotland and England), disclosing the alarming pretensions about to be set up. The following is said to be the substance of this speech:

He makes out a case satisfactory to the English Court.

11th May.

[1] Dugd. Chr. Ser. A.D. 1290.

CHAP. II.

His address to the Scottish Parliament.

"Lords, Thanes, and Knights of Scotland,—The reason of our supreme Lord coming here, and of your being summoned together, is, that he, in his fatherly kindness for all in any way depending upon him, taking notice of the confusion in which your nation has been since the death of Alexander your last King, and from the affection he bears for that kingdom, and all the inhabitants thereof, whose protection is well known to belong to him, has resolved, for the more effectually doing right to all who claim the kingdom, and for the preservation of the peace thereof, to show you his *superiority* and *direct dominion*[1] over the same out of divers chronicles and ancient muniments preserved in several monasteries in England."

He then appears to have entered into his proofs, and he thus concluded:

Its conclusion.

"The mighty Edward, to whom you have appealed, will do justice to all without any usurpation or diminution of your liberties; but he demands your assent to, and recognition of, his said *superiority* and *direct dominion*."

A public notary and witnesses were in attendance, and in their presence the assumed vassals were formally called upon to do homage to Edward as their *suzerain*, of which a record was to be made for a lasting memorial. The Scots saw too late the imprudence of which they had been guilty in choosing such a crafty and powerful arbitrator. For the present they refused the required recognition, saying that "they must have time for deliberation, and to consult the absent members of their different orders." Brabaçon, after advising with the King, consented that they should have time until the following day, and no longer. They insisted on further delay, and showed such a determined spirit of resistance, that their request was granted; and the 1st day of June following was fixed for the ceremony of the recognition. Bra-

Its effect on the Scots.

[1] Here is the well-known feudal distinction between the *dominium directum*, which belongs to the lord, and the *dominium utile*, which belongs to the feudatory.

baçon allowed them to depart; and a copy of his paper, containing the proofs of the alleged *superiority* and *direct dominion* of the English Kings over Scotland, was put into their hands. He then returned to the south, where his presence was required to assist in the administration of justice, leaving the Chancellor Burnel[1] to complete the transaction. Although the body of the Scottish nobles, as well as the body of the Scottish people, would resolutely have withstood the demand, the competitors for the throne, in the hopes of gaining Edward's favor, successively acknowledged him as their liege lord, and their example was followed by almost the whole of those who then constituted the Scottish Parliament. But this national disgrace was effaced by the glorious exploits of Wallace[2] and Bruce;[3] and Brabaçon lived to see the fugitives from Bannockburn, and to hear from them of the saddest overthrow ever sustained by England since Harold and his brave army were mowed down at Hastings.

CHAP. II.

He returns to the south.

His address finally has the desired effect.

When judgment had been given in favor of Baliol, Brabaçon was still employed to assist in the plan which had been formed to bring Scotland into entire subjection. There being a meeting at Newcastle of the nobles of the two nations, when the feudatory King did homage to his liege lord, complaint was

A.D. 1293.

He assists in subjecting Scotland to English jurisdiction.

[1] Robert Burnel, Bishop of Bath and Wells, was born near Shrewsbury, descended from a knightly family. He became Chancellor in 1274, died 1292.—*Dict. of National Biog.*

[2] Sir William Wallace, a Scottish patriot, was born about 1270. He won the great battle of Stirling Bridge in 1297 against the English, and in the absence of the lawful monarch (John, who was in the Tower of London) was declared Guardian of Scotland. In 1298 he was defeated in the battle of Falkirk. For several years afterwards he carried on a guerilla warfare. In 1304 he was declared an outlaw. Large rewards were offered by Edward for his arrest, and he was finally betrayed, caught, condemned to death, and executed at Smithfield, 1305.—*Dict. of National Biog.*

[3] Robert Bruce, 1274–1329, King of Scotland—grandson of that Bruce who had claimed the throne. In 1314, Edward II. marched against him, but was totally routed at Bannockburn.—*Cassell's Biog. Dict.*

CHAP. II. made by Roger Bartholomew, a burgess of Berwick, that certain English judges had been deputed to exercise jurisdiction on the north bank of the Tweed. Edward referred the matter to Brabaçon and other commissioners, commanding them to do justice according to the laws and customs of his kingdom. A petition was then presented to them on behalf of the King of Scotland, setting forth Edward's promise to observe the laws and customs of that kingdom, and that pleas of things done there should not be drawn to examination elsewhere. Brabaçon is reported thus to have answered:

His answer to the petition on behalf of the King of Scotland.

"This petition is unnecessary, and not to the purpose; for it is manifest, and ought to be admitted by all the prelates and barons, and commonalty of Scotland, that the King, our master, has performed all his promises to them. As to the conduct of his Judges, lately deputed by him as SUPERIOR and DIRECT LORD of that kingdom, they only represent his person; he will take care that they do not transgress his authority, and on appeal to him he will see that right is done. If the King had made any temporary promises when the Scottish throne was vacant, in derogation of his just *suzeraineté*, by such promises he would not have been restrained or bound."

Encouraged by this language, Macduff, the Earl of Fife, entered an appeal in the English House of Lords against the King of Scotland; and, on the advice of Brabaçon and the other Judges, it was resolved that the respondent must stand at the bar as a vassal, and that, for his contumacy, three of his principal castles should be seised into the King's hands.[1]

His advice as to the King of Scotland.

Although historians who mention these events designate Brabaçon as "Grand Justiciary," it is quite certain that, as yet, he was merely a Puisne Judge; but there was a strong desire to reward him for his services, and, at last, an opportune vacancy arising, he was created Chief Justice of the King's Bench.

He is made Chief Justice of the King's Bench. A.D. 1296.

[1] Rym. ii. 605, 615, 635. Rot. Scot. i. 11, 16.

CHAP. II.

His performances receive the general commendation of chroniclers.

Of his performances in this capacity we know nothing, except by the general commendation of chroniclers; for the Year-Books,[1] giving a regular account of judicial decisions, do not begin till the following reign. The Court of King's Bench, still following the person of the sovereign, was, on one occasion, in Brabaçon's time, held in Roxburgh Castle, then in the possession of the English; but we have no report of any of the proceedings which came before it.[2]

A.D. 1301.

He was still employed in a political capacity; and in the parliament held at Lincoln[3] in the year 1301, he thus declared the reasons for calling it, and pressed for a supply:

His speech at the opening of the English Parliament.

"My lords, knights, citizens, and burgesses: The King has ordered me to let you understand that whatever he hath done in his late wars hath been carried on by your joint consent and allowance. But of late time, by reason of the sudden incursion of the Scots and the malicious contrivance of the French, his Highness has been put to such extraordinary expenses, that, being quite destitute of money, he therefore desires a pecuniary aid from you; and trusts that you will not offer him less than one fifteenth of your temporal estates."

"Hereupon," says the reporter, "the nobility and commons began to murmur,[4] and complained grievously against the King's menial servants and officers for several violent depredations and extortions." However, the wily Chief Justice soothed them by making the King go through the ceremony of confirm-

His object in making it realized.

[1] The Year-Books, which were the reports of leading cases, were begun in the reign of Edward I. The pleadings in court had been in French since the time of the Conquest, and the Year-Books were written in French.—*Pike's Hist. of Crime*, vol. i. p. 312.

[2] Hale, Hist. C. L. 200.

[3] Lincoln was accounted the fourth city in the realm at the time of the Norman Conquest, and William I. selected it as the site of one of his castles.—*Baedeker's Gt. Britain*, p. 426.

[4] We are not told whether they exclaimed "Oh! oh!" or what was the prevailing fashion of interjectional dissent. For centuries after, parliamentary cheering was not by "Hear! hear!" but by "Amen! amen!"

CHAP. II. ing the Great Charter and the Charter of Forests, and he obtained the supply he had asked for.[1]—We read nothing more that is very memorable of him during the present reign.[2]

Edward II. reappoints him Chief Justice. 8th July, 1307.

On the accession of Edward II. Brabaçon was reappointed Chief Justice of the King's Bench,[3] and he continued very creditably to fill the office for eight years longer. He was fated to deplore the fruitless result of all his efforts to reduce Scotland to the English yoke,—Robert Bruce being now the independent sovereign of that kingdom, after humbling the pride of English chivalry.

He lives to see the fruitless result of his efforts to reduce Scotland.

He resigns his gown. A.D. 1316.

At last, the infirmities of age unfitting Brabaçon for the discharge of his judicial duties, he resigned his gown; but, to do him honor, he was sworn a member of the Privy Council, and he continued to be treated with the highest respect by all ranks till his death, which happened about two years afterwards.—He was married to Beatrice, daughter of John de Sproxton, but had by her only one child, a son, who died an infant. The Earls of Meath are descended from his brother Matthew.[4]

He becomes a Privy Councillor. His death.

Sir William Howard, qu. whether a Chief Justice?

Collins, in his "Peerage," which, generally speaking, is a book of authority, here introduces Sir William Howard as "Chief Justice of England." Although he is so described under his portrait in the window of the church at Long Melford, in Suffolk,[5] I doubt whether he ever reached this dignity; but, for the honor of the

[1] 1 Parl. Hist. 46.

[2] See 3 Tyrrell, 18.

[3] He was sworn in before Walter Reginald, the Deputy Treasurer.—*Dugd. Chr. Ser.*

[4] His descendant, Sir William le Brabaçon, was Vice-Treasurer of Ireland, and died in 1552. An Irish earldom was conferred on the family in 1627, and in 1831 the present Earl was created a peer of the United Kingdom by the title of Baron Chaworth.—See Grandeur of the Law, p. 182.

[5] He appears there in his judge's robes, with these words, in ancient black-letter characters: "Pray for the good state of William Haward, Chef Justis of England."—*Dugd. Or. Jur.* p. 100.

law, I cannot refuse to introduce him from whom flowed all the blood of all the Howards. CHAP. II.

The name was originally spelt Haward, and must have been of Saxon origin. His pedigree does not extend higher than his grandfather, who was a private gentleman, of small estate, near Lynn, in Norfolk. His father likewise was contented to lead a quiet life in the country,—intermarrying with the daughter of a respectable neighbor, and neither increasing nor diminishing his patrimonial property. But young William, hearing of the great fame and riches acquired by De Hengham and other lawyers, early felt an ambition to be inscribed in their order, and was sent to study the law in London. There is no certain account of his success at the bar, but we know that in the 21st Edward I. he was assigned, with seven others, to take the assizes throughout the realm, in aid of the Justices of both benches. The district to which he was appointed comprehended the counties which now constitute the Northern circuit (except Durham), with Nottingham and Derby, now belonging to the Midland. Four years after, he was appointed one of the Judges of the Common Pleas; and on the accession of Edward II. he was again sworn into the same office.[1] Our judicial records do not mention any higher distinction acquired by him; and I suspect that the chiefship was only conferred upon him by flatterers of his descendants when they were rising to greatness. Nevertheless, he was certainly a very able and upright magistrate; and, from his profits as a barrister, and his official fees (his salary was little more than 30*l.* a year), he bought large possessions at Terrington, Wiggenhall, East Winch, and Melford, in Suffolk. These were long the principal inheritance of the Howards, who, for several generations, did not rise higher than being

He studies law in London. A.D. 1293.

A.D. 1297. He is twice appointed a Judge of the Common Pleas.

The judicial records mention no higher distinction.

[1] Dugd. Chron. Ser.

CHAP. II. gentlemen of the bedchamber, sheriffs of Norfolk and Suffolk, governors of Norwich Castle, and commissioners of array,—without being ennobled. At last, Sir Robert Howard, descended from the Judge's eldest son, married the heiress of Thomas Mowbray, Duke of Norfolk; and Richard III. conferred on John, the son of this marriage (the famous "Jockey of Norfolk," who fought and fell at Bosworth), the dukedom still enjoyed, after repeated attainders, by the eldest representative of the family; while many earldoms and baronies have been conferred on its junior branches.

The rise of his descendants to greatness.

The next authentic Chief Justice of the King's Bench was HENRY LE SCROPE, the first who, by success in the law, founded a family, and was himself ennobled. Many of ancient lineage, like the Grand Justiciars, had held judicial offices; and several, like Sir William Howard, raised themselves to eminence, and left descendants afterwards enrolled in the peerage. Henry le Scrope, of an obscure origin, from eminence in the legal profession sat in the House of Lords as a Baron; and great chancellors and warriors were proud to trace him in their pedigree. He was the son of William le Scrope, a small 'squire, who lived at Bolton, in Yorkshire. Having studied at Oxford, he was transplanted, when very young, to London, to study the law in one of the societies then forming, which were afterwards denominated "Inns of Court." He was much distinguished for industry and ability, and, in the end of the reign of Edward I., gained great wealth and reputation as an advocate. In the second year of Edward II., he was made a Puisne Judge of the Common Pleas; and at the end of six years, while he still continued in the same office, he was summoned to parliament not merely to *advise*, like the other judges, but to *assent* to, the measures to be brought forward. It is a curious circumstance, that, although he took his seat

Henry le Scrope.

Studied law.

Made a Puisne Judge of Common Pleas. A.D. 1314.

Summoned to the House of Lords.

as a member of the House, he did not receive a similar summons to any subsequent parliament.[1] CHAP. II.

Two years afterwards, he was made Chief Justice of the King's Bench; and he held the office, with high reputation, for ten years, when he was removed from it in the convulsions which marked the conclusion of this reign. But he was restored to the Bench when Edward III. had established his authority, as sovereign, by putting down his mother and her paramour;[2] and he died in 1336, full of days and of honors. A.D. 1316. Chief Justice of the King's Bench. A.D. 1330. His death. A.D. 1336.

From him were descended the Lords Scrope of Bolton; and his younger son, after being a great warrior, becoming Lord Chancellor, established another branch of this illustrious house.[3]

On his first removal he was succeeded by HENRY DE STAUNTON, who filled a greater variety of judicial offices than any lawyer I read of in the annals of Westminster Hall. This extraordinary man was a younger brother of a respectable family that had long been seated in the county of Nottingham. He seems, when quite a boy, to have conceived a passion for the law; and, to gratify him, he was sent to an inn of court, without having been at any university. His steadiness in juridical studies was equal to his ardor; and, while yet a young man, having served his "apprenticeship" with great credit, he reached the dignity of sergeant, and Henry de Staunton, Chief Justice of the King's Bench.

[1] The doctrine that "summons and sitting constitute an hereditary peerage," is now fully established, and has often been acted upon; but in early times the King seems to have exercised the prerogative of summoning any knight to sit in the House of Lords for a single parliament, without incurring the obligation of again summoning him, or of summoning his descendants after his death.

[2] Roger Mortimer, Earl of March, the favorite of Isabella, wife of Edward II., whom he assisted to overthrow the Despencers; he afterwards ruled England, but was arrested by Edward III. for the murder of his father, and hanged at Tyburn. Isabella was sent for the rest of her life into confinement at Castle Rising.

[3] See Lives of the Chancellors, vol. i. ch. xvi.; Dugd. Bar. and Ch. Ser.

CHAP. II.

was in great and profitable practice in all the courts. For nine years he was a Puisne Judge of the Common Pleas—from 1306 to 1315. He was then transferred to the Exchequer, being first a Puisne Baron, and then Chancellor of the Exchequer. On the 1st of June, 1323, he was made Chief Justice of the King's Bench, retaining his former place, which he was to execute by deputy. In a few months, however, he ceased to be a pluralist, and the Chancellorship of the Exchequer was given to the Bishop of Exeter.[1]

Puisne Judge of the Common Pleas.

Chancellor of the Exchequer.

1st June, 1323. Chief Justice of the King's Bench.

De Staunton remained Chief Justice of the King's Bench little more than a year, when he was made Chief Justice of the Common Pleas, which was the more profitable, and for several centuries afterwards

A.D. 1324. Chief Justice of the Common Pleas.

[1] "Rex omnibus ad quos, etc. Sciatis quod cum dilectus Clericus et fidelis noster *Henricus* de Staunton Cancellarii Scaccarii nostri de mandato nostro intendat officio Capitalis Justiciarii nostri ad placita coram nobis tenenda per quod dicto officio Cancellarii ad præsens intendere non potest Custodiam Sigilli nostri Scaccarii prædicti Venerabili Patri W. Exoniensi Episcopo Thesaurario nostro commisimus," etc. "Teste Rege apud Skergill xxvij die Septembris. Per breve de privato Sigillo." ["The King to all whom, etc. Know that when our beloved and faithful clerk Henry de Staunton, Chancellor of the Exchequer, by our command entered upon the duties of Chief Justice of the King's Bench, as he was unable to attend to the duties of Chancellor also, we committed the keeping of our Seal to the revered father, Bishop of Exeter," etc. "Under the King's Seal at Skergill, September 27."]—Pat. 17, Ed. 2, p. 1, m. 9, et iterum, m. 16.

"Dominus Rex mandavit W. Exoniensi Episcopo Thesaurario per breve suum de privato sigillo suo cujus data est apud Skergill xvij die Septembris hoc anno quod quia *Hervicus* de Staunton Capitalis Justiciarius de Banco Regis, qui habuit custodiam Sigilli de Cancellar[ia] hujus Scaccarii de cætero ad custodiam officii Cancellar[ii] intendere non potest," etc. ["Our Lord the King placed the Bishop of Exeter in charge of the Exchequer by writ of his private seal at Skergill, September 17 of this year, because Hervey de Staunton, Chief Justice of the King's Bench, who had been Chancellor of the Exchequer and held the Great Seal, was unable to perform the duties of this office longer," etc.]—Mich. Commun., 17 Ed. 2; Rot. i. 6. In these two records it is observable, that in the one the Chancellor of the Exchequer is called *Henry*, and in the other *Hervey* de Staunton; but, from the context, it is clear that the names Henry and Hervey are applied to the same individual. I may also add, that there is a variance in the date of the appointment of the Bishop of Exeter: the one record giving the 27th of Sept., and the other the 17th, although it is evident that the one refers to the other.

CHAP. II.

was reckoned the more eligible, appointment.[1] Finally, he concluded his career as Lord Chief Baron of the Exchequer—an office which I think he must have accepted as an honorable retreat in his old age, as, although attended with little labor, it has always been the lowest chiefship, both in emolument and rank. This he held till his death.[2]

Lord Chief Baron of the Exchequer.

His death.

He left no descendants; and, having felt the want of early education, he bequeathed his fortune to the foundation of a college[3] in the University of Cambridge.

His fortune bequeathed to Cambridge.

The following metrical history of him is given by the poet Robert Cade,[4]—duly celebrating his early legal proficiency, but unaccountably omitting his highest official preferments:

Cade's ballad on Chief Justice Staunton.

"Sir William Staunton, Knight, was next,
Dame Athelin was his wife,
Sir Geoffrey Staunton, Knight, their heire,
Both voide of vice and strife.

"And Sir Henrie his brother was,
Who gave himselfe to learne,
That when he came unto man's state,
He could the Lawes discerne.

"And in the same went forward still,
And profited muche, I know,
At Ynnes of Courte a Counsailer
And Serjeant in the Lawe.

[1] "Memorandum quod die Jovis in Vigilia sancti Jacobi Apostoli, anno regis hujus vicesimo incipiente, Hervicus de Staunton præstitit sacramentum, coram Venerabilibus patribus W. Archiespiscopo Eboracensi Angliæ Primate thesaurario W. Exoniensi Episcopo Magistro R. de Baldock Cancellario Regis, et baronibus de Scaccario et justiciarii de communi banco de bene et fideliter se habendo in officiis capitalis justiciarii de banco prout moris est." And at the same time Robert de Ayleston was sworn Chancellor of the Exchequer.—*Madd. Exch.*

[2] Dug. Chr. Ser.; Beatson.

[3] He was buried in St. Michael's Church, Cambridge, where he founded the house of that name (now incorporated into Trinity College, where his name is introduced into the grace after dinner), and endowed it with the manor of Barenton and the advowson of the church there.—*Foss's Lives of the Judges of Eng.*

[4] See Thoroton's History of Nottinghamshire.

CHAP. II.

"And in processe of tyme indeede,
A Judge he came to bee
In the Common Benche at Westminster
Such was his highe degree.

"A Baron wise and of great wealthe,
Who built for Scholers gaine,
Sainet Michaels house in Cambridge Towne,
Good learninge to attaine;

"Which deed was done in the eighteenth yeare
Of Second Edwards King,
One thousande three hundred twenty foure,
For whom they praye and singe.

'In which said house the Stauntons may
Send Students to be placed,
The Founder hath confirmed the same
It cannot be defaced.

"This Lord Baron no yssue had,
We cannot remember his wife,
Nor where his body tombed was
When death had cut off life."[1]

Sir Robert Parnyng. A.D. 1340. A.D. 1341.

There was no other Chief Justice of much note till SIR ROBERT PARNYNG, who, for his great learning and ability, was placed in the "marble chair," and whom I have already commemorated in the LIVES OF THE CHANCELLORS.[2]

Sir William Scot.

After an obscure Chief Justice, called SIR WILLIAM SCOT,[3] came a very eminent but very unprincipled

[1] He is frequently mentioned in contemporary records, and must have been a very considerable person in his day, although now fallen into such obscurity.

In the 8th Edward II., Hervicus de Staunton and others are directed to assess and levy a tallage on the City of London: 1 Rot. Parl. 449. And in 1320, 14 Edward II., reference is made to inquests taken before Johannes de Insula, Hervicus de Staunton, and Adam de Lymbergh, "quæ sunt in Sccio:" 1 Rot. Parl. 372a.

In 1325, 19 Edward II., it appears that Henry le Swan was tried at the Eire of London "darreine passe devant Sire *Henr* de Staunton':" Rot. Parl. And in the Patent Roll, 3 Edward III., certain proceedings are referred to in an Inspeximus, as having taken place in the 17th Edward II., "devant Sire Henry de Staunton et ses compaignons justices a les plez le dit vie' piere tenir assignez:" 2 Rot. Parl. 427.

[2] Vol. i. ch. xiv.

[3] Dug. Chr. Ser. 44.

CHAP. II.

Sir William de Thorpe.

one, SIR WILLIAM DE THORPE, who was at first supposed to be an ornament to his profession, but who brought deep disgrace upon it. From an obscure origin he rose to power and wealth, without being a churchman,—a very unusual occurrence in those days; but the law was becoming, what it has since continued, one of the ties by which the middling and lower ranks in England are bound up with the aristocracy,—preventing the separation of the community into the two castes of *noble* and *roturier*, which has been so injurious in the continental states.

His professional progress.

Having with difficulty obtained an adequate education, soon after his call to the bar he got business and favor by singular zeal for his clients and subserviency to his patrons. While of less than ten years' standing as a barrister, he received the high rank of King's Sergeant, and the following year he was made Attorney-General,[1] and was knighted. He remained in this office five years, during which time he had the good fortune to gain the personal confidence of Edward III., who was in the habit of consulting him respecting the most expedient manner of managing the House of Commons, and obtaining supplies to carry on the French war. In 1347 he was elevated to the office of Chief Justice of the King's Bench, and he was for a time the King's principal adviser. On the premature death of Parnyng, the Great Seal was put into the hands of men of little experience in business, and Lord Chief Justice Thorpe was intrusted with the domestic government of the kingdom.

A.D. 1342. King's Sergeant.

A.D. 1343. Attorney-General.

He is made Chief Justice of the King's Bench and intrusted with the domestic government.

At the parliament held on the King's return after the glorious battle of Cresci,[2] Sir William Thorpe was

A.D. 1348.

[1] The chief law officer of England, who is appointed to represent the Crown in all matters affecting its interests. In modern times the Prince of Wales is the only person besides the Crown who appoints an Attorney-General.—*Low and Pulling's Dict. of Eng. Hist.*

[2] The battle of Cresci, 1346, was won by the English against Philip of Valois, King of France.—*Green's Hist. of Eng. People*, vol. i. p. 393.

CHAP. II. employed, in place of the Chancellor, to declare the causes of the summons; and he very dextrously flattered the Commons by telling them that "it was the King's special desire to be advised by them respecting the mode of carrying on the war, and, next, how the peace of the nation might be better kept."[1]

His addresses to the two Houses of Parliament.

The answer of the Commons.

After grave deliberation, the Commons answered that "they were not able to advise any thing respecting the war, and, therefore, desired to be excused as to that point,—being willing to confirm and establish whatever the council and the nobles should determine thereupon. But as to better keeping the peace of the nation, their advice was, that in every county there should be six persons, of whom two to be the greatest men in it, two knights, and two men of the law, or more or less as need should be, and they to have power and commission out of Chancery[2] to hear and determine matters concerning the peace. And because they had been so long in parliament, to their great cost and damage,[3] they might have a speedy answer to their petitions, in order to get soon back to their own homes." On Thorpe's suggestion, the measure so recommended was promised, and hence our Justices of the Peace and Courts of Quarter Sessions.[4] But, there being still an unwillingness to vote an adequate supply, parliament was dissolved, and great pains were used in influencing the elections for the new one which was called.

Justices of the Peace and Courts of Quarter Sessions.

A new parliament called.

A.D. 1349. When it met, Chief Justice Thorpe again made the

[1] During the Plantagenet reigns, there are frequent instances of the King consulting the Commons on questions of foreign, as well as domestic, policy.

[2] Chancery is the highest court of justice next to the parliament, consisting of two distinct tribunals; one *ordinary*, being a court of common law; the other *extraordinary*, or a court of equity.—*Webster's Dict.*

[3] The session had lasted above a fortnight.

[4] Quarter Sessions is a court held once in every quarter, by two Justices of the Peace, one of whom is of the quorum, for the trial of small felonies and misdemeanors.—*Webster's Dict.*

speech by which the session was opened, and tried to rouse the indignation of the Commons by asserting that "the French had broken the conditions of the truce lately granted to them at Calais, and were preparing a puissant army wherewith to invade the realm." He therefore urged that "they should be armed betimes against the worst which might happen, and see that this war, which was undertaken by the advice and consent of the parliament, might have a prosperous ending." A liberal supply was granted, and the Chief Justice speedily, in the King's name, pronounced the prorogation.[1] CHAP. II. Effect of Thorpe's speech before it.

Although he now seemed so powerful and prosperous, disgrace and ruin were hanging over him. Parliament again met in the following year, but, instead of opening it with royal pomp in the King's name, he stood at the bar of the House of Lords as a criminal. He had been detected in several gross acts of bribery, for which he was now impeached. The record of his trial is not preserved, and we have no particulars of the offences laid to his charge. The common tradition is, that sentence of death was actually passed upon him; and Oliver St. John,[2] in his famous speech on ship-money, in the reign of Charles I., says,—"Sir William Thorpe, Chief Justice of the King's Bench in Edward III.'s time, having of five persons received five several bribes, which in all amounted to 100*l.*, was for this alone adjudged to be hanged, and all his lands and goods forfeited." I cannot help thinking, however, that this is an exaggeration; no treason was alleged against the Chief Justice, and, as mere bribery A.D. 1350. He is charged with bribery. He is found guilty: qu. whether he was sentenced to death?

[1] 1 Parl. Hist. 115–118.

[2] St. John, Oliver (*d.* 1673), English lawyer, defended Hampden in the "Ship-Money" case, was a prominent member of the Long Parliament, and one of the commissioners at Uxbridge. He was made a Justice of the Common Pleas in 1648, and was mainly responsible both for the Navigation Act and the draining of the Bedford Level.—*Cassell's Biog. Dict.*

CHAP. II.

could not be construed into a capital offence by any known law, he could not have received such a sentence, unless under an act of attainder; and there is no ascertained instance of such a proceeding before the reign of Henry VIII. The entry in the Close Roll, recording the appointment of a new Chief Justice, merely says, "Will. de Thorpe, Capitalis Justic. pro quibusdam maleficiis, etc., omnia bona terras, etc., forisfecit."[1] It is possible that a capital sentence might have been pronounced; and St. John, pretending to have seen the original record, says, "The reason of this record is entered in the Roll in these words, 'Quia prædictus Willielmus Thorpe, qui sacramentum domini regis erga populum suum habuit ad custodiendum, fregit malitiose, false et rebelliter, quantum in ipso fuit,' because that he as much as in him lay had broken the King's oath unto the people which the King had intrusted him withal. The next year, 25 Edward III., it was debated in parliament whether this judgment was legal *et nullo contradicente*,[2] it was declared to be just and according to the law; and that the same judgment may be given in time to come upon the like occasion. This case is in point that it is death for any judge wittingly to break his oath or any part of it." Yet I suspect that the patriotic orator, inveighing against the Judges who had, contrary to their oaths, decided for the legality of ship-money, invented the capital sentence upon Thorpe, whose guilt he represents as comparatively venial.[3] The delinquent certainly did not suffer the last penalty of

The entry in the Close Roll concerning Thorpe.

Oliver St. John's reference to Thorpe's guilt and possible capital sentence.

[1] "William de Thorpe, Chief Justiciar, on account of certain offences, forfeited all of his goods, lands, etc."—Claus. 24 Ed. III., in dorso, m. 4.

[2] "No one opposing."

[3] 3 St. Tr. 1273. The improbability of such a resolution being come to in the 25th Ed. III. is very great indeed, when we consider that in this very year Parliament passed the famous Statute of Treasons (25 Ed. III. st. 5, c. 2), by which the subject is so anxiously guarded against such vague charges.

CHAP. II.

the law; but, being degraded from his office, and stripped of all his ill-gotten wealth, he languished a few years, and died a natural death.[1]

Thorpe's punishment and death.

He was succeeded by Sir William Shareshall, a Puisne Judge of the Common Pleas,[2] of whom little is known except that he was employed to make the opening speech to the two Houses at the commencement of three successive parliaments.

26th Oct. 1351. Sir William Shareshall, Chief Justice of the King's Bench.

On the first occasion he enlarged upon the internal state of the country, and upon his recommendation were passed the famous "Statute of Treasons,"[3] defining crimes against the state, and the "Statute of Laborers,"[4] showing our ancestors to have been then under the delusion, now so fatal to our continental neighbors, that the "organization of labor" is a fit subject for legislation.

His addresses to both Houses of Parliament. March, 1352.

In the following year, the war with France being renewed, the Chief Justice thus tried to excite indignation and to obtain supplies:

Jan. 1353.

"You are assembled to consider the title of our Lord the King to the crown of France. You know that Philip de

[1] We are not told the amount of his salary as Chief Justice, but Dugdale says, "Sir William Thorpe, 21 Ed. I., then Chief Justice of the King's Bench, was allowed out of the King's wardrobe at the Feast of All Saints, for his Winter Robes, half a cloth colour curt, three furs of white budg, and one hood of the same budg: and for his livery at Christmas, half a cloth likewise colour curt, one hood containing xxxii bellies of minever helf pur, one fur of minever containing seven tires, and two furs of silk, each of seven tires."—*Or. Jur.* p. 98.

[2] Dug. Cher. Ser.

[3] The Statute of Treasons, 1352, declared that no man was to be held guilty of treason who had not compassed the death of the King, Queen, or their eldest son; violated the Queen, the King's eldest daughter, if unmarried, or the wife of his eldest son; levied war against the King in his kingdom, or adhered to his enemies; counterfeited the Great Seal or brought false money into the land; or slain his Chancellor, Treasurer, or Judges, "being in their place doing their offices."—*Low and Pulling's Dict. of Eng. Hist.*

[4] First enacted in 1349. It forbade men to receive, or their masters to offer, higher wages than before the Black Death; laborers were to be compelled to work, and were forbidden to leave their employment without agreeing with their masters.—*Low and Pulling's Dict. of Eng. Hist.*

CHAP. II. His address to the Commons regarding the war with France.

Valois usurped it all his life; and not only so, but testified his enmity to England by stirring up war against our King in Gascony, and other dominions belonging to him, seizing upon his rights and possessions, and doing all possible mischief to him both by sea and land. In former parliaments this matter has been propounded to you on behalf of the King, and your advice requested what was best to be done. After good deliberation you declared that you knew no other course than that the King, procuring allies, should go against his adversary by main force, and to enable him to do this you promised to aid him with body and goods. Whereupon he made alliances with several foreign princes and powers, and by the help of the good people of England, and the blessing of God, he gained great victories, yet without being able to obtain a lasting peace. The King has assented to truces, but his adversary deceitfully broke these, actuated by implacable malice against him and his friends. Now, after Philip's decease, John, his son, has wrongfully possessed himself of the kingdom of France, has broken the existing truce both in Gascony and Brittany, and has sent to Scotland to renew the ancient alliance with that country, tending to the utter subversion and destruction of the people of England. Wherefore the King, much thanking you, his faithful Commons, for the aids you have already given him, and for the good will he has always found in you, now submits the matter to your consideration, and prays that you will take time to consult about it, and that at sunrise on the morrow you will come to the Painted Chamber[1] to hear if the King will say anything further to you, and to show him your grievances, so that relief may be given to them at this meeting. Further, I charge the Commons, in the King's name, to shorten your stay in town,

The King's request.

The Painted Chamber.

[1] The walls of the Painted Chamber were pointed out by tradition as those of the bedroom where the Confessor died. It was first called St. Edward's Chamber, and took its second name from the frescos (arranged round the walls in bands like the Bayeux tapestry) with which it was adorned by Henry III., and which were chiefly illustrative of the history of the Maccabees and the legendary life of the Confessor. Here conferences between the Lords and Commons took place; here the High Court of Justice sat for the trial of Charles I.; and here the King's death-warrant was signed in the disgraceful scene when Cromwell and Henry Marten inked each other's faces. It was here also that Cromwell's daughter Elizabeth Claypole lay in state, and, long afterwards, Lord Chatham and William Pitt.—*Hare's Walks in London, article "Westminster."*

and that, for the quicker despatch of business, you immediately make choice of twenty-four or thirty persons out of your whole number, and he will send a number of Lords to confer with them about the business of the nation."

Favorable reception.

This harangue of the Chief Justice was very favorably received, and the Commons granted to the King three tenths and three fifteenths, "in order to supply his great necessities."[1]

Shareshall's final political performance.

Chief Justice Shareshall's final political performance was in April, 1355, when, on the first day of the parliament, to induce the Commons vigorously to carry on the war, he expressed the King's earnest desire to make peace on honorable terms; and he asked them "if they would agree to a peace, if it could be had by treaty?" They answered, "that what should be agreeable to the King and his council, should be agreeable to them." Alarmed by their pacific tone, and trusting to their anti-Gallican prejudices, he ventured to ask them "if they consented to a perpetual peace, if it might be had?" when, to his great annoyance, "they all unanimously cried out 'Yea! yea!'" However, a supply was obtained; and, the French King becoming insolent from the belief that Edward's subjects, tired of the war, would desert him, the immortal victory of Poictiers followed.

Victory of Poictiers. Sept. 18, 1356.

A.D. 1358. Shareshall succeeded by Sir Henry Green.

In 1358 the office of Chief Justice of the King's Bench was again vacant; but whether by the death or resignation of Shareshall, I have been unable to ascertain. He was succeeded by SIR HENRY GREEN, of whom I find nothing memorable. Then came the famous SIR JOHN KNYVET, who afterwards held the Great Seal, and of whom I have already told all that I know.[2]

Sir John Knyvet.

Next we come to a Chief Justice whose career

[1] 1 Parl. Hist. 119.

[2] Lives of the Chancellors, vol. i. p. 266.

CHAP. II. Sir John de Cavendish.

excites considerable interest: SIR JOHN DE CAVENDISH, the ancestor of the Duke of Devonshire. The original name of the family was Gernon, or Gernum; and they changed it on marrying the heiress of the manor of Cavendish, in the county of Suffolk. This, however, was only a small possession; and John, the son of the marriage, being of an aspiring nature, and seeing that in peaceable times promotion was to be gained by civil rather than military service, studied the law, was called to the bar, and soon gained the first-rate practice as an advocate. Such was his reputation, that, in the year 1366, Edward III., after the Peace of Bretigni,[1] being desirous of making himself popular by good judicial appointments, raised John de Cavendish to the office of Chief Justice of the King's Bench, although he had not filled the office of Attorney or Solicitor General,[2] or even reached the dignity of the coif. The appointment gave universal satisfaction; and, with De Cavendish presiding over the common law, and Knyvet over equity, it was admitted that justice had never been so satisfactorily administered in Westminster Hall.

His origin.

His high reputation as an advocate.

A.D. 1366. He is made Chief Justice of the King's Bench.

The appointment gives universal satisfaction.

Lord Chief Justice Cavendish held his office sixteen years, being reappointed on the accession of Richard II. with an advance in his salary to 100 marks a year. At last he fell a victim to the brutality of the populace in Wat Tyler's insurrection. After that rebel chief had been killed in Smithfield by Sir William Walworth, there was a rising in Norfolk and Suffolk, under the conduct of a leader much more ferocious, who

He is reappointed by Richard II.

A.D. 1382. He is put to death in Wat Tyler's rebellion.

[1] The Peace of Brétigny, 1360, under which John was to ransom himself for three million gold crowns, and Edward gave up his claim to the throne of France, but kept Poitou and Aquitaine, besides Calais and some other small districts, no longer as a vassal, but as an independent sovereign.—*Thompson's Hist. of Eng.*, p. 109.

[2] The Solicitor-General acted as assistant to the Attorney-General.—*Low and Pulling's Dict. of Eng. Hist.*

called himself *Jack Straw*, and incited his followers to more frightful devastations than any ever committed before or since in a *jacquerie*[1] movement in England, where, in the worst times, some respect has been shown to the influence of station and the dictates of humanity. A band of them, near 50,000 strong, as infuriated as the *canaille* of Paris or the peasants of Gallicia in the crisis of a revolution, marched to the Chief Justice's mansion at Cavendish, which they plundered and burned. The venerable Judge made his escape, but was taken in a cottage in the neighborhood. Unmoved by his gray hairs, they carried him in procession to Bury St. Edmund's, as if to open the assizes, and, after he had been subjected to a mock trial in the market-place, he was sentenced to die; Jack Straw's Chief Justice magnanimously declaring, "that, in respect of the office of dignity which his brother Cavendish had so long filled, instead of being hanged, he should be beheaded." It was resolved, however, that he should be treated with insult as well as with cruelty; for his head being immediately struck off, it was placed in the pillory amidst the savage yells and execrations of the bystanders.[2]

CHAP. II. Jack Straw. The Cavendish mansion plundered and burned.

He seems to have been moderate in his accumulation of wealth; for he added very little to his landed estates, and his posterity for some generations remained in obscurity. The next eminent Cavendish we read of was Sir William, lineally descended from the Chief Justice's eldest son, John. This individual, at starting, was not very high in office, being only gentleman-usher to Cardinal Wolsey.[3] But he will

Cavendish moderate in accumulating wealth. His descendants.

[1] This term means an insurrection of peasants; originally the name given to a revolt of the peasants against the nobles in Picardy, France, A.D. 1358, either from Jacques Carlot, one of the leaders, or from an insulting title, Jacques Bonhomme, given by the nobles to the peasantry. — *Webster's Dict.*

[2] Walsingham.

[3] Thomas Wolsey, 1471–1530, was an ecclesiastical statesman; he

CHAP. II. Sir William Cavendish's Life of Cardinal Wolsey.

ever be remembered with honor for his affectionate fidelity to his master, and for his inimitable Life of him, the earliest and one of the very best specimens of English biography. After Wolsey's fall, he was taken into favor by Henry VIII., and became auditor of the Court of Augmentations,[1] Treasurer of the Chamber, and a Privy Councillor. Taking the side of the Reformation,[2] he received under Edward VI. large grants of abbey lands in the county of Derby. His son was ennobled in the reign of James I. by the title of Baron Cavendish. In a subsequent generation, there were two dukedoms in the family: Cavendish, Duke of Devonshire, still flourishing; and Cavendish, Duke of Newcastle, which became extinct.

The family now represented by the Duke of Devonshire.

became Chancellor, Cardinal, and Papal Legate, and aimed at being Pope. His overthrow in 1529 was caused by the jealousy of the great nobles and his disagreement with Henry VIII. on the divorce question.—*Green's Hist. of Eng. People*, vol. ii. p. 108.

[1] This court was instituted on the dissolution of the monasteries in Henry VIII.'s reign, and was established to secure to the Crown the rich revenues belonging to suppressed religious houses. As this property was granted away with lavish liberality, the court soon ceased to exist.—*Low and Pulling's Dict. of Eng. Hist.*

[2] As that separation of part of Europe from the communion of the Roman See, which took place in the 16th century, is called.—*Thompson's Hist. of Eng.*, p. 162.

CHAPTER III.

CHIEF JUSTICES TILL THE DEATH OF SIR WILLIAM GASCOYNE.

WE next come to a Chief Justice of the King's Bench who actually suffered the last penalty of the law—and deservedly—in the regular administration of retributive justice,—SIR ROBERT TRESILIAN,—hanged at Tyburn.[1] Sir Robert Tresilian.

I can find nothing respecting his origin or education, except a doubtful statement that he was of a Cornish family, and that he was elected a fellow of Exeter College,[2] Oxford, in 1354.[3] As far as I know,

[1] At the northeastern corner of Hyde Park, where the angle of Connaught Place now stands, was the famous "Tyburn Tree," sometimes called the "Three-Legged Mare," being a triangle on three legs, where the public executions took place till they were transferred to Newgate in 1783. The manor of Tyburn took its name from the Tye Bourne or brook, which rose under Primrose Hill; and the place was originally chosen for executions because, though on the highroad to Oxford, it was remote from London. The condemned were brought hither in a cart from Newgate—

"Thief and parson in a Tyburn cart,"

the prisoner usually carrying the immense nosegay which, by old custom, was presented to him on the steps of St. Sepulchre's Church, and having been refreshed with a bowl of ale at St. Giles's. The cart was driven underneath the gallows, and, after the noose was adjusted, was driven quickly away by Jack Ketch the hangman, so that the prisoner was left suspended.—*Hare's Walks in London*, book ii. p. 101.

[2] Exeter College, founded by Walter of Stapleton, Bishop of Exeter, in 1314. All the buildings have been repeatedly restored, and several of the mwere erected in the present century.—*Baedeker's Gt. Britain*, p. 235.

[3] Gentleman's Magazine, vol. lxiv. p. 325. I suspect that he is assigned to Cornwall only on the authority of—

"By *Tre*, *Pol*, and *Pen*,
You know Cornish men."

CHAP. III.

he is the first and last of his name to be found in our judicial or historical records. The earliest authentic notice of him is at the commencement of the reign of Richard II., when he was made a sergeant-at-law, and appointed a Puisne Judge of the Court of King's Bench.[1] The probability is, that he had raised himself from obscurity by a mixture of good and evil arts. He showed learning and diligence in the discharge of his judicial duties; but, instead of confining himself to them, he mixed deeply in politics, and showed a determination, by intrigue, to reach power and distinction. He devoted himself to De Vere, the favorite of the young King, who, to the great annoyance of the princes of the blood and the body of the nobility, was created Duke of Ireland, was vested for life with the sovereignty of that island, and had the distribution of all patronage at home. By the influence of this minion, Tresilian, soon after the melancholy end of Sir John Cavendish, was appointed Chief Justice of the King's Bench; and he was sent into Essex to try the rebels. The King accompanied him. It is said that, as they were journeying, "the Essex men, in a body of about 500, addressed themselves barefoot to the King for mercy, and had it granted upon condition that they should deliver up to justice the chief instruments of stirring up the rebellion; which being accordingly done, they were immediately tried and hanged, ten or twelve on a beam, at Chelmsford, because they were too many to be executed after the usual manner, which was by beheading."[2]

He is made a Puisne Judge of the Common Pleas.

He mixes in politics and devotes himself to De Vere.

Chief Justice of the King's Bench. A.D. 1382.

He is sent into Essex.

He gains the favor of Michael de la Pole.

Tresilian now gained the good graces of Michael de la Pole, the Lord Chancellor, and was one of the principal advisers of the measures of the Government, being ever ready for any dirty work that might be

[1] Close Roll, 1 Rich. II. Liberat. ab anno i. usque ult.—Ric. II. m. 15.
[2] Kennet, i. 248.

CHAP. III.

assigned to him. In the year 1385, it was hoped that he might have got rid, by an illegal sentence, of John of Gaunt,[1] who had become very obnoxious to the King's favorites. "For these cunning flatterers, having, by forged crimes and accusations, incensed the King against him, contrived to have him suddenly arrested, and tried before Judge Tresilian, who, being perfectly framed to their interests, would be ready enough, upon such evidence as they should produce, to condemn him."[2] But the plot got wind, and the Duke, flying to Pontefract Castle, fortified himself there till his retainers came to his rescue.

A.D. 1385. His connection with John of Gaunt.

In the following year, when there was a change of ministry according to the fashion of those times, Tresilian was in great danger of being included in the impeachment which proved the ruin of the Chancellor; but he escaped by an intrigue with the victorious party, and he was suspected of having secretly suggested the commission signed by Richard, and confirmed by Parliament, under which the whole power of the state was transferred to a Commission of fourteen Barons. He remained very quiet for a twelvemonth, till he thought that he perceived the new ministers falling into unpopularity, and he then advised that a bold effort should be made to crush them. Meeting with encouragement, he secretly left London, and, being joined by the Duke of Ireland, went to the King, who was at Nottingham in a progress through the midland counties. He then undertook, through the instrumentality of his brother Judges, to break the Commission, and to restore the King and the favorite to the authority of which it had deprived them. His plan was immediately adopted, and the Judges, who had just

A.D. 1386. He escapes impeachment by intrigue with the Barons.

His plan to enable Richard II. to triumph over the Barons.

He undertakes to break the Commission of Barons.

[1] John, Duke of Lancaster, was the third son of Edward III. He was called, from his birthplace, John of Ghent or Gaunt.—*Thompson's Hist. of Eng.*, p. 109.

[2] Kennet, i. 253.

CHAP. III.

returned from the summer assizes, were all summoned in the King's name to Nottingham.

25th Aug. 1387. Questions and answers prepared by him.

On their arrival, they found not only a string of questions, but answers, prepared by Tresilian. These he himself had signed, and he required them to sign. Belknappe, the Chief Justice of the Common Pleas, and the others, demurred, seeing the peril to which they might be exposed; but, by promises and threats, they were induced to acquiesce. The following record was accordingly drawn up, that copies of it might be distributed all over England:

The opinion of the Judges on the privileges of Parliament.

"Be it remembered, that on the 25th of Aug., in the 11th year of the reign of K. Rich. II., at the Castle of Nottingham, before our said lord the King, Rob. Tresilian, chief justice of England, and Rob. Belknappe, chief justice of the common bench of our said lord the King, John Holt, Roger Fulthorp, and Wm. de Burgh, knights, justices, etc., and John de Lokton, the King's sergeant-at-law, in the presence of the lords and other witnesses underwritten, were personally required by our said lord the King, on the faith and allegiance wherein to him the said King they are bound, to answer faithfully unto certain questions here under specified, and to them then and there truly recited, and upon the same to declare the law according to their discretion, viz.:

The Commission considered derogatory to the King's royalty.

"1. It was demanded of them, 'Whether that new statute, ordinance, and commission, made and published in the last parl. held at Westm., be not derogatory to the royalty and prerogative of our said lord the King?' To which they unanimously answered that the same are derogatory thereunto, especially because they were against his will.

The punishments to be meted out to those who favored it.

"2. 'How those are to be punished who procured that statute and commission?'—*A.* That they were to be punished with death, except the King would pardon them.

"3. 'How those are to be punished who moved the King to consent to the making of the said statute?'—*A.* That they ought to lose their lives unless his Maj. would pardon them.

"4. 'What punishment they deserved who compelled, straitened, or necessitated the King to consent to the making

of the said statute and commission?'—*A.* That they ought to suffer as traitors.

"5. 'How those are to be punished who hindered the King from exercising those things which appertain to his royalty and prerogative?'—*A.* That they are to be punished as traitors.

Parliamentary proceedings made dependent on the King's will.

"6. 'Whether after in a parl. assembled, the affairs of the kingdom, and the cause of calling that parl., are by the King's command declared, and certain articles limited by the King upon which the lords and commons in that parl. ought to proceed; if yet the said lords and commons will proceed altogether upon other articles and affairs, and not at all upon those limited and proposed to them by the King, until the King shall have first answered them upon the articles and matters so by them started and expressed, although the King's command be to the contrary; wehther in such case the King ought not to have the governance of the parl. and effectually overrule them, so as that they ought to proceed first on the matters proposed by the King: or whether, on the contrary, the lords and commons ought first to have the King's answer upon their proposals before they proceeded further?'—*A.* That the King in that behalf has the governance, and may appoint what shall be first handled, and so gradually what next in all matters to be treated of in parl., even to the end of the parl.; and if any act contrary to the King's pleasure be made known therein, they are to be punished as traitors.

The King can dissolve Parliament at pleasure.

"7. 'Whether the King, whenever he pleases, can dissolve the parl. and command the lords and commons to depart from thence, or not?'—*A.* That he can; and if any one shall then proceed in parl. against the King's will, he is to be punished as a traitor.

The power of impeachment vested in the King.

"8. 'Since the King can, whenever he pleases, remove any of his judges and officers, and justify or punish them for their offences; whether the lords and commons can, without the will of the King, impeach in parl. any of the said judges or officers for any of their offences?'—*A.* That they cannot; and if any one should do so, he is to be punished as a traitor.

The statute against Edw. II.

"9. 'How he is to be punished who moved in parl. that the statute should be sent for whereby Edw. II. (the King's great-grandfather) was proceeded against and deposed in parl.; by means of sending for and imposing which statute, the said

CHAP. III.

late statute, ordinance, and commission were devised and brought forth in parl.?'—*A.* That as well he that so moved, as he who by pretence of that motion carried the said statute to the parl., are traitors and criminals to be punished with death.

The judgment against Michael de la Pole reversed.

"10. 'Whether the judgment given in the last parl. held at Westm. against Mich. de la Pole, earl of Suffolk, was erroneous and revocable, or not?'—*A.* That if that judgment were now to be given, they would not give it; because it seems to them that the said judgment is revocable, as being erroneous in every part of it.

Signature.

"In testimony of all which, the judges and sergeants aforesaid, to these presents have put their seals in the presence of the rev. lords, Alex. abp. of York, Rob. abp. of Dublin, John bp. of Durham, Tho. bp. of Chichester, and John bp. of Bangor, Rob. duke of Ireland, Mich. earl of Suffolk, John Rypon, clerk, and John Blake, esq.; given the place, day, month, and year aforesaid."

Tresilian exultingly thought that he had not only got rid of the obnoxious Commission, but that he had annihilated the power of Parliament by the destruction of parliamentary privilege, and by making the proceedings of the two Houses entirely dependent on the caprice of the sovereign.

He then attended Richard to London, where the opinion of the Judges against the legality of the Commission was proclaimed to the citizens at the Guildhall;[1] and all who should act under it were declared traitors. A resolution was formed to arrest the most obnoxious of the opposite faction, and to send them to take their trials before the Judges who had already committed themselves on the question of law; and, under the guidance of Tresilian, a bill of indictment

Measures prompted by Tresilian against the Barons.

[1] To the north of Cheapside, at the end of King Street, rises the Guildhall or Council-Hall of the city. The building was originally erected in 1411–31 for the sittings of the magistrates and municipal corporation, which had formerly been held at Aldermanbury. It was almost entirely destroyed by the Great Fire of 1666, but was reërected in 1789 from designs by the younger Dance.—*Baedeker's London*, p. 94.

CHAP. III.

was actually prepared against them for a conspiracy to destroy the royal prerogative. Thomas Ush, the under-sheriff, promised to pack a jury to convict them; Sir Nicholas Brambre, who had been thrice Lord Mayor, undertook to secure the fidelity of the citizens; and all the City Companies swore that they would live and die with the King, and fight against his enemies to their last breath. Arundel, Bishop of Ely,[1] was still Chancellor; but Tresilian considered that the Great Seal was now within his own grasp, and, after the recent examples, in Parnyng and Knyvet, of Chief Justices becoming Chancellors, he anticipated no obstacle to his elevation.

His abettors.

He considers the Great Seal within his grasp.

At such a slow pace did news travel in those days, that, on the night of the 10th of November, Richard and his Chief Justice went to bed thinking that their enemies were annihilated, and next morning they were awoke by the intelligence that a large force, under the Duke of Gloucester[2] and the Earls of Arundel and Nottingham, was encamped at Highgate. The confederate Lords, hearing of the proceedings at Nottingham, had immediately rushed to arms, and followed Richard towards London, with an army of 40,000 men. The walls of London were sufficient to repel a sudden assault; and a royal proclamation forbade the sale of provisions to the rebels,—in the hope that famine

11th Nov. 1387.

The Barons in arms.

[1] Thomas Arundel, Archbishop of Canterbury, born at Arundel Castle, Sussex, in 1353, was a younger son of Richard Fitz-Alan, Earl of Arundel. He became Bishop of Ely in 1375, Lord High Chancellor in 1386, and Archbishop of York in 1388. In 1396 he was translated to the see of Canterbury. This was the first instance that occurred of a translation from the see of York to that of Canterbury. In 1397 he was impeached for high treason, and banished by Richard II. He took a prominent part in the revolution by which Richard was dethroned, and was restored to the see of Canterbury by Henry IV. in 1399. He prohibited the translation of the Scriptures into English, and persecuted the Lollards,—i.e., the disciples of Wickliffe. Died in 1413.—*Thomas' Biog. Dict.*

[2] Thomas, Duke of Gloucester, was the younger uncle of Richard II. —*Thompson's Hist. of Eng.*, p. 116.

CHAP. III.

might disperse them. But, marching round by Hackney, they approached Aldgate,[1] and they appeared so formidable, that a treaty was entered into, according to which they were to be supplied with all necessaries, on payment of a just price, and deputies from them were to have safe-conduct through the City on their way to the King at Westminster. Richard himself agreed that on the following Sunday he would receive the deputies, sitting on his throne in Westminster Hall.

They gain the ascendency.

The King agrees to receive their deputies.

At the appointed hour he was ready to receive them, but they did not arrive, and he asked "how it fortuned that they kept not their promise?" Being answered, "Because there is an ambush of a thousand armed men or more in a place called the Mews, contrary to covenant; and therefore they neither come, nor hold you faithful to your word,"—he said, with an oath, that "he knew of no such thing," and he ordered the sheriffs of London to go thither and kill all they could lay hands on. The truth was, that Sir Nicholas Brambre, in concert with Tresilian, had planted an ambush near Charing Cross,[2] to assassinate the Lords

The deputies delayed by an ambush to assassinate them.

[1] Aldgate was one of the great gates of the City, and the chief outlet to the eastern counties from the time of the Romans to its destruction in 1760. Its antiquity is shown in the name of Aeld or Old gate. It was rebuilt in the reign of John by the Barons, with money robbed from the coffers of the monks and stone taken from the houses of the Jews, for they feared that others might not experience more difficulty than they had done themselves, in entering the City on this side. The dwelling-house above the gate was leased by the corporation in 1374 (48 Edward III.) to the poet Chaucer for life, though he was not allowed to underlet any portion of the building to others.—*Hare's Walks in London*, vol. i. p. 345.

[2] In 1266 a village on this site was spoken of as Cherringe, where William of Radnor, Bishop of Llandaff, asked permission of Henry III. to take up his abode in a hermitage during his visits to London. This earlier mention of the name unfortunately renders it impossible to derive it, as has been often done, from *La Chère Reine*, Eleanor, wife of Edward I., "mulier pia, modesta, misericors, Anglicorum omnium amatrix," to whom her husband erected here the last of the nine crosses which marked the resting-places of the beloved corpse in 1291 on its way from Lincoln

CHAP. III.

as they passed; but, in obedience to the King's order, the men were sent back to the City of London. The Lords, at last, reached Westminster, with a gallant troop of gentlemen; and as soon as they had entered the great hall, and saw the King in his royal robes sitting on the throne, with the crown on his head and the sceptre in his hand, they made obeisance three times as they advanced, and when they reached the steps of the throne they knelt down before him with all seeming humility. He, feigning to be pleased to see them, rose and took each of them by the hand, and said "he would hear their plaint, as he was desirous to render justice to all his subjects." Thereupon they said, "Most dread Sovereign, we appeal of high treason Robert Tresilian, that false justice, Nicholas Brambre, that disloyal knight; the Archbishop of York; the Duke of Ireland; and the Earl of Suffolk:"—and, to prove their accusation to be true, they threw down their gauntlets, protesting, by their oaths, that they

They reach Westminster.

Their reception by the King.

Tresilian prosecuted for high treason.

to Westminster. More probably the name is derived from the Saxon word Charan, to turn, both the road and river making a bend here. The other crosses in memory of Eleanor were at Lincoln, Northampton, Stoney Stratford, Woburn, Dunstable, St. Albans, Waltham, and Cheap; and of these only those of Northampton and Waltham remain. That of Charing was the most magnificent of all: it was designed by Richard and Roger de Coverdale, with figures by Alexander of Abingdon. The modern cross erected in front of Charing Cross Railway Station is intended as a reproduction of it. The old cross was pulled down in 1647 by the Puritans, amid great lamentations from the opposite party.

The site of the cross was the spot chosen in 1660 for the execution of the regicides. Hither (October 13) Major-General Thomas Harrison was brought to the gallows in a sledge, "with a sweet smiling countenance," saying that he was going to suffer for "the most glorious cause that ever was in the world." "As he was about to die," having his face towards the Banqueting House at Whitehall, "one, in derision, called to him, and said, 'Where is your good old cause?' He, with a cheerful smile, clapped his hand on his breast, and said, 'Here it is, and I am going to seal it with my blood.'" Three days after, Hugh Peters, who had preached against Charles I. at St. Margaret's as "the great Barabbas at Windsor," with Cook the republican counsel, suffered on the same spot, and afterwards eight other of the regicides.—*Hare's Walks in London.*

CHAP. III.

were ready to prosecute it to battle. "Nay," said the King, "not so; but in the next parliament (which we do appoint beforehand to begin the morrow after the Purification of Our Lady[1]), both they and you, appearing, shall receive according to law what law doth require, and right shall be done."

The King's answer.

It being apparent that the confederate Lords had a complete ascendency, the accused parties fled. The Duke of Ireland and Sir Nicholas Brambre made an ineffectual attempt to rally a military force; but Chief Justice Tresilian disguised himself, and remained in concealment till he was discovered, after being attainted in the manner to be hereafter described.

Tresilian's accomplices flee.

The elections for the new Parliament ran strongly in favor of the confederate Lords; and, on the day appointed for its meeting, an order was issued under their sanction for taking into custody all the Judges who had signed the opinion at Nottingham. They were all arrested while they were sitting on the bench, except Chief Justice Tresilian; but he was nowhere to be found.

The new Parliament meets. 3d Feb. 1389.

Tresilian absconds.

When the members of both Houses had assembled in Westminster Hall, and the King had taken his place on the throne, the five Lords,[2] who were called APPELLANTS,

Proceedings in Parliament.

"Entered in costly robes, leading one another hand in hand, an innumerable company following them, and, approaching the King, they all with submissive gestures reverenced him. Then rising, they declared their appellation by the mouth of their speaker, who said, 'Behold the Duke of

[1] Purification of the Virgin, or Candlemas Day—Feb. 2. The popular name Candlemas is derived from the ceremony which the Church of Rome dictates to be observed on this day, namely, a blessing of candles by the clergy, and a distribution of them amongst the people, by whom they are afterwards carried lighted, in solemn procession.—*Chambers' Book of Days*, vol. i. p. 213.

[2] Duke of Gloucester, Earls of Arundel, Nottingham, Derby, and Warwick.

CHAP. III.

Gloucester comes to purge himself of treasons which are laid to his charge by the conspirators.' To whom the Lord Chancellor, by the King's command, answered, 'My Lord Duke, the King conceiveth so honorably of you, that he cannot be induced to believe that you, who are of kindred to him, should attempt any treason against him.' The Duke with his four companions, on their knees, humbly gave thanks to the King for his gracious opinion of their fidelity. And now, as a prelude to what was going to be acted, each of the Prelates, Lords, and Commons [1] then assembled had the following oath administered to them upon the rood or cross of Canterbury in full parliament: 'You shall swear that you will keep, and cause to be kept, the good peace, quiet, and tranquillity of the kingdom; and if any will do to the contrary thereof, you shall oppose and disturb him to the utmost of your power; and if any will do any thing against the bodies of the five Lords, you shall stand with them to the end of this present parliament, and maintain and support them with all your power, to live and die with them against all men, no person or thing excepted, saving always your legiance to the King and the prerogatives of his crown, according to the laws and good customs of the realm.'" [2]

The confederate Lords acquitted.

The oath taken by the Prelates, Lords, and Commons.

Written articles to the number of thirty-nine were then exhibited by the appellants against the appellees. The other four are alleged to have committed the various acts of treason charged upon them "by the assent and counsel of Robert Tresilian, that false Justice;" and in most of the articles he bears the brunt of the accusation. Sir Nicholas Brambre alone was in custody; and the others not appearing when solemnly called, their default was recorded, and the Lords took time to consider whether the impeachment was duly instituted, and whether the facts stated in the articles

The articles of accusation against Tresilian and his accomplices.

[1] It will be observed, that although the Commons took this oath they had nothing to do with the trial, either as accusers or judges. At this time there might be an appeal of treason in parliament by private persons, the Lords being the judges; but all appeals of treason in parliament were taken away by 1 Hen. IV. c. 14.—See Bract. 119a; 3 Inst. 132.

[2] 1 St. Tr. 89–101; 1 Parl. Hist. 196–210.

CHAP. III.

Feb. 13. They are found guilty of high treason.

amounted to high treason. Ten days thereafter, judgment was given "that the impeachment was duly instituted, and that the facts stated in several of the articles amounted to high treason." Thereupon, the prelates having withdrawn, that they might not mix in an affair of blood, sentence was pronounced, "that Sir Robert Tresilian, the Duke of Ireland, the Archbishop of York,[1] and Earl of Suffolk,[2] should be drawn and hanged as traitors and enemies to the King and kingdom, and that their heirs should be disinherited for ever, and that their lands and tenements, goods and chattels, should be forfeited to the King."

Their attainder.

Tresilian might have avoided the execution of his sentence, had it not been for the strangest infatuation related of any human being possessing the use of reason. Instead of flying to a distance, like the Duke, the Archbishop, and the Earl, none of whom suffered,—although his features were necessarily well known, he had come to the neighborhood of Westminster Hall on the first day of the session of parliament; and, even after his own attainder had been published, trusting to his disguise, his curiosity induced him to remain to watch the fate of his associate, Sir Nicholas Brambre.

Tresilian comes to Westminster in disguise.

This chivalrous citizen, who had been knighted for the bravery he had displayed in assisting Sir William Walworth[3] to kill Wat Tyler[4] and to put down the

[1] Alexander Neville.

[2] Michael de la Pole, first Earl of Suffolk, an English statesman, who served in the army under Edward III. He became Lord Chancellor in March, 1383, was created Earl of Suffolk in August, 1386, and removed in October of that year. Died in 1389.—*Thomas' Biog. Dict.*

[3] Sir William Walworth was Lord Mayor of London when an army of insurgents under Wat Tyler marched to that city in 1381. He killed Tyler while he was speaking to the King. Died about 1385.—*Thomas' Biog. Dict.*

[4] Wat Tyler was a leader of a large number of men who revolted in the southeastern part of England in 1381 in consequence of a capitation tax. They massacred several persons of the higher classes, committed much devastation, and marched towards London. Tyler was killed in 1381.—*Thomas' Biog. Dict.*

CHAP. III.

rebellion, having been apprehended and lodged in the Tower of London, was now produced by the constable of the Tower to take his trial. He asked for further time to advise with his counsel, but was ordered forthwith to answer to every point in the articles of treason contained. Thereupon he exclaimed, "Whoever hath branded me with this ignominious mark, with him I am ready to fight in the lists to maintain my innocency whenever the King shall appoint!" "This," says a chronicler, "he spake with such a fury, that his eyes sparkled with rage, and he breathed as if an Etna lay hid in his breast; choosing rather to die gloriously in the field, than disgracefully on a gibbet."

Feb. 17. Trial of Sir Nicholas Brambre.

He challenges his accusers to combat in proof of his innocence.

The appellants said "they would readily accept of the combat," and, flinging down their gages before the King, added, "we will prove these articles to be true to thy head, most damnable traitor!" But the Lords resolved, "that battle did not lie in this case; and that they would examine the articles with the proofs to support them, and consider what judgment to give, to the advantage and profit of the King and kingdom, and as they would answer before God."

The Lords decide against his challenge.

Feb. 19. They adjourned for two days, and met again, when a number of London citizens appeared to give evidence against Brambre. For the benefit of the reader, the chronicler I have before quoted shall continue the story:

Brambre's trial interrupted by the discovery of Tresilian, owing to his curiosity.

"Before they could proceed with his trial, they were interrupted by unfortunate *Tresilian*, who being got upon the top of an apothecary's house adjoining to the palace, and descended into a gutter to look about him and observe who went into the palace, was discovered by certain of the peers, who presently sent some of the guard to apprehend him; who entering into the house where he was, and having spent long time in vain in looking for him, at length one of the guard stept to the master of the house, and taking him by the shoulder, with his dagger drawn, said thus, 'Show us where

CHAP. III.

thou hast hid Tresilian, or else resolve thy days are accomplished.' The master, trembling and ready to yield up the ghost for fear, answered, 'Yonder is the place where he lies;' and showed him a round table covered with branches of bays, under which Tresilian lay close covered. When they had found him they drew him out by the heels, wondering to see him wear his hair and beard overgrown, with old clouted shoes and patched hose, more like a miserable poor beggar than a judge. When this came to the ears of the peers, the five appellants suddenly rose up, and, going to the gate of the hall, they met the guard leading Tresilian bound, crying, as they came, 'We have him, we have him.' Tresilian, being come into the hall, was asked 'what he could say for himself why execution should not be done according to the judgment passed upon him for his treasons so often committed?' but he became as one struck dumb, he had nothing to say, and his heart was hardened to the very last, so that he would not confess himself guilty of any thing. Whereupon he was without delay led to the Tower, that he might suffer the sentence passed against him: his wife and his children did with many tears accompany him to the Tower; but his wife was so overcome with grief, that she fell down in a swoon as if she had been dead. Immediately Tresilian is put upon an hurdle, and drawn through the streets of the city, with a wonderful concourse of people following him. At every furlong's end he was suffered to stop, that he might rest himself, and to see if he would confess or acknowledge any thing; but what he said to the friar, his confessor, is not known. When he came to the place of execution he would not climb the ladder, until such time as being soundly beaten with bats and staves he was forced to go up; and, when he was up, he said, 'So long as I do wear any thing upon me, I shall not die;' wherefore the executioner stript him, and found certain images painted like to the signs of the heavens, and the head of a devil painted, and the names of many of the devils wrote in parchment; these being taken away he was hanged up naked, and after he had hanged some time, that the spectators should be sure he was dead, they cut his throat, and because the night approached they let him hang till the next morning, and then his wife, having obtained a license of the King, took

His disguise and apprehension.

His silence.

He is led to the Tower.

His conduct at the place of execution.

His death.

down his body, and carried it to the Gray-Friars,[1] where it was buried."[2]

CHAP. III.

His body buried in the monastery of Gray-Friars.

I add an account of this scene from Froissart, which is still more interesting:

Froissart's account of the foregoing.

"Understanding that the King's uncles and the new Council at England would keep a secret parliament at Westminster, he [Tresilian] thought to go and lie there to learn what should be done; and so he came and lodged at Westminster the same day their Council began, and lodged at an ale-house right over against the palace gate, and there he was in a chamber looking out of a window down into the court, and there he might see them that went in and out to the Council, but none knew him because of his apparel. At last, on a day, a squire of the Duke of Gloucester's knew him, for he had oftentimes been in his company: and as soon as Sir Robert Tresilian saw him he knew him well, and withdrew himself out of the window. The squire had suspicion thereof, and said to himself, 'Methinks I see yonder Sir Robert Tresilian;' and, to the intent to know the truth, he entered into the lodging, and said to the wife, 'Dame, who is that that is above in the chamber? is he alone, or with company?' 'Sir,' quoth she, 'I cannot show you, but he has been here a long space.' Therewith the squire went up the better to advise him, and saluted him, and saw well it was true; but he feigned himself, and turned his tale, and said, 'God save you, good man, I pray you be not discontented, for I took you for a farmer of mine in Essex, for you are like him.' 'Sir,' quoth he, 'I am of Kent, and a farmer of Sir John of Hollands, and there be men of the Bishop of Canterbury's that would do me wrong; and I am come hither to complain to the Council.' 'Well,' quoth the squire, 'if you come into the palace I will help to

Tresilian said to have been discovered by a squire of the Duke of Gloucester.

He declares himself a farmer of Kent and gives the reason for his presence in Westminster.

[1] The monastery of Gray-Friars, which was one of the most important religious houses in London, was founded by the first Franciscans who came over to England in the reign of Henry III. Its buildings were raised by the charity of various pious benefactors, and its glorious church was given by Margaret, second wife of Edward I. It became a favorite burial-place of the Queens of England, as well as the usual place of interment for the foreign attendants of the Plantagenet Queens Consort. . . . Even the name of Gray-Friars became extinct when Christ's Hospital was founded, and nothing remains of the monastery except some low brick arches of the western cloister on the left of the entrance.—*Hare's Walks in London.*

[2] 1 St. Tr. 115–118.

CHAP. III.

make your way, that you shall speak with the Lords of the Council.' 'Sir, I thank you,' quoth he, 'and I shall not refuse your aid.' Then the squire called for a pot of ale, and drank with him, and paid for it, and bade him farewell, and departed; and never ceased till he came to the Council Chamber door, and called the usher to open the door. Then the usher demanded what he would, because the Lords were in Council; he answered and said, 'I would speak with my lord and master the Duke of Gloucester, for a matter that right near toucheth him and all the Council.' Then the usher let him in, and when he came before his master he said, 'Sir, I have brought you great tidings.' 'What be they?' quoth the Duke. 'Sir,' quoth the squire, 'I will speak aloud, for it toucheth you and all my lords here present. I have seen Sir Robert Tresilian disguised in a villein's habit, in an ale-house here without the gate.' 'Tresilian?' quoth the Duke. 'Yea, truly, sir,' quoth the squire, 'you shall have him ere you go to dinner, if you please.' 'I am content,' quoth the Duke, 'and he shall show us some news of his master the Duke of Ireland; go thy way and fetch him, but look that thou be strong enough so to do that thou fail not.' The squire went forth and took four sergeants with him, and said, 'Sirs, follow me afar off; and as soon as I make to you a sign, and that I lay my hand on a man that I go for, take him and let him not escape.' Therewith the squire entered into the house where Tresilian was, and went up into the chamber; and as soon as he saw him, he said, 'Tresilian, you are come into this country on no goodness; my lord, the Duke of Gloucester, commandeth that you come and speak with him.' The knight would have excused himself, and said, 'I am not Tresilian, I am a farmer of Sir John of Hollands.' 'Nay, nay,' quoth the squire, 'your body is Tresilian, but your habit is not;' and therewith he made tokens to the sergeants that they should take him. Then they went up into the chamber and took him, and so brought him to the palace. Of his taking, the Duke of Gloucester was right joyful, and would see him, and when he was in his presence the Duke said, 'Tresilian, what thing makes you here in this country? where is the King? where left you him?' Tresilian, when he saw that he was so well known, and that none excusation could avail him, said, 'Sir, the King sent me hither to learn tidings, and he is at

The Duke of Gloucester informed of Tresilian's whereabouts.

He is brought to the palace.

Bristol, and hunteth along the river Severn.' 'What,' quoth the Duke, 'you are not come like a wise man, but rather like a spy; if you would have come to have learnt tidings, you should have come in the state of a knight.' 'Sir,' quoth Tresilian, 'if I have trespassed, I ask pardon, for I was caused this to do.' 'Well, sir,' quoth the Duke, 'and where is your master the Duke of Ireland?' 'Sir,' quoth he, 'of a truth he is with the King.' 'It is showed us here,' quoth the Duke, 'that he assembleth much people, and the King for him; whither will he lead that people?' 'Sir,' quoth he, 'it is to go into Ireland.' 'Into Ireland!' quoth the Duke of Gloucester. 'Yea, sir, truly,' quoth Tresilian: and then the Duke studied a little, and said, 'Ah, Tresilian, Tresilian! your business is neither fair nor good; you have done great folly to come into this country, for you are not beloved here, and that shall well be seen; you, and such other of your affinity, have done great displeasure to my brother and me, and you have troubled to your power, and with your counsel, the King, and divers others, nobles of the realm; also you have moved certain good towns against us. Now is the day come that you shall have your payment; for he that doth well, by reason shall find it. Think on your business, for I will neither eat nor drink till you be dead.' That word greatly abashed Tresilian; he would fain have excused himself with fair language, in lowly humbling himself, but he could do nothing to appease the Duke. So Sir Robert Tresilian was delivered to the hangman, and so led out of Westminster, and there beheaded, and after hanged on a gibbet."[1]

His assertions regarding the King and the Duke of Ireland.

The Duke's answer.

Its effect on Tresilian and on his fate.

Considering the violence of the times, Tresilian's conviction and execution cannot be regarded as raising a strong presumption against him: but there seems little doubt that he flattered the vices of the unhappy Richard; and historians agree, that, in prosecuting his personal aggrandizement, he was utterly regardless of law and liberty.[2] He died unpitied, and, notwithstand-

His character.

[1] Frois. part 2, fol. 110.

[2] Thus Guthrie says (A.D. 1384), "Richard was encouraged in his jealousy of the Duke of Lancaster both by the clergy about his person, and Tresilian, his infamous Chief Justiciary, who undertook, if the King should

CHAP. III.

ing the "historical doubts" by which we are beset, no one has yet appeared to vindicate his memory.

His descendants.

He left behind him an only child, a daughter, who was married into the respectable family of Howley, from whom descended the late venerable Archbishop of Canterbury.[1]

Sir Robert Belknappe.

I must now give some account of his contemporary, SIR ROBERT BELKNAPPE, Chief Justice of the Common Pleas, who, although trepanned into the unconstitutional and illegal act of signing the answers which Tresilian had prepared at Nottingham, with a view to overturn the party of the Duke of Gloucester and the Barons, appears to have been a respectable Judge and a worthy man.

His character.

His family.

The name of his ancestor (spelt Belknape) is to be found in the list of the companions of William the Conqueror who fought at Hastings, preserved in Battle Abbey.[2] The family continued in possession of a moderate estate in the county of Essex, without producing any other member who gained distinction till the reign of Edward III. Robert, a younger son, was then sent to push his fortune in the Inns of Court, and he acquired such a taste for the law, that on the death of his father and elder brother, while he was an *apprentice*, he resolved still steadily to follow his profession, and to try for its honors. After some disappointments he was made a King's Sergeant;[3] and finally his ambition

His ancestor at Hastings.

He studies at the Inns of Court.

He is made King's Sergeant. A.D. 1367.

cause the Duke to be arrested, to proceed against him as a common traitor."—Vol. ii. p. 326.

"Tresilian had no rule of judgment but the occasion it was to serve, and he knew no occasion which he could not render suitable to law. He was too ignorant to be serviceable even to the wretched politics of that court, any further than by blind compliance. Thus, like a dog chained up in darkness, when unmuzzled he was more fierce, and, without distinction, tore down all whom his wicked keepers turned into his tremendous haunt."—Vol. ii. p. 349.

[1] Gentleman's Magazine, vol. lxiv. p. 325.

[2] Thierry, Nor. Con. ii. 385.

[3] While King's Sergeant, he seems to have had a salary of 20*l.* a year,

CHAP. III.

was fully gratified with the office of Chief Justice of the Common Pleas. He gave high satisfaction as a Judge, and, being esteemed by all parties, it was expected that on the accession of Richard II. he would have been appointed Chief Justice of the King's Bench; but he was passed over through the intrigues of Tresilian. He was permitted, however, to retain "the pillow of the Common Pleas;" and with this he was quite contented, for, devoting himself to his judicial duties, he had no desire to mix in the factions which then divided the state.

Chief Justice of the Common Pleas. A.D. 1375.

A.D. 1377.

Why he was not appointed to the King's Bench.

He did not take any part in the struggle which ended in the Commission for making fourteen Barons viceroys over the King; and he went on very quietly and comfortably till the month of August, 1387, when, returning from the summer circuit, he was summoned in the King's name to attend a council at Nottingham. On his arrival there he was received by Lord Chief Justice Tresilian, who at once explained to him the plan which had been devised for putting down the Duke of Gloucester and the Barons; and showed him the questions to be submitted to the Judges, with the answers which they were desired to return. He saw that many of these answers were contrary to law, and, though extrajudicial opinions were given without scru-

Not a participator in the struggle ending in the Commission.

A.D. 1387.

The manner in which he was coerced into the giving of an illegal opinion.

in respect of which he was sometimes sent as a Judge of assize, and sometimes he pleaded crown cases as an advocate:

"Issue Roll, 44 Edward III.

"Robert Belknappe. { To Robert Belknappe, one of the Justices to hold the assizes in divers counties in the kingdom of England, and to deliver the gaols there, receiving yearly 20*l.* for his fee in the office aforesaid. In money delivered to him for half a year's payment, 10*l.*

"To the same Robert, one of the King's Sergeants, in money delivered to him in discharge of the 10*l.* payable to him at Michaelmas Term last past, for the 20*l.* yearly which the Lord the King lately granted to the same Robert, to be received at the Exchequer in aid of his expenses in prosecuting and defending his business, 10*l.*"—*Devon's Issue Rolls*, p. 369, m. 14.

CHAP. III.

ple by the Judges to the Crown ages afterwards, he was startled by the danger to which he must expose himself by openly flying in the face of those who were actually in possession of supreme power. He therefore flatly refused to sign the answers, and he did not yield till the Duke of Ireland and the Earl of Suffolk were called in and threatened to put him to death if he remained contumacious any longer. Thereupon he did sign his name under Tresilian's, saying, "Now I want nothing but a hurdle and halter to bring me to that death I deserve. If I had not done this, I should have been killed by your hands; and, now I have gratified the King's pleasure and yours in doing it, I have well deserved to die for betraying the nobles of the land."[1]

He declares himself deserving of death.

Belknappe observed with great dismay the King's march to London, and the ensuing civil war which terminated in favor of the Barons; but he remained unmolested till the 3d day of February following, when he was arrested while sitting in the Court of Common Pleas, and, along with the other Judges, was committed to the Tower of London. There he lay till after the trial of Brambre and the apprehension and execution of Tresilian.

A.D. 1389. He is arrested and committed to the Tower.

2d March.

The House of Commons then took up the prosecution against Sir Robert Belknappe and the other Judges, and impeached them before the House of Lords, "for putting their hands and seals to the questions and answers given at Nottingham, as aforesaid, by the procurement of Sir Robert Tresilian, already

He is impeached before the House of Lords.

[1] Another account makes him say, "Now I want nothing but a ship or a nimble horse, or a halter, to bring me to that death I deserve" (3 *Tyrrell*, 906); and a third, "Now here lacketh nothing but a rope, that I may receive a reward worthy of my desert; and I know that if I had not done this, I should not have escaped your hands; so that for your pleasures and the King's I have done it, and thereby deserve death at the hands of the Lords" (3 *Holin.* 456).

attainted for the same." Some of them pretended that their answers had not been faithfully recorded; but Sir Robert Belknappe pleaded the force put upon him, declaring "that when urged to testify against the Commission, so as to make it void, he had answered, that the intention of the Lords, and such as assisted in making it, and the statute confirming it, was to support the honor and good government of the King and kingdom: that he twice parted from the King, having refused to sign the answers: that, being put in fear of his life, what he had done proceeded not from his will, but was the effect of the threats of the Archbishop of York, the Duke of Ireland, and the Earl of Suffolk; and that he was sworn and commanded, in presence of the King, upon pain of death, to conceal this matter. He therefore prayed that, for the love of God, he might have a gracious and merciful judgment." The Commons replied, that "the Chief Justice and his brethren, now resorting to such shifts, were taken and holden for sages in the law; and they must have known that the King's will, when he consulted them at Nottingham, was, that they should have answered the questions according to law, and not, as they had done, contrary to law, with design, and under color of law, to murther and destroy the Lords and loyal lieges who were aiding and assisting in making the Commission and the statute confirming it, in the last parliament:—therefore, they ought all to be adjudged convicted and attainted as traitors."

CHAP. III.

The answer of the Commons.

The Lords Spiritual withdrew, as from a case of blood; and the Lords Temporal, having deliberated upon the matter, pronounced the following sentence: "That inasmuch as Sir Robert Belknappe and his brethren, now impeached by the Commons, were actually present in the late parliament when the said Commission and statute received the assent of the

The Lords Temporal pronounce Belknappe and his brethren convicted and attainted of high treason.

CHAP. III.

King and the three estates of the realm, being contrived, as they knew, for the honor of God, and for the good government of the state, of the King, and whole kingdom; and that it was the King's will they should not have answered otherwise than according to law; yet they had answered in manner and with the intent charged against them: they were, by the Lords Temporal, and by the assent of the King, adjudged to be drawn and hanged as traitors, their heirs to be disinherited, and their lands and tenements, goods and chattels, to be forfeited to the King."[1]

Richard himself sat on the throne during the trial, and was much shocked at this proceeding. But, to his unspeakable relief, as soon as the sentence was pronounced, the Archbishop of Canterbury and all the prelates returned, and prayed that "the execution, as to the lives of the condemned Judges, might be respited, and that they might obtain their lives of the King." This proposal was well relished, both by Lords and Commons;[2] and, after some consultation, the King ordered execution to be stayed, saying that "he would grant the condemned Judges their lives, but the rest of the sentence was to be in full force, and their bodies were to remain in prison till he, with the advice of the Lords, should direct otherwise concerning them."[3]

The Lords Spiritual petition for the lives of the condemned Judges.

The King's decision.

A few days afterwards, while the Parliament was still sitting, it was ordained that "they should all be sent into Ireland, to several castles and places,—there to remain during their lives; each of them with two

The sentence commuted for transportation to Ireland.

[1] 1 Parl. Hist. 197–211; 1 St. Tr. 89–123.

[2] "The Parliament considered that the whole matter was managed by Tresilian, and that the rest of the Judges were surprised and forced to give their opinion."—1 *Kennet*, 263.

This Parliament was rather unjustly called "The Merciless Parliament."—4 *Rapin*, 49. Others more justly styled it "The Wonder-working Parliament."—1 *Kennet*, 262.

[3] 3 Tyrrell, 630, 632.

servants to wait upon him, and having out of their lands and goods an allowance for their sustenance." Belknappe's was placed at the rather liberal sum of 40*l.* a year.[1]

He was accordingly transported to Ireland, then considered a penal colony. At first he was stationed at Drogheda, having the liberty of walking about within three leagues of that town.[2] He was subsequently transferred to Dublin; and, after he had suffered banishment for nine years, he had leave to return to his own country, and to practise the law in London.[3] This mitigation was at first complained of, as being contrary to a sentence pronounced in full Parliament—but it was acquiesced in; and, although the attainder never was reversed, King Richard, considering him a martyr, made him a grant of several of his forfeited estates.

Belknappe is allowed to return to England.

The King grants him several of his forfeited estates.

He never again appeared in public life, but retired

[1] "5th Nov. an. 13 Ric. II. To Sir Robert Belknappe, knight, who, by force of a judgment pronounced against him in the King's last Parliament assembled at Westminster, was condemned to death; and all and singular the manors, lands, and tenements, goods, and chattels whatsoever, which belonged to the aforesaid Robert, were seised into the King's hands, as forfeited to the King for the reason aforesaid: whereupon the said Lord the King being moved with mercy and pity, and wishing and being desirous of making a competent provision for the support of the same Robert, towards whom he was moved with pity, did remit and pardon the execution of the judgment aforesaid, at the request of very many of the prelates, great men of the estate, and other nobility of this realm, lately attending the said Parliament; and of his especial grace, with the assent of his Council, of the 13th day of July, in the 12th year of his reign, granted to the same Robert 40*l.* yearly, to be received during his life out of the issues and revenues of the manor lands and tenements aforesaid, to be paid by the hands of the farmers thereof for the time being, etc., according to an ordinance of the Parliament aforesaid. In money paid to him by the hands of Juliana his wife, viz., by assignment made to the same Juliana this day, 20*l.*, and in money counted, 20*l.* and—40*l.* (A list of the horses, with a description of them, belonging to the said Robert, is entered on this Roll.)"—*Devon's Issue Rolls*, 240.

[2] "Drouda et infra præcinctum trium leucarum circa dictum villam."—*Rymer*, vol. vii. 591.

[3] 3 Tyrrell, 959; 1 Kennet, 274.

CHAP. III.

into the country, and, reaching extreme old age, became famous for his piety and his liberality to the Church. By a deed bearing date October 8th, in the second year of King Henry IV., he made over a good estate to the Prior of St. Andrew in Rochester, to celebrate mass in the cathedral church there for ever, for the soul of his father John, of his mother Alice,

His death.

and for the souls of himself and all his heirs.[1] He died a few months afterwards.

His wife and her action at law.

He was married to Sibbella, daughter and heiress of John Dorsett, of an ancient family in Essex. Holding estates in her own right, these were not forfeited by her husband's attainder; and, bringing an action during his banishment for an injury done to one of them, the question arose, whether she could sue alone, being a married woman? But it was adjudged that, her husband being disqualified to join as a plaintiff, she was entitled to the privilege of suing as a *feme sole;* although Chief Justice Markham exclaimed,—

> "Ecce modo mirum, quod fœmina fert breve regis,
> Non nominando virum conjunctum robore legis."

His descendants.

The attainder was reversed in favor of Sir Hamon Belknappe, the Chief Justice's son. The male line of the family failed in a few generations; but the Stanhopes, the Cokes, and the Shelleys, now flourishing, are proud of tracing their pedigree to the Chief Justice, notwithstanding the ignominious sentence passed upon him.

There is only one other Chief Justice who flour-

[1] This estate still belongs to the Dean and Chapter of Rochester.—See Hasted's Kent, iii. 474.

[2] "How strange that a woman bears the writ of the King,
By not naming the man joined to her by the power of the law."

Lord Chancellor Ellesmere, in citing this decision in the case of the PASTNATI, states that Sir Robert Belknappe had been banished into Gascony "*relegatus in Vasconiam*," and that he continued there in the reign of Henry IV.—whereas Ireland was the place of his banishment, and he had been recalled by Richard II.—See 2 St. Tr. 559.

CHAP. III.

ished in the reign of Richard II. of sufficient eminence to be commemorated,—SIR WILLIAM THIRNYNGE, who pronounced upon that unfortunate monarch the sentence of deposition. The family of this great lawyer seems to have been unknown, both before and after his short illustration of it. He was made a Puisne Judge of the Common Pleas in the year 1388,[1] at a famous time for promotion in Westminster Hall,—one Chief Justice being hanged, and all the other Judges being cashiered, attainted, and banished.[2] He probably was not, previously, of much mark or likelihood, but he proved to be one of the most distinguished magistrates who ever sat on the English Bench, being not only deeply versed in his profession, but of spotless purity and perfect independence. On the death of SIR ROBERT DE CHARLETON, who had been appointed Chief Justice of the Common Pleas in the room of Belknappe, he succeeded to that office,[3] which he filled with high credit in three reigns.

Sir William Thirnynge, Chief Justice.

Puisne Judge of the Common Pleas. A.D. 1388.

His distinguished character.

There are many of his decisions to be found in the YEAR-BOOKS, but they are all respecting *aid-prayers*, *essoins*, and other such subjects, which have long been obsolete; and I must confine myself to the part he bore in an historical transaction which must ever be interesting to Englishmen.

His decisions.

A.D. 1399.

While we honor Lord Somers[4] and the patriots

[1] 11th April, Pat. 11 Ric. II. p. 2, m. 21.

[2] The salary of a Puisne could not have been very attractive to a barrister in good practice, for it was still only 40 marks a year:

"16th Oct., 19 Richard II. To William Thirnyng, one of the Justices of the Common Bench, receiving yearly 40 marks for his fee in the office aforesaid. In money paid to him by the hands of William Vaux, in discharge of 20 marks paid to him for this his fee. By writ, etc., 13*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.*"—*Dev. Issue Rolls*, 262.

[3] Pat. 19 Ric. II. p. 1, m. 1.

[4] John, Lord Somers, was born at Worcester, March 4, 1650. He was educated at Trinity College, Oxford, where he proceeded to the degree of M.A.; after which he studied in the Middle Temple, and was called to the bar. In 1688 he was one of the counsel for the seven bishops, and

CHAP. III.

Justification of the part he took in the deposition of Rich. II.

who took the most active part in the Revolution of 1688, by which a King[1] was cashiered, hereditary right was disregarded, and a new dynasty was placed on the throne, we are apt to consider the Kings of the house of Lancaster as usurpers, and those who sided with them as rebels. Yet there is great difficulty in justifying the deposition of James II., and condemning the deposition of Richard II. The latter sovereign, during a reign of above twenty years, had proved himself utterly unfit to govern the nation, and, after repeated attempts to control him, and promises on his part to submit to constitutional advice, he was still under the influence of worthless favorites, and was guilty of continued acts of tyranny and oppression; so that the nation, which, with singular patience, had often forgiven his misconduct from respect to the memory of his father and his grandfather, was now almost unanimously resolved to submit no longer to his rule.

Richard II.'s character.

Henry of Bolingbroke's qualifications for the sovereignty.

I therefore cannot blame Chief Justice Thirnynge for attempting to rescue the country from the state of confusion into which it had fallen, and to restore regular government under a new sovereign, who, although he was not next in succession according to the rules of

being chosen a member of the Convention Parliament, he distinguished himself at the conference of the two Houses on the question about the abdication of the throne. When the new government was established, he became, successively, Solicitor and Attorney General; and in 1693, Lord Keeper of the Great Seal. He was next raised to the peerage, appointed Lord Chancellor, and rewarded with lands in the county of Surrey. In 1700 he was deprived of the seals, and soon after impeached by the House of Commons; but a misunderstanding arising between the two Houses, the Lords pronounced a verdict of acquittal. Lord Somers projected the Union between England and Scotland, and was one of the managers appointed to carry that measure into effect. In 1708 he was made president of the Council; but went out of office again in 1710, after which he led a retired life, and died April 26, 1716. Lord Somers wrote some poems, and translations from Greek and Latin authors. Several political pieces are also ascribed to him.—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

[1] James II. was deposed, and William and Mary ascended the throne.

hereditary descent, was of the blood royal,—who was by birth the nearest to the throne of those who could be placed upon it in such an exigency,[1]—who, by his vigor and his prudence, had shown capacity to govern, —and to whom all classes of the community looked as their deliverer. Thirnynge neither gained nor expected to gain any personal advantage from the change, and he does not appear to have been actuated by any improper motive.

Henry of Bolingbroke[2] being, soon after his landing at Ravenspurg, *de facto* master of the kingdom, writs were issued in Richard's name for a new parliament to meet at Westminster on the 30th of September, when it was planned that there should be a formal transfer of the crown. Thirnynge certainly lent himself to this design, and was the principal agent in carrying it into effect. On the day before parliament was to assemble, he went with several other commissioners to the Tower of London,[3] where Richard was confined, to remind him of a promise he had recently made at Bristol that he would abdicate, and to obtain from him a formal renunciation of his rights. According to

The design as to the transfer of the crown.

Thirnynge's visit to Richard and its effect.

[1] The Earl of March, the legitimate heir after Richard II., was then a boy only seven years old.

[2] Henry of Bolingbroke, Duke of Hereford, afterwards Henry IV., eldest son of John of Gaunt, third son of Edward III., was born about 1366. By usurping the throne (1399), he gave rise to the long wars between the houses of York and Lancaster. Died March 20, 1413.—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

[3] Below Tower Hill, separated from it by a wide moat and ramparts now planted with gardens on the side of the town, is the immense pile of fortifications known as the *Tower of London.* No existing buildings are of earlier date than the *White Tower* or Keep which was built by William the Conqueror in 1078. Gundulph, Bishop of Rochester, the builder of Rochester Castle, was overseer of the work. He was surnamed "the Weeper," and appropriately "laid in tears the foundation of the fortress which was to be the scene of so much suffering." The Tower was much enlarged by William Rufus, of whom Henry of Huntingdon says, "He pilled and shaved the people with tribute, especially to spend about the Tower of London and the great Hall of Westminster."—*Hare's Walks in London*, vol. i. p. 368.

CHAP. III.

the account then published (which must be regarded with some suspicion), Richard spontaneously and cheerfully signed a paper, whereby he absolved all his subjects from their allegiance, and confessed himself to be "utterly insufficient and unuseful for rule and government."[1]

[1] Sir John Hayward says, that when Thirnynge and his companions came to the Tower, "the unhappy monarch was brought forth, apparelled in his royal robes, the diadem on his head, and the sceptre in his hand, and was placed among them in a chair of state." He adds, that, after a little pause, the King arose from his seat, and spoke to the following effect:

"I assure myself that some at this present, and many hereafter, will account my case lamentable; either that I have deserved this dejection, if it be just; or if it be wrongful, that I could not avoid it. Indeed I do confess, that many times I have showed myself both less provident and less painful for the benefit of the commonwealth, than I should, or might, or intended to do hereafter; and have in many actions more respected the satisfying of my own particular humor, than either justice to some private persons, or the common good of all; yet I did not at any time either omit duty or commit grievance, upon natural dulness or set malice; but partly by abuse of corrupt counsellors, partly by error of my youthful judgment. And now the remembrance of these oversights is so unpleasant to no man as to myself; and the rather because I have no means left, either to recompense the injuries which I have done, or to testify to the world my reformed affections, which experience and stayedness of years had already corrected, and would daily have framed to more perfection. But whether all the imputations wherewith I am charged be true, either in substance, or in such quality as they are laid; or whether, being true, they be so heinous as to enforce these extremities; or whether any other prince, especially in the heat of youth, and in the space of 22 years, the time of my unfortunate reign, doth not sometimes, either for advantage, or upon displeasure, in as deep manner grieve some particular subject, I will not now examine: it helpeth not to use defence, neither booteth it to make complaint; there is no place left for the one, nor pity for the other: and therefore I refer it to the judgment of God, and your less distempered considerations. I accuse no man, I blame no fortune, I complain of nothing; I have no pleasure in such vain and needless comforts; and if I listed to have stood upon terms, I know I have great favorers abroad; and some friends, I hope, at home, who would have been ready, yea forward on my behalf, to set up a bloody and doubtful war; but I esteem not my dignity at so high a price, as the hazard of so great valor, the spilling of so much English blood, and the spoil and waste of so flourishing a realm, as thereby might have been occasioned. Therefore, that the commonwealth may rather rise by my fall, than I stand by the ruin thereof, I willingly yield to your desires; and am here come to dispossess myself of all public authority and title, and to make it free and lawful for you to create for your King, Henry, Duke of Lancaster, my

CHAP. III.

Next day, when the Lords and Commons assembled in Westminster Hall, the throne being vacant, and Bolingbroke still sitting on the left side of it, occupying the uppermost place on the Dukes' bench, this resignation was produced and read. But, lest doubts should afterwards be started respecting its validity, on the ground that it was executed under *duress*, Thirnynge advised that articles should be exhibited, charging Richard with misconduct, whereby he had forfeited the crown, and that sentence of deposition should be formally passed upon him by the states of the realm. Accordingly, a sort of indictment was produced, consisting of no fewer than thirty-three counts, which charged the unhappy Richard with many very grave and some rather frivolous offences. We do not exactly see how this step materially legalized or formalized the proceeding, for he was never called upon to plead, and he had no opportunity of urging any defence. The Record that was made up, after setting forth the articles, thus proceeds:

30th Sept. 1399. Richard's resignation.

"And because it seemed to all the estates of the realm, being asked their judgments thereupon, as well severally as jointly, that these crimes and defaults were sufficient and notorious to depose the said King, considering also his own confession of his insufficiency, and other things contained in the said renunciation, the said states did unanimously consent that, *ex abundanti*,[1] they should proceed to a deposition of the said King."

Thirnynge and several other commissioners were then appointed to pronounce the deposition, and it was pronounced accordingly. Next followed a form which we should think very unnecessary and valueless, but to which great importance seems to have been attached:

Thirnynge is appointed to carry to Richard II. the renunciation of the allegiance of the nation.

cousin german, whom I know to be as worthy to take that place, as I see you willing to give it to him."

[1] "Out of the abundance."

CHAP. III.

"Furthermore," says the Record, "the said states, willing that nothing should be wanting which might be of value or ought to be required touching the premises, being severally interrogated thereupon, did constitute the same persons that were before nominated commissioners to be their procurators, jointly and separately, to resign and give back to the said King Richard the homage and fealty to him before made."

But, without waiting for this intimation, Bolingbroke, by Thirnynge's advice, seated himself on the throne, saying, "In the name of Fader, Son, and Holy Ghost, I, Henry of Lancaster, chalenge this rewme of Ynglonde and the croun with all the members and the appurtenances thereto belonging."

Although Henry now took upon himself the full exercise of royalty, and forthwith in his own name summoned the parliament to meet, still, to perfect his title, Thirnynge and his brother mandatories went next day to the Tower to resign to Richard the homage and fealty of the nation, and drew up with his own hand a report, still extant, of what then occurred, which is interesting both to the philologist and the historian, as it affords us a genuine specimen of the construction and orthography of our language in the fourteenth century:

"The Words which William Thirnyng spake to Monsire Richard, late King of England, at the Tower of London, in his chamber, on Wednesday next after the feast of St. Michael the Archangel,[1] were as follow:

The account of the manner in which he executed this commission.

"Sire,—It is wele know to zou,[2] that ther was a parlement somon'd of all the states of the reaume for to be at Westmystre, and to begin on the Tuesday in the morn of the fest of

[1] Michaelmas Day, Sept. 29, is a great festival of the Church of Rome, and also observed as a feast by the Church of England. In England it is one of the four quarterly terms, or quarter-days, on which rents are paid; and in that and other divisions of the United Kingdom, as well as perhaps in other countries, it is the day on which burgal magistracies and councils are reëlected.—*Chambers' Book of Days*, vol. ii. p. 387.

[2] It is curious that the letter *z* then in England, as long afterwards in Scotland, stood for the sound now denoted by *y*.

CHAP. III.

Thirnynge's report, continued.

St. Michel the Archangel, that was zesterday; by cause of the which summons all the states of this lond were there gadyr'd, the which states hole made thes same persones that ben comen here to zowe now, her procurators, and gaven hem full autorite and power, and charged hem for to say the words that we shall say to zowe in their name, and on their behalve; that is to wytten, the Bishop of Seint Assa for ersbishoppes and bishoppes, the Abbot of Glastenbury for abbots and priours, and all other men of holy chirche, seculers and rewelers, the Earle of Gloucestre for dukes and erls, the Lord of Berkeley for barons and banerettes, Sir Thomas Irpyngham, chamberleyn, for all the bachilers and commons of this lond be south; Sir Thomas Grey for all the bachilers and commons by north, and my felawe Johan Markham and me for to come with hem for all thes states. And so, sire, these words, and the doing that we shall say to zowe, is not onlych our wordes but the doyngs of all the states of this lond, and our charge in her name.—And he answered and said, that he wyste wele that we wold noght say but as we were charged.—Sire, ze remembre zowe wele that on Moneday, in the fest of Seint Michel the Archaungel, ryght here in this chamber, and in what presence ze renounced and cessed of the state of kynge and of lordeship, and of all the dignite and wyrship that longed thereto, and assoiled all zour leiges of her leigance and obeisance that longed to zowe uppe the fourme that is contened in the same renunciation and cession, which ze redde zour self by zour mouth, and affermed it by zour othe, and by zour owne writing. Upon which ze made and ordeined your procurators the Ersbishop of Zork and the Bishop of Hereford for to notifie and declare in zour name thes renunciation and cession at Westmynstre to all the states, and all the people that was there gadyr'd, bycause of the summons aforesaid, the which thus don yesterday by thes lords zour procuratours, and wele herde and understouden, thes renunciation and cession were plenelich and frelich accepted, and fullich agreed by all the states and people aforesaid. And over this, sire, at the instance of all thes states and people, there ware certain articles of defautes in zour governance zedde there, and tho wele herd and pleinelich understouden to all the states foresaid, hem thoght hem so trewe, and so notorie, and knowen, that by tho causes and by no other, as thei sayd,

CHAP. III.

and havyng consideration to zour own wordes in zour own renunciation and cession, that ze were not worthy, no sufficient ne able for to governe, for zour owne demerites, as it is more pleinelich contened therein; hem thoght that was reasonable and cause for to depose zowe, and her commissaries that they made and ordein'd, os it is of record, ther declared and decreed, and adjudged zow for to be deposed, and pryved zowe of the astate of king, and of the lordeship conteined in the renunciation and cession forsayd, and of all the dignite and wyrshippe, and of all the administration that longed thereto. And we procurators to all thes states and people forsayd os we be charged by hem, and by her autorite gyffen us, and in her name zelde zow uppe for all the states and people forsayd, homage, leige, and feaute, and all leigeance, and all other bondes, charges, and services thar long thereto, and that non of all thes states and people fro thys tyme forward ne bere zowe feyth, ne do zowe obeisance os to that king.—And he answered and seyd, that he loked not ther after, but he seyd, that after all this he hoped that is cosyn wolde be gude lord to hym."

When parliament again met on the 6th of October, under new writs from the Duke of Lancaster, without any change in the members,[1] Thirnynge gave an account of the manner in which he had executed his duty in surrendering the allegiance of the nation to the discrowned King; and then, the oaths being taken to Henry IV., the march of government proceeded as if the heir apparent had been proclaimed on the demise of his father.

He acts as Chief Justice under Henry IV.

Thirnynge received a new patent as Chief Justice of the Common Pleas, and continued to fill the office during the whole of this reign, without any increase to his dignity, but with ever-growing respect from the public. He did not again mix in politics, even so

[1] Afterwards the contrivance resorted to when a meeting of the states was wanted and could not be summoned by the King, whose authority was to be recognized, was to call the meeting a CONVENTION—and then, a King being put on the throne, to turn it into a Parliament by an act passed by his authority and that of the two Houses; as in 1660 and 1689.

much as Sir William Gascoigne, who became Chief Justice of the King's Bench. During the insurrections of the Percys and Owen Glendower,[1] he quietly continued administering justice at Westminster; and the only battles he witnessed were a few in Tothill Fields, between champions on trials of writs of right, when he and his brethren, attired in their scarlet robes, attended to see that the laws of the ring were observed, and to award the fruits of victory to the successful side. He was summoned to every parliament; but he merely gave his opinion on juridical questions, when consulted, for the guidance of the House of Lords. Although he was sworn a privy councillor, the King being his own minister, this was little more than an honorary distinction to him. CHAP. III.

Thirnynge, on the death of Henry IV., had the satisfaction to see his son's title universally acknowledged, and the Lancastrian line seemed for ever established on the throne. It was expected that this venerable magistrate would now be displaced to make way for some one recommended by the profligate A.D. 1413.

[1] Owen Glendower or Glendwr, a celebrated Welsh chieftain, born in Montgomeryshire about 1359, was descended from Llewellyn, Prince of Wales. He was early patronized by King Richard II., whom, however, he deserted before the deposition of that monarch. Being roused to resistance by the wrongs he himself and his country endured, he took up arms against Henry IV., and laid claim, about 1402, to the crown of Wales. The King soon after marched with an army against Glendower, who, without coming to an engagement, led them through mountainous tracts until, worn with fatigue and famine, they were forced to retreat. A second expedition undertaken by King Henry was likewise unsuccessful; and in 1402 Glendower gained a victory over the English near Knighton. Having assembled a large army, the King marched for the third time into Wales; and Glendower, unwilling to risk an encounter with so superior a force, retired to the mountains. With Mortimer and Henry Percy, surnamed Hotspur, he formed a conspiracy against the English King, who defeated their army near Shrewsbury in 1403. Having made a treaty with Charles VI. of France, Glendower again invaded the enemy's country, capturing a number of fortresses; but in 1405 he was defeated by Henry, Prince of Wales. After several attempts at negotiation, Glendower was pardoned; but he never submitted. He died about 1415.—*Thomas' Biog. Dict.*

CHAP. III.

companions of the new King when Prince of Wales; but he was continued in his office, with high compliments to his ability and integrity,[1] and he was again sworn of the Privy Council, along with the other faithful servants of the late King, who were thanked for having tried to repress the excesses of the heir apparent. Within a year he was attacked by a disease which compelled him to resign, and he expired long before the commencement of the fatal War of the Roses. Had this been foreseen, it would probably have induced him to advise his countrymen rather to submit to the capricious tyranny of Richard than to encounter the danger of a disputed succession, which was for many years to deluge the kingdom with blood.

His death.

I believe it is long since there were any *Thirnynges* in any part of England; and we have here an instance of a name being utterly extinguished,—while other families have multiplied so as to form a crowded population in extensive districts, and, by migrations, are found in the remotest parts of the kingdom.[2]

Sir William Gascoigne.

The great contemporary Judge who gave lustre to the reign of Henry IV. was SIR WILLIAM GASCOIGNE[3] —familiar to us all from the anecdote of his having committed the Prince of Wales to prison, and from being a conspicuous character in one of the most popular of the dramas of Shakspeare.

[1] Pat. 1 Hen. V. p. 1, m. 36.

[2] Of course I do not refer to names taken from trades, such as *Smith*, nor to patronymics, such as *Johnson*, which may have been assumed and borne by different families wholly unconnected in blood.

[3] I have preferred the more modern spelling of this name, but it is found spelt in more than twenty other different manners,—Gaskin, Gauscin, Gascoygne, Gascoinge, Gascoyn, Gascun, Gasken, Gaskyn, Gaskun, Gaston, Gastone, Gastoyn, Gastoynge, Gasquin, Guasquyne, Gawsken, Vascon, Guascoyn, Gaskoigne, and De Gasquone. For *Christian* name, "William" was the great patronymic in the family, perhaps in compliment to the Conqueror; and in their pedigree are counted 16 Williams lineally succeeding each other,—7 before, and 8 after, the Chief Justice.

SIR WILLIAM GASCOYNE.

From an original drawing taken from his Monument at Harwood in Yorkshire.

CHAP. III.

His origin and education.

He was born about the middle of the reign of Edward III., at Gawthorp, in the county of York, where his family—of Norman extraction—had been seated for several centuries. Instead of being distinguished, like his ancestors, for military prowess, his ambition was to be a profound lawyer and a great judge. While yet a boy, he was sent to the University of Cambridge, where he was initiated in grammar and philosophy; and, after a few years' residence there, he was transferred to the Inns of Court. Two of these (although their written records do not extend so far back) contend for the honor of having had him as a member. The Middle-Temple men assert that, according to certain traditions, he belonged to them; while the Gray's Inn[1] men rely upon the fact that his arms are to be found in a window in their hall, among those of the dignitaries of their society. He certainly devoted himself to the study of the common law with extraordinary zeal and perseverance. After a seven years' course, and many examinations and disputations to test his proficiency, he was admitted to practice as an "utter barrister."[2] From his learning and assiduity he was soon in considerable business; and among his clients was John of Gaunt, to whom he rendered valuable assistance, in managing the concerns of the Duchy of Lancaster.

His success at the bar.

[1] Gray's Inn Lane leads from the north of Holborn to *Gray's Inn*, which is the fourth Inn of Court in importance. It derives its name from the family of Gray de Wilton, to which it formerly belonged. Its vast pink-red court, with the steep roofs and small-paned windows which recall French buildings, still contains a handsome hall of 1560, in which, on all festal meetings, the only toast proposed is "the glorious, pious, and immortal memory of Queen Elizabeth," by whom the members of Gray's Inn were always treated with great distinction.—*Hare's London*, vol. i. p. 98.

[2] One recently admitted as barrister, who was accustomed to plead without the bar, as distinguished from the benchers, who were permitted to plead within the bar.—*Webster's Dict.*

CHAP. III.

Sept. 1398. When Henry of Bolingbroke[1] and the Duke of Norfolk, being about to engage in single combat in the lists at Coventry, were banished from the kingdom, Richard II. gave each of them power to name an attorney, or agent, who might claim and sue for any inheritance that should fall to them in their absence. Gascoigne was named attorney for the former, on the suggestion of the "time-honored Lancaster," who saw himself near the end of his long career, and was anxious that the best measures should be taken to secure his vast possessions for his exiled son. Richard, pretending to be very friendly to his uncle and his cousin, confirmed the nomination; and, out of compliment to them, appointed Gascoigne King's Sergeant, which placed him at the head of the Bar.[2]

He is appointed attorney to represent Bolingbroke, afterwards Henry IV.

Feb. 1399. His proceedings in this capacity on the death of John of Gaunt.

On the death of John of Gaunt, in the beginning of the following year, Gascoigne, as the attorney of his son, the Duke of Hereford, now Duke of Lancaster, sued in the Court of Wards and Liveries,[3] that seisin might be given to him of the Duchy and County Palatine of Lancaster and his other lands held of the Crown; offering to do homage, and swear allegiance, in the name of the absent heir: but Richard, being again in the hands of worthless favorites who wished to divide these spoils among themselves, declared a resolution to retain them in his own hands, at least till the ten years had expired for which the sentence of

[1] In 1398, Hereford accused Norfolk of having spoken slanderously of the King; and Norfolk denying the charge, the matter was to be decided at Coventry by trial of battle. Just as accuser and accused, armed and mounted, were about to set upon each other, Richard stopped the fight, and banished Hereford for ten years, and Norfolk for life.—*Thompson's Hist. of Eng.*, chap. 20, p. 117.

[2] Dugd. Chr. Ser.

[3] The Court of Wards was a court of record founded by 32 Henry VIII., c. 46, for the survey and management of the rights of the Crown over its wards. Being joined to the Court of Liveries by 33 Henry VIII., c. 22, it was called the Court of Wards and Liveries.—*Low and Pulling's Dict. of Eng. Hist.*.

banishment had been pronounced. Gascoigne presented a respectful memorial, reminding the King how his appointment as attorney for Hereford had been confirmed under the broad seal; and prevailed on the Duke of York[1] to remonstrate, in a speech of which the following is probably a pretty accurate report:

> "Take Hereford's rights away, and take from time
> His charters, and his customary rights.
> . . . how art thou a king,
> But by fair sequence and succession?
> Now, afore God (God forbid, I say true!),
> If you do wrongfully seize Hereford's rights,
> Call in the letters patents that he hath
> By his attorneys-general to sue
> His livery, and deny his offer'd homage,
> You pluck a thousand dangers on your head,
> You lose a thousand well-disposed hearts,
> And prick my tender patience to those thoughts
> Which honor and allegiance cannot think."

However, the fatal answer was given,—

> "Think what you will; we seize into our hands
> His plate, his goods, his money, and his lands."[2]

His authority as attorney for Bolingbroke is revoked.

Accordingly, a *supersedeas*[3] was passed under the Great Seal, revoking Gascoigne's authority to sue as attorney for the banished Duke; and the whole of his property, real and personal, was taken possession of as forfeited to the Crown.[4]

[1] Edmund Langley, son of Edward III., brother of the Black Prince and uncle of Richard II.

[2] Shaks. Rich. II., Act ii. sc. 1.

[3] In Law, a writ or command to suspend the powers of an officer in certain cases, or to stay proceedings. This writ does not destroy the power of an officer, for it may be revived by another writ called a *procedendo.—Blackst. Com.*

[4] The revocation of Gascoigne's authority to represent Henry was made one of the charges against Richard for which sentence of deposition was pronounced against him. "Art. 12. After the said King had graciously granted his letters patent to the Lord Henry, now Duke of Lancaster, that in his absence, whilst he was banished, his general attorneys might prosecute for livery to him to be made of all manner of inheritance or successions belonging to him, and that his homage should be respited paying a certain reasonable fine,—he injuriously did revoke the said letters patent, against the laws of the land, thereby incurring the crime of perjury."—1 *St. Tr.* 143.

CHAP. III.

Gascoigne sent intelligence of this outrage to the young Duke of Lancaster, who, as soon as he had made the necessary preparations, landed at Ravenspurg; at first only claiming his rights as a subject, but soon openly aiming at the crown.

He smooths Bolingbroke's way to royalty.

During the struggle, Gascoigne did not join Henry in the field, but, remaining in London, advised measures for aiding his cause; and, when the nation had declared for him, acted in concert with Chief Justice Thirnynge in smoothing his way to royalty.

He is appointed Chief Justice of the King's Bench.

Henry IV. being proclaimed King, one of the first acts of his reign was to appoint Gascoigne Chief Justice of the Court of King's Bench, and to confer upon him the honor of knighthood.[1]

Never was the seat of judgment filled by a more upright or independent magistrate. He was likewise celebrated for the soundness of his decisions. The A.D. 1400. early ABRIDGMENTS swarm with them;[2] but it is only to an antiquarian lawyer that they now possess any His many good traits. interest. Traits of disinterestedness, fortitude, and magnanimity, showing an enlightened sense of what is fit, and a determination, at every risk and every sacrifice, to do what duty requires, please and edify all future generations. Therefore, although the ashes of Sir William Gascoigne have reposed upwards of four centuries beneath the marble which protects them,

[1] See Dugd. Chr. Ser.—The exact date of Gascoigne's appointment to this office has not been ascertained; and some have deferred it for a year or two, chiefly on the ground that in the first parliament of Henry IV. the confession of John Hall, concerned in the murder of Thomas, Duke of Gloucester, by smothering him between two feather-beds at Calais, was taken by Sir Walter Clopton, who had been Chief Justice of the King's Bench in the reign of Richard II., and that the same Sir Walter Clopton was summoned to parliament the following year. But all this is consistent with his having been removed to an inferior judicial office; and Sir William Gascoigne's opinions as Chief Justice are to be found in the Year-Books from the very commencement of Henry's reign.

[2] See references to them in Gascoigne's Year-Book, part vi., reign of Hen. IV., and Life in the Biographia Britannica.

CHAP. III.

and although since his time there has been a complete change of laws and manners,—when we see him despise the frown of power, our sympathies are as warmly excited as by the contemplation of a Holt[1] or a Camden.[2]

A.D. 1405.

The first recorded instance of an independent spirit being displayed by him, to the wonder of his contemporaries, was when he attended Henry IV. to the north, to assist in putting down an insurrection, planned by Scrope the Archbishop of York and Thomas Mowbray, son of the banished Duke of Norfolk who had died abroad.[3] The King, having made these two rebels prisoners, directed Gascoigne, as Chief Justice of England, immediately to sit in judgment upon them, and, by his own authority, to sentence them to death. But, notwithstanding repeated solicitations, he peremptorily refused, saying, "Much am I beholden to your Highness, and all your lawful commands I am bound by my allegiance to obey; but

His refusal to try a prelate and a peer.

[1] Sir John Holt (*b.* 1642, *d.* 1710), English judge, was removed from the recordership of London under James II. for opposition to the repeal of the Test Act; was elected to the Convention Parliament, and after the Revolution made Chief Justice of the King's Bench and a Privy Councillor. He was offered the chancellorship in 1700, and left *Report of Divers Cases in Pleas of the Crown under Charles II.*—*Cassell's Biog. Dict.*

[2] Charles Pratt, Earl of Camden (*b.* 1713, *d.* 1794), English judge, called to the bar in 1738, became Attorney-General under Pitt, was appointed Chief Justice of the Common Pleas in 1762, and in that capacity declared general warrants illegal, granting Wilkes £1,000 damages, a course which rendered him extremely popular. In 1765 he was created Lord Camden, and was Lord Chancellor from 1766 to 1770. He disapproved of the taxation of the American colonies, and was always opposed to Lord North's administration. In 1782 he was made president of the Council, and in 1786 received the title of Earl.—*Cassell's Biog. Dict.*

[3] It is a curious fact that the military functions of the Grand Justiciar, although no longer belonging to the Chief Justice of the King's Bench, *virtute officii*, were sometimes specially assigned to him. Thus, in the rebellion of the Percys, two years before, Chief Justice Gascoigne had been sent to quell it, fortified with a commission of array, which empowered him to raise forces in the northern counties. The authority to press into the service extends to "'persons of what state, degree, or condition whatsoever."—*Rym Fœd.* vol. viii. 319.

CHAP. III.

over the life of the prelate I have not, and your Highness cannot give me, any jurisdiction. For the other prisoner, he is a peer of the realm, and has a right to be tried by his peers." A more obsequious agent was found in Sir William Fulthorpe, a worthless Puisne Judge, who, in the hope of seeing Gascoigne disgraced, and of succeeding to the office of Chief Justice, having placed himself on a high throne in the Archbishop's palace, called both the prisoners before him, and, without indictment, or form of trial, condemned them both to be beheaded. The sentence was immediately carried into execution.[1] When the Parliament was afterwards called upon to ratify this proceeding, the Lords said it demanded inquiry and deliberation; and the matter was thus laid at rest for ever.[2] It is pleasing to reflect that Fulthorpe was disappointed in his hope of promotion, and that the virtuous Chief Justice continued to hold his office with increased reputation.[3]

Sir William Fulthorpe.

A.D. 1408.

Still enjoying the confidence of the King, Gascoigne was employed by him "to treat and compound with, and offer clemency to, the adherents of the Earl of Northumberland; likewise to receive their fines, and pay them into the Exchequer."[4] At last, all the attempts of the discontented Barons were effectually defeated, and Henry's throne was as firmly established as if it had been based on hereditary right.

Irregularities of the Prince of Wales.

His chief anxiety now arose from the irregularities of his son, the Prince of Wales, who, having distinguished himself by military skill and bravery in the

[1] Rymer's Fœd. vol. viii. 319.

[2] A leprous disease, which soon after attacked the King, was supposed to be a visitation of Heaven upon him for the violent death of the Archbishop; while Judge Gascoigne received many blessings for refusing to be concerned in this sacrilege.—Stow's Annals, fol. 333; Mayd. Hist. Marty.; Richard Scrope, Ang. Sac. vol. ii. 370.

[3] Rot. Parl. iii. 606, viii. 605; Wals. 373; Hall, ii. 310.

[4] Rymer's Fœd. vol. viii. 520.

CHAP. III.

early part of the reign, had subsequently abandoned himself to dissipation, and had consorted not only with buffoons, but with persons accustomed to minister to their profligate expenses by forced contributions from travellers on the highways.

These excesses led to an event which drew great applause upon the Prince himself, on the King, and still more on Lord Chief Justice Gascoigne. But I must begin by showing that this is not a poetical fiction. Formerly, every thing recorded by historians was believed; now, every thing is denied or doubted; and the fact of the commitment of the Prince of Wales, afterwards Henry V., to the King's Bench prison, long considered as authentic as his victory at Agincourt,[1] has lately been referred to the same class of narrative as the landing of King Brute after the siege of Troy, or the exploits of King Arthur and the knights of the Round Table.[2]

A.D. 1410—1412. Story of his committing the Prince of Wales to prison; qu. whether it be authentic?

The only ground on which this scepticism rests is, that the story cannot be pointed out in any written composition given to the world till rather more than a century after Sir William Gascoigne's death. The objection would have been very strong if in his lifetime there had been newspapers, magazines, annual registers, and memoirs, detailing all the proceedings of courts of justice, and all the occurrences of political and private life, which can be interesting to any class of readers. Even in that case, a little consideration should be had of the probable unwillingness to proclaim to all mankind anecdotes discreditable to the heir apparent; and certainly several respecting George IV. when Prince of Wales, which have not as yet appeared in print, have been circulated in society, and may

[1] The battle of Agincourt in Picardy (1415) was gained by Henry V. against the French.—*Green's Hist. of Eng.*, vol. i. p. 509.

[2] See Tyler's Life of Henry V., vol. i. c. 16.

CHAP. III.

hereafter be related by grave historians. But during the fifteenth century,—although, from the Close Roll, the Pell Roll, and the Parliament Roll, we have minute information of the appointment of judges, the assembling and prorogation of parliaments, and other such matters as were considered "of record,"—many interesting events, the universal subjects of conversation when they occurred, long rested on tradition, and were orally transmitted by one generation to another, till a chronicler arose, who embraced the period to which they were ascribed, and who related them substantially as they happened, although he might be chargeable with some inaccuracy or exaggeration.

When and where first mentioned.

The first book in which there is an account of the imprisonment of Henry the Prince of Wales by Sir W. Gascoigne was printed in the year 1534; but no intervening writer could reasonably have been expected to relate it. We should remember that, during a great portion of this period, literature, which had made wonderful progress for half a century before, was nearly extinguished by the War of the Roses,[1] and that Sir Thomas More's History (ascribed by some to Cardinal Morton), the only historical work in the English language previously published, begins with the reign of Edward V.

Sir Thomas Elyot,[2] who thus narrates the transac-

[1] The Wars of York and Lancaster (called the War of the Roses, because the badge of the house of Lancaster was a red rose, and that of the house of York a white one) were a contest for power between Edmund Beaufort, Duke of Somerset, and Richard Plantagenet, Duke of York. Richard was killed in the battle of Wakefield, but his son Edward avenged his death in the battles of Mortimer's Cross and the second battle of St. Albans, and was enthroned King in Westminster Hall, March 4, 1461.—*Thompson's Hist. of Eng.*, chap. 23, p. 135.

[2] Sir Thomas Elyot, an English diplomatist and author, eminent for his profound learning, was sent by Henry VIII. on a mission to Rome about 1532, and to the court of Charles V. a few years later. He composed admired works entitled "The Governor" (1531) and "The Castle of Health" (1534). His "Latin Dictionary" (1538) passed through many editions. Died in 1546.—*Thomas' Biog. Dict.*

tion in his work entitled "THE GOVERNOR," dedicated to King Henry VIII., was no romancer, but introduces it as a true statement of facts, among other historical anecdotes which cannot be questioned:

Story as related by Sir Thomas Elyot.

"The moste renouned prince king Henry the fyfte, late kynge of Englande, durynge the lyfe of his father, was noted to be fiers and of wanton courage: it hapned, that one of his seruauntes, whom he fauoured well, was, for felony by him committed, arrained at the kynges benche: whereof the prince being aduertised and incensed by lyghte persones aboute him, in furious rage came hastily to the barre where his seruante stode as a prisoner, and commaunded him to be vngyued and set at libertie: whereat all men were abashed, reserved the chiefe Justice, who humbly exhorted the prince to be contented, that his seruaunt mought be ordred, accordynge to the aunciente lawes of this realme: or if he wolde haue hym saued from the rigour of the lawes, that he shulde obteyne, if he moughte, of the kynge his father, his gratious pardon, wherby no lawe or justyce shulde be derogate. With whiche answere the prince nothynge appeased, but rather more inflamed, endeuored hym selfe to take away his seruant. The iuge considering the perillous example and inconuenience that mought therby ensue, with a valyant spirite and courage, commanded the prince vpon his alegeance, to leave the prisoner, and depart his way. With which commandment the prince being set all in a fury, all chafed and in a terrible maner, came vp to the place of iugement, men thynking that he wold haue slayne the iuge, or haue done to hym some damage: but the iuge sittynge styll without mouing, declaring the maiestie of the kynges place of iugement, and with an assured and bolde countenaunce, had to the prince these wordes followyng:

"'Syr, remembre yourselfe, I kepe here the place of the kyng your soueraine lorde and father, to whom ye owe double obedience: wherfore eftsoones in his name, I charge you desyste of your wylfulnes and vnlaufull enterprise, & from hensforth giue good example to those, whyche hereafter shall be your propre subjectes. And nowe, for your contempte and disobedience, go you to the prysone of the kynges benche, wherevnto I commytte you, and remayne ye there prysoner

CHAP. III.

Elyot's narration, continued.

vntyll the pleasure of the kynge your father be further knowen.'

"With whiche wordes being abashed, and also wondrynge at the meruaylous gravitie of that worshypfülle justyce, the noble prince layinge his weapon aparte, doying reuerence, departed, and wente to the kynges benche, as he was commanded. Wherat his servauntes disdaynynge, came and shewed to the kynge all the hole affaire. Whereat he awhyles studyenge, after as a man all rauyshed with gladnes, holdynge his eien and handes vp towarde heuen, abraided, saying with a loude voice, 'O mercifull God, howe moche am I, aboue all other men, bounde to your infinite goodnes, specially for that ye haue gyuen me a iuge, who feareth nat to minister iustyce, and also a sonne, who can suffre semblably, and obeye iustyce!'"

Hall's version of the story.

Hall, whose Chronicle was published at the commencement of the reign of Edward VI., gives another version of the story, varying as to some particulars—in the same manner as he might vary from other writers in relating the battle of Bosworth. Says he—"For imprisonment of one of his wanton mates and unthrifty playfaires, the Prince strake the Chief Justice with his fist on his face; for which offence he was not only committed to streight prisone, but also of his father put out of the privie council and banished the court."[1]

Catlyne and Whiddin as witnesses.

I next call as witnesses two lawyers, very dull, but very cautious, men, Sir Robert Catlyne, Chief Justice of the King's Bench, and Sir John Whiddin, a Puisne Judge of that Court, in the beginning of the reign of Queen Elizabeth, who, sticking to the YEAR-BOOKS, probably had never read either Elyot or Hall, and who knew nothing of Gascoigne except by the sure traditions of Westminster Hall. Crompton, an accurate juridical writer, who then published a book entitled "Authoritie et Jurisdiction des Courts," in reporting a decision of the Court of King's Bench, says,—

[1] 4th ed. p. 46.

CHAP. III.

Whidden cites a case in the time of Gascoigne, Chief Justice of England, who committed the Prince to prison because he would have taken a prisoner from the bar of the King's Bench; and he, very submissively obeying him, went thither, according to order: at which the King was highly rejoiced in that he had a Judge who dared to minister justice upon his son the Prince, and that he had a son who obeyed him."

Catlyne, C. J., is then represented as assenting and rejoicing in the praises of his predecessor.[1]

The story represented on the stage.

The drama making rapid progress, and historical plays coming into fashion, there was soon after produced a very popular piece, with the title of "Henry the Fyfte, his Victories, containing the honorable battle of Agincourt, etc." The first act exhibits many of his pranks while he was Prince of Wales, with the scene between him and Chief Justice Gascoigne. The author follows Hall in supposing that a blow had actually been inflicted,—which I make no doubt was an exaggeration. Of one of the representations of this play we have a very amusing account in a book entitled "TARLETON'S JESTS," published in the reign of James I. The famous comedian of that name, who died in 1592, had been long the delight of the public in the part of the "Clown,"—disregarding the precept to "speak no more than was set down for him." But, though this was his *forte*, he could, on a pinch, take a graver character, and personate a Ghost or a Judge. It so happened that when "Henry the Fyfte" had drawn a crowded house, it was discovered that Lord Chief Justice Gascoigne had got so excessively drunk that he could not take his place upon the bench, and

Account in "Tarleton's Jests."

[1] 4th ed. 1594, p. 79. "Whidden vouche un case en temps Gascoign Chief Justice D'Englitierr, que commit le Prince (que voile aver pris un prisoner del barre in Banco Regis) al prison; que luy obey humblement, et ala auxi a son commandment; in que le Roy grandement rejoice in ceo quil avoit Justice que osast minister justice a son fits le Prince et que il avoit Fits que luy obey."

CHAP. III.

Tarleton agreed to "sit for him," still retaining his own part of the Clown, who, luckily, was not to appear in the presence of his lordship. The author, after intimating the difficulty into which the company had been thrown, and the expedient resorted to, thus proceeds:

The parts taken by Tarleton.

"In this play the judge on the bench was to receive a blow of Prince Henry, who was represented by one Knoll, another droll comedian of those times; and, when it was to be done, he struck the Chief Justice Tarlton such a swinging box on the ear as almost felled him to the ground, and set the whole house in an uproar of merriment. When 'Tarlton the Judge' went off, presently after entered 'Tarlton the Clown;' and, according to that liberty wherewith the players in those days were indulged, of intruding interrogatories of their own in the midst of their acting, he very simply and unconcernedly asked the occasion of that laughter, like one who was an utter stranger to it. 'O,' said another of the actors, 'hadst thou been here thou hadst seen Prince Henry hit the Judge a terrible box on the ear.' 'What! strike a Judge!' quoth Tarlton. 'Nothing less,' said t'other. 'Then,' replied he, 'it must be terrible to the Judge, since the very report of it so terrifies me, that methinks the place remains so fresh still on my cheek that it burns again.' This, it seems, raised a greater acclamation in the house than there was before; and this was one example of that extempore wit or humor for which Tarlton was so much admired and remembered many years after his death."

How the story is treated by Shakspeare.

The case which I advocate is, I think, materially strengthened by the evidence of WILLIAM SHAKSPEARE, who, in his historical plays, although very careless about dates, is scrupulously accurate about facts, and never introduces any which do not rest upon what he considered good authority; insomuch that our notions of the Plantagenet reigns are drawn from him rather than from Holinshed, Rapin, or Hume. On the faith of tradition, or of books which he had read, he evidently had in the truth of the story a strong belief, which is constantly breaking out.

Shakspeare's treatment of the story, continued.

Thus, when the Chief Justice is first seen at a distance, Falstaff's page says, "Sir, here comes the nobleman that committed the Prince for striking him about Bardolph."[1]

Again, on news arriving of the death of Henry IV. we have the following dialogue:

Ch. Justice. "I would his Majesty had called me with him:
The service that I truly did his life
Hath left me open to all injuries."
Warwick. "Indeed, I think the young King loves you not."
Ch. Justice. "I know he doth not; and do arm myself
To welcome the condition of the time;
Which cannot look more hideously upon me
Then I have drawn it in my fantasy.
Sweet princes, what I did I did in honor,
Led by the impartial conduct of my soul;
And never shall you see that I will beg
A ragged and forestall'd remission.
If truth and upright innocency fail me,
I'll to the King my master that is dead,
And tell him who hath sent me after him."

When the Prince enters, as Henry V., he thus addresses the Chief Justice:

"You are, I think, assur'd I love you not."
Ch. Justice. "I am assur'd, if I be measur'd rightly,
Your Majesty hath no just cause to hate me."
King. "No!
How might a prince of my great hopes forget
So great indignities you laid upon me?
What! rate, rebuke, and roughly send to prison
The immediate heir of England! Was this easy?
May this be wash'd in Lethe, and forgotten?"
Ch. Justice. "I then did use the person of your father;
The image of his power lay then in me:
And, as you are a king, speak in your state,
What I have done that misbecame my place,
My person, or my liege's sovereignty."
King. "You are right, Justice, and you weigh this well;
Therefore, still bear the balance and the sword:
And I do wish your honors may increase,
Till you do live to see a son of mine
Offend you, and obey you, as I did."[2]

It was imagined that the authority of Shakspeare

[1] Second Part of Henry IV., Act i. sc. 2.
[2] Second Part of Henry IV., Act v. sc. 2.

CHAP. III.

on this question was demolished, and a great triumph was claimed over him by the assertion that Sir William Gascoigne at this time could not feel any apprehension of the earthly consequences of any deed he had done in the body, as he was sleeping in his grave, having died some months before his patron, Henry IV.; but I shall hereafter prove to demonstration that Sir William Gascoigne survived Henry IV. several years, and actually filled the office of Chief Justice of the King's Bench under Henry V.[1]

Refutation of the claims of other Judges.

In the same reckless spirit of questioning what has long been taken for implicit truth, several who were not bold enough to deny that Henry V., when Prince of Wales, was committed to prison, have denied the honor of the act to Sir William Gascoigne, and have started other candidates for it. The "Devonians," who think that nothing great or good can have been done in England unless by a "worthy of Devon," taking advantage of the language of chroniclers who, trusting to the notoriety of the story, mentioned the judge only under the designation of the "Chief Justice," claim the commitment of the Prince of Wales for two of their countrymen, Chief Justice Hankford and Chief Justice Hody.[2] When I hear of high Devonian pretensions, I confess I am reminded of the

[1] Henry V., having become King by his father's death on the 20th of March, 1413, was crowned on the 9th of April following; and all historians, chroniclers, and biographers agree that the following day, when his Council was sworn in (for still the Kings of England were not considered as fully entitled to rule before their coronation), he made a speech in which he renounced his former lewd companions, he forgave his father's councillors who had offended him by trying to correct his faults, and he reappointed such of the Judges as had best done their duty and were most in his father's confidence.—See Wals. 382; Otturb. 273; Elm. 16. Trussell's Continuation of Daniel introduces Gascoigne's name, and makes Henry, after relating the commitment, thus conclude: "For which act of justice I shall ever hold him worthy of the place and my favor, and wish all my Judges to have the like undaunted courage to punish offenders of whatever rank."—Cited in Fuller's Worthies, 505.

[2] Prince's Worthies of Devon; Risdon's Worthies of Devon.

HENRY V.

From a Picture in the Possession of Queen's College, Oxford.

CHAP. III.

celebrated saying of Sergeant Davy, that "the oftener he went into the West, he better understood how the WISE MEN came from the East." In this instance it is quite certain that the pretension proceeds on gross ignorance and carelessness, for Sir William Hankford was not appointed Chief Justice of the King's Bench till some time after Henry V. had actually been on the throne, and (better still) Sir John Hody was not appointed Chief Justice of the King's Bench till many years after Henry V. had been in his grave, viz., the eighteenth year of the reign of his son and successor, Henry VI.[1]

Sir John Markham.

The same impossibility does not stand in the way of a claim set up for Sir John Markham by his descendants, on the strength of some supposed family papers which have not been communicated to the public. He was a Chief Justice from the 20th of Richard II. to 9th Henry IV.; but then he was Chief Justice of the Common Pleas, and, although the commitment is sometimes said to have been to the Fleet—the prison of that Court—it is quite clear that no arraignment of Bardolph, or any other associate of the Prince, could have taken place in the Court of Common Pleas, which has cognizance only of civil actions.[2]

I think I am now fully entitled to ask for a verdict in favor of my client, Sir William Gascoigne. For the honor of the profession to which I am proud to belong, I do feel anxious to establish the fact which has been taken for true by so many chroniclers, historians, moralists, and poets.

Merit of Sir W. Gascoigne in this transaction.

There was here no official insolence, or strain of jurisdiction, for the sake of gaining popularity. Independently of the *blow*, which may be safely disbelieved,

[1] Dugd. Chron. Ser.

[2] Baker's Chronicle says that the commitment was to the Fleet, but at the same time says that the arraignment of the Prince's servant, which gave rise to it, was at the King's Bench bar.

CHAP. III.

as inconsistent with the generous feeling by which Henry was actuated in his wildest moments,—he had insulted the first Criminal Judge, sitting on his tribunal,—and he had no privilege from arrest beyond that of a peer—which did not extend to such an enormity. But there had been no precedent, in the history of this or any other European monarchy, of a Temporal Judge, with delegated authority, for an insult offered to himself, sending to jail the son of the sovereign, who must himself mount the throne on his father's death,—to be detained there in a solitary cell, or to associate with common malefactors. We must remember that Gascoigne held his office *during pleasure*, and that, while by this act there seemed a certainty of his being dismissed, and made an object of royal vengeance, on a demise of the Crown,—there was a great danger of his incurring the immediate resentment of the reigning sovereign, who might suppose that the divinity which ought to hedge the blood royal had been profaned. Everything conspires to enhance the self-devotion and elevation of sentiment which dictated this illustrious act of an English Judge; and the noble independence which has marked many of his successors may, in no small degree, be ascribed to it:

Gascoigne's action without precedent.

> "While dauntless Gascoigne, from the judgment-seat
> To *justice* does make princely *power* submit,
> Dares tame by law him who all laws could break,
> And to a hero raise a royal rake:
> While we such precedents can boast at home,
> Keep thy Fabricius and thy Cato, Rome!"[1]

Probable time of the commitment of the Prince of Wales.

Shakspeare, who, although adhering to substantial facts, in dramatizing English history never minds anachronisms, even with respect to events that had happened very shortly before his own time,[2] represents the commitment of the Prince of Wales by Chief Jus-

[1] See Biog. Britan., title "Gascoigne."

[2] The play of King Henry VIII. abounds with them.

tice Gascoigne to have been before the insurrection led by Archbishop Scrope in the year 1405; but other authorities place it, with more probability, in the latter part of the reign of Henry IV., when the Prince had taken to dissolute courses from want of public employment, and had been dismissed from the Privy Council, —making way for his graver brother, John.[1]

Sir William Gascoigne's law reforms.

We do not read of any other remarkable achievement of the Chief Justice, except as a law reformer. There were heavy complaints in the House of Commons—which have continued down to our own time—that exorbitant fees were levied upon litigants by the officers of the different Courts. In consequence, Gascoigne instituted an inquiry upon the subject, and, with the concurrence of the other Judges, published a table of such fees as might be legally demanded.[2] A more general grievance was stated to be the multiplication of attorneys. In the reign of Edward I. there were only 140 in all England, and their number now exceeded 2,000. This was a proof of increasing population, wealth, and civilization; but a general cry arose "that the people were pilled by barrators and pettifoggers;" and there was, no doubt, a want of regulations to prevent the admission of improper persons into the profession, and to punish those who acted discreditably. To meet these evils, Chief Justice Gascoigne framed a statute, which was adopted by the legislature,—whereby attorneys were subjected to an examination before they were admitted; and, if convicted of any fraud, "should never after be received to make any suit in any Court of the King."[3] He

The multiplication of attorneys.

[1] See Hume, vol. iii. p. 86; Lingard, vol. iv. 319, vol. v. 2.

[2] Cotton's Records, p. 409.

[3] 4 Hen. IV. c. 18. The preamble (no doubt drawn by Gascoigne) affords a curious specimen of legislative language in those days: "Item pur pleusours damages et meschiefs quont advenuz devaunt ces heures as diverses gentz du Roialme par le grant nombre des attournees nient

CHAP. III.

likewise, with the assent of his brethren, promulgated a rule of Court that attorneys should be sworn every term "to deal faithfully, and make their ransom to the King's will."

A.D. 1412.

Besides administering justice to the parties who came regularly before his tribunal by judicial process, Gascoigne followed a practice which continued in use among Judges of the highest rank, down to the time of Sir Matthew Hale, in the reign of Charles II., of settling differences privately by arbitration, on the voluntary submission of the parties. We are minutely informed of the circumstances of one case thus referred to him, illustrating graphically the manners of the age:

Curious case in which he acted as an arbitrator.

"William Lord Roos complained to the King of Sir Robert Therwit, a Puisne Judge of the King's Bench, for not only unjustly depriving him of certain lands in the county of Lincoln, but for lying in wait with 500 men to seize and ill-use him. Sir Robert confessed his fault in using such violent means to assert his right, and offered to abide by the order of two Lords of the complainant's own kindred as to the mode of settling the dispute. They enjoined Sir Robert to make a great feast at Melton le Roos, the scene of the riot; that he should prepare two fat oxen, twelve sheep, two tuns of Gascogny wine, with other suitable provisions, and then assemble thither all such knights, esquires, and yeomen as had been his accomplices; that they should confess their misbehavior to the Lord Roos, crave his pardon, and make him an offer of 500 marks in recompense; that the Lord Roos should refuse their money, but pardon them, and partake of their dinner in token of his reconciliation; *and that the title to the land should be settled by that learned and revered Judge*, Sir William Gas-

sachantz naprises de la loye come ils soloient estre pardevant; ordeignez est et establiz que toutz les attournees soient examinez par lez Justices," etc.

Till the stat. West. 2, c. 10, allowing attorneys to be made to prosecute and defend an action, every suitor was obliged to appear in person, unless by special license under the King's letters patent.—3 *Blackst. Com.* 26.

COIGNE. We are not told what his award was; but we need not doubt that it did ample justice between the parties."[1] CHAP. III.

Having narrated all that I find interesting in the life of Lord Chief Justice Gascoigne, I have only to discuss the controverted question respecting the time of his death. Fuller (generally a trustworthy authority) fixes it on Sunday the 17th day of December, 1412, —vouching an inscription on the Judge's tomb;—and this date was long considered as irrevocably fixed,—writer after writer pointing out the flagrant violation of history by Shakspeare, in bringing the deceased Chief Justice on the stage along with King Henry V., and recording a dialogue between them.[2] Refutation of the assertion that he died in the reign of Henry IV.

But a difficulty arose from the 17th of December, 1412, having fallen not on a Sunday but on a Saturday. Then came a discovery, that in the summonses for a new parliament issued by Henry V. on the 22d of March, 1413, the day after he was proclaimed King, is found one to "Sir William Gascoigne, Knight, Chief Justice of our Lord the King, assigned to hold pleas before our Lord the King before the King himself." But as his name is not mentioned in the roll of the proceedings of the House of Lords, when Parliament met in the month of May following, it was supposed that this summons must be a mistake; and an assertion was made, that Sir William Hankford, his successor, had previously been appointed Chief Justice. Some who could not believe that the date 1412 was right, carried it on to 1413, when the 17th of December did fall on a Sunday; but still insisted, that Gascoigne never was Chief Justice of the King's Bench under Henry V., and that, being displaced on the demise of Henry IV., the story of his having committed the Prince of Wales to prison could receive no confirma- A.D. 1412—1419. His summons to Henry V.'s first parliament.

[1] Cotton's Records, anno 1411.

[2] See Gentleman's Magazine, vol. xli. p. 516.

CHAP. III.

tion from the dialogue at his supposed reappointment.

His will.

The matter, however, has been placed beyond all doubt by the discovery of the Chief Justice's last will and testament, in the registry of the Ecclesiastical Court at York. It bears date, according to the mode then in fashion of computing time, which Puseyites wish to revive, on "Friday after St. Lucy's Day, A.D. 1419." St. Lucy's Day that year fell on Wednesday, 13th of December; and, consequently, the will was made on Friday, the 15th of December. Probate was granted on the 23d of the same month. Consequently, the Chief Justice must have died on the 17th of December, 1419, which was that year again on a Sunday. The testator declares, that he was "weake in bodie, though of sounde and disposing minde and understanding."[1]

His death in 1419.

We must, therefore, inevitably come to the conclusion, that Sir William Gascoigne did survive Henry IV., that he was reappointed by Henry V., and that he was summoned as Chief Justice of the King's Bench to the first parliament of that monarch. The probability is, that soon afterwards, either being struck by some disease, or weakened by the infirmities of age, he voluntarily resigned his office, and spent his last years in retirement, preparing for the awful change which awaited him.

His last years.

On withdrawing from the Bench, he must have carried with him the respect of the profession and the public: and we know that he was still treated with courtesy and kindness by his young sovereign; for

[1] He does not designate himself as "late Chief Justice," but the identity of the testator with the Chief Justice is placed beyond all doubt by his mention of different members of his family, and particularly of his two wives; the latter of whom was then alive, and in her will, subsequently made and preserved in the same register, styles herself "widow of William Gascoyne, late Chief Justice."—See Tyler's Life of Henry V., vol. i. p. 376.

CHAP. III.

there is now extant a royal warrant, dated 28th November, 1414, the year after his retirement, granting to "our deare and well-beloved William Gascoigne, Knt., an allowance, during the term of his natural life, of four bucks and four does every year out of our Forest of Pontifract."[1]

The grant made to him.

He had an ample patrimonial estate to retire upon; and to such an extent had he increased his riches, that he lent large sums of money to the King.[2]

His loans to the King.

He was buried in the parish church of Harwood in Yorkshire, near Gawthorp.

A tomb was afterwards erected there to his memory, which represents him in a kneeling posture, in his Judge's robes, with a large purse tied to his girdle, a long dagger in his right hand, and his wives kneeling on either side of him.[3] A brass plate, affixed to it, bears an inscription, of which the following words are still legible:

His tomb and epitaph.

"Orate pro Gulielmo Gascoyne et Elizabethe et Johannæ uxoribus ejus.

"Hic jacet Gulielmus Gascoyne nuper Capitalis Justiciar. de Banco Henrici nuper Regis Angl.

"Obiit Die Dominica 17 Die. A.D. ——."[4]

The rest of the brass plate is wanting, and is said to have been torn off by one of Cromwell's soldiers during the civil wars.

His wife Elizabeth was the daughter and sole heiress of Sir Alexander Mowbray, of Rutlington, in

[1] See Tyler's Life of Henry V., vol. i. p. 379.

[2] The Pell Roll, 14th May, 1420, within half a year of his death, states the repayment to his executors of a sum which he had advanced without security to the Royal Exchequer.

[3] There is a good portrait of him from the monument, in the Gentleman's Magazine, vol. xli. p. 566.

[4] "Pray for William Gascoyne, and Elizabeth and Johanna his wives.

"Here lies William Gascoyne, lately Chief Justiciar of Henry, recently King of England.

"He died on the 17th day, A.D. ——."

The Gentleman's Magazine, vol. xli. p. 623, professes to give this inscription, but interpolates, after "A.D.," "1412, 14 Hen. Quatre."

CHAP. III.

His family and descendants.

the county of York; and his wife Joan was the daughter of Sir William Pickering, and relict of Sir Ralph Greystoke, one of the Barons of the Exchequer. By both of them he had a numerous issue; and several great families, still flourishing, trace him in their line. His eldest son, Sir William Gascoigne of Gawthorp, was one of Henry V.'s best officers, and gained high distinction, not only in the battle of Agincourt, but in the subsequent campaigns of Bedford [1] and Talbot.[2]

I must confess that I am proud of Sir William Gascoigne as an English Judge, and reluctant to bid him adieu for others of much less celebrity and much less virtue.

[1] John, Duke of Bedford, the third son of Henry IV., King of England. In 1422 he commanded the English army in France, and the same year was named regent of that kingdom for Henry VI., whom he caused to be proclaimed at Paris. He defeated the French fleet near Southampton, made himself master of Cotoi, entered Paris with his troops, and beat the Duke of Alençon, thus making himself master of France. He died Sept. 14, 1435, at Rouen, where a handsome monument was erected to his memory, which one of the courtiers of Charles VIII. advised him to destroy. "Let him rest in peace," answered he, "who, when living, made all the French tremble."—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

[2] John Talbot, Earl of Shrewsbury, second son of Richard, Lord Talbot, was born at Blechmore, Shropshire, 1373. In the first year of Henry V., he was appointed Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, where he suppressed a rebellion, and brought the chief, Donald M'Guire, to England. He next served in France, to the conquest of which he greatly contributed. In the next reign he laid siege to Orleans, where his name struck terror into the French soldiers, till the appearance of Joan of Arc as a supernatural being turned the scale, and the English army retreated. The battle of Patay completed the disaster, and Lord Talbot fell wounded into the hands of the enemy. At the end of three years and a half he was exchanged, and again led the English to victory. He took a number of strong places, and carried his arms to the walls of Paris, for which he was created Earl of Shrewsbury. In 1443 he concluded a treaty with the French King, and the following year went again to Ireland as Lord Lieutenant; but in 1450 he was recalled to serve in France, where he fell at the battle of Châtillon, July 20, 1453.—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

CHAPTER IV.

CHIEF JUSTICES TILL THE APPOINTMENT OF CHIEF JUSTICE FITZJAMES BY KING HENRY VIII.

CHAP. IV.

A.D. 1413.

Sir William Hankford.

SIR WILLIAM HANKFORD, the next Chief Justice of the King's Bench, although he was eminent in the law during three reigns, is hardly recollected for any thing he did in his lifetime, except the ingenious and successful manner in which he plotted his own death. He is one of the "Worthies of Devon" for whom his countrymen claim the merit of having committed the Prince of Wales to prison; and he certainly was born at Amerie in that county, whatever may be the share of glory which he confers upon it. Till the termination of his career, all that I can relate respecting him on authentic testimony is, that he was called Sergeant in the 14th of Richard II., was made a Puisne Judge of the Common Pleas in 21st of Richard II., was promoted to be Chief Justice of the King's Bench in 1st of Henry V.,[1] and was reappointed to that office in 1st of Henry VI.[2]

Becomes tired of life.

He had been a well-conducted man, but he was of a melancholy temperament, and he became tired of life, notwithstanding the high position which he occupied, and the respect in which he was held. He wished to shuffle off this mortal coil, but he was afraid to commit suicide in any vulgar way, at a time when

[1] There is some doubt as to the exact date of this promotion. It must have been subsequent to 22d March, 1413, when Henry V. issued writs for his first parliament, to which Sir William Gascoigne was summoned; and prior to 1st December, 1413, for on that day writs were issued for a new parliament to meet on the 29th of January following, and to this Sir William Hankford is summoned as Chief Justice.

[2] Dugd. Chr. Ser.

CHAP. IV.

a verdict of *felo de se*[1] always followed such an act, and the body of the supposed delinquent was buried in a cross-road with a stake thrust through it. He at last resorted to this novel expedient, by which he hoped not only that the forfeiture of his goods would be saved, but that his family would escape the anguish and the shame arising from the belief that he had fallen by his own hand. Several of his deer having been stolen, he gave strict orders to his keeper to shoot any person met with in or near the park, at night, who would not stand when challenged. He then, in a dark night, threw himself in the keeper's way, and, refusing to stand when challenged, was shot dead upon the spot. "This story" (says Prince, the author of WORTHIES OF DEVON[2]) "is authenticated by several writers, and the constant traditions of the neighborhood; and I, myself, have been shown the rotten stump of an old oak under which he is said to have fallen, and it is called HANKFORD'S OAK to this day."

His ingenious suicide.

His monument and epitaph.

His monument stands in Amerie church, with the following epitaph inscribed upon it:

> "Hic jacet Will. Hankford, Miles, quondam Capitalis Justiciarius Domini R. de Banco, qui obiit duodecimo Die Decembris Anno Domin. 1422."[3]

His figure is portrayed kneeling; and out of his mouth, in a label, these two sentences proceed:

1. "Miserere mei Deus, secundum magnam misericordiam tuam!"
2. "Beati qui constodiunt judicium et faciunt justitiam omni tempore."[4]

Fuller, in a true Christian spirit, adds: "No chari-

[1] In Law, one who commits felony by suicide or deliberately destroys his own life.—*Webster's Dict.*

[2] Page 362.

[3] "Here lies William Hankford, Knight, formerly Chief Justice of the King's Bench, who died on the twelfth day of December, A.D. 1422."

[4] 1. "Have pity upon me, O God, according to thy great mercy!"
2. "Happy are they who defend and perform justice at all times."

COURT OF KING'S BENCH

[illegible] HENRY VI.

[illegible] FROM A CONTEMPORARY [illegible]

table reader, for one unadvised act, will condemn his memory, who, when living, was habited with all requisites for a person of his place."[1]

During the reign of Henry V., the nation, intent on the conquest of France, paid little attention to the administration of justice or domestic policy, and for the first twenty years of the reign of Henry VI. the office of Chief Justice of the King's Bench continued to be held by very obscure men,—SIR WILLIAM CHEYNE,[2] SIR JOHN IVYN,[3] and SIR JOHN HODY,[4]—who seem decently to have discharged their judicial duties, without gaining distinction either by decisions or law reforms, and without mixing in any of the political struggles which agitated the country. The reader will therefore willingly excuse me from inquiring into their birth, their education, their marriages, and their places of sepulture.

A.D. 1422—1442.

Obscure Chief Justices passed over.

[1] Fuller, i. 281.

[2] 21st January, 1424–5.

Sir William Cheyne (*d.* 1438 ?), Judge, was recorder of London as early as 1378–9, but does not appear as a pleader before 1406–7, after which date his name occurs in the Year-Books in that character with some frequency until 1410, when he was called to the degree of Sergeant-at-law. Five years later he was appointed to a judgeship in the King's Bench, which he retained on the accession of Henry VI. (1422), and exchanged for the Chief Justiceship of the same bench in 1424. In 1425–6 he was knighted. The Escheat Rolls do not enable us to fix the date of his death even approximately.—*Dict. Nat. Biog.*

[3] 20th January, 1439–40.

[4] 13th April, 1440. It would seem that in his time the Judges' salaries had been thought to require an increase, as we meet with this entry: "Johannes Hody Capitalis Justic. habet CXL marcas annuas sibi concessas, ad statum suum *decentius* manutenendum." ["John Hody, Chief Justice, has 140 marks granted to him yearly for his decent maintenance."] —Pat. 18 Henry VI. p. 3. m. 5.

Sir John Hody was born of an old Devonshire family. From 1425 his name often occurs in the Year-Books, and he must have become a Sergeant-at-law before 1436, for in that year he contributed as a Sergeant to the equipment of the army sent into France. He represented Shaftesbury in Parliament in 1423, 1425, 1428, and 1438, and the county of Somerset in 1434 and 1440. On April 13, 1440, he succeeded Sir John Ivyn as Chief Justice of the King's Bench, and died in December, 1441. Coke ("Institutes," Pref.) says he was one of the "famous and expert sages of the law" who assisted Lyttleton.—*Dict. Nat. Biog.*

CHAP. IV.

A.D. 1442. Sir John Fortescue.

Next comes one of the most illustrious of Chief Justices, SIR JOHN FORTESCUE,[1] for ever to be had in remembrance for his judicial integrity, and for his immortal treatise DE LAUDIBVS LEGVM ANGLIÆ.[2] But, as he held the Great Seal of England while in exile, although he never filled the "marble chair" in Westminster Hall, I have already sounded his praise to the best of my ability in the LIVES OF THE CHANCELLORS.[3]

He held the office of Chief Justice above twenty years with universal applause. During the latter half of this period the War of the Roses was raging; and he, being a devoted Lancastrian, not only sat in judgment on Yorkists when indicted before him, but valiantly met them in the field. At last, after the fatal battle of Towton,[4] where he fought by the side of Morton, afterwards Archbishop of Canterbury, he fled into Scotland, and, Edward IV. being placed on the throne,

March, 1461.

[1] 25th Jan. 1442–3.

John Fortescue is one of the "Worthies" of the county of Devon, of whom it may be justly proud. The family traces its origin, without the loss of a single link, to the knight who bore the shield before William the Norman on his invasion of England, the assumed name commemorating the fact. His son Sir Adam, who was with him in the battle, received as the reward of their joint services, among other lands, the manor of Wimondeston or Winstone in the parish of Modberry, Devon. King John confirmed the grant, and it remained in possession of the family till the reign of Queen Elizabeth. John Fortescue is supposed to have been born at Norreis, the estate of his mother. The date of his birth must have been about the close of the fourteenth century. He received his education at Exeter College, Oxford, and pursued his legal studies at Lincoln's Inn, where he was a governor of the house from 1424 to 1429. (Dugdale's Orig. 257.) So conspicuous were his merits that he was, without taking any intermediate step, raised to the office of Chief Justice of the King's Bench on January 25, 1442. In that court we have proof from the Year-Books that he presided till Easter Term, 1460, and no new Chief Justice is recorded until Edward IV. a few months afterwards seized the throne. —*Foss's Lives of the Judges of Eng.*

[2] "Concerning the Merits of the Laws of England."

[3] Vol. i. ch. xxii.

[4] Edward IV. defeated the Lancastrian army at Towton, near Tadcaster, 1461.

CHAP. IV.

Sir John Markham.

he was superseded by a Yorkist Chief Justice. This was SIR JOHN MARKHAM,[1] of whom some particulars are known which may not be uninteresting.

He was descended from an ancient family (the Markhams of that ilk) who had been seated at Markham in Nottinghamshire from time immemorial, possessing a small estate which had remained without addition or diminution for many generations. John, born in the reign of Henry IV., not contented to plough his paternal acres without being (although entitled to coat-armor) more wealthy than yeomen and merchants who lived near him, determined to eclipse his ancestors by following the law, which was now becoming the highway to riches and distinction. Having been called to the bar when very young, by great industry, joined to great sharpness, he soon got into extensive practice, and began to realize the prospects which had dazzled him when a boy. In the year 1444 he was placed at the head of his profession by being made King's Sergeant, and soon after accepted the office of a Puisne Judge of the Court of King's Bench, probably hoping ere long to reach the dignity of a chiefship. Such hopes, however, are often delusive. He remained a *puisne* nineteen years, and would have died a *puisne* but for the civil war which broke out respecting the right to the crown. He took, very honestly, a different view of the controversy from his chief, Sir John Fortescue, who had actually written pamphlets to prove that Richard II. was rightfully deposed, that Henry IV. had been called to the throne by the estates of the kingdom and the almost unanimous voice of the people, and that now, in the third generation, the title of the house of Lancaster could not be questioned by any reasonable politician or any good citizen.

His professional progress.

A.D. 1442—1462.

He is a Puisne Judge.

[1] 13th May, 1462.

CHAP. IV.

Markham did not venture to publish any thing on the other side, but in private conversation, and in "moots" at the Temple, such as that in which the white and red roses were chosen as the emblems of the opposite opinions, he did not hesitate to argue for indefeasible hereditary right, which no length of possession could supersede, and to contend that the true heir of the crown of England was Richard, Duke of York, descended from the second son of Edward III. His sentiments were well known to the Yorkist leaders, and they availed themselves of the legal reasoning and the historical illustrations with which he furnished them. He never sallied forth into the field, even when, after the death of Richard, the gallant youth his eldest son displayed the high qualities which so wonderfully excited the energies of his partisans. However, when Henry VI. was confined as a prisoner in the Tower, and Fortescue and all the Lancastrian leaders had fled, Markham was very naturally and laudably selected for the important office of Chief Justice of the King's Bench. Although he was such a strong *Legitimist*, he was known not only to be an excellent lawyer, but a man of honorable and independent principles. The appointment, therefore, gave high satisfaction, and was considered a good omen of the new *régime*.

He sides with the house of York.

He is appointed Chief Justice of the King's Bench.

A.D. 1462—1469.

He held the office above seven years, with unabated credit. Not only was his hand free from bribes, but so was his mind from every improper bias. An old author relates the following anecdote, to illustrate his purity and his good humor:

His impartiality.

"A lady would traverse a suit of law against the will of her husband, who was contented to buy his quiet by giving her her will therein, though otherwise persuaded in his judgment the cause would go against her. This lady, dwelling in the shire town, invited the Judge to dinner, and (though

thrifty enough herself) treated him with sumptuous entertainment. Dinner being done, and the cause being called, the Judge clearly gave it against her. And when, in passion, she vowed never to invite Judge again, 'Nay, wife,' said he, 'vow never to invite a *just judge* any more.'"[1]

It was allowed that, when sitting on the bench, no one could have discovered whether he was Yorkist or Lancastrian; the adherents of the reigning dynasty complaining (I dare say very unjustly), that, to obtain a character for impartiality, he showed a leaning on the Lancastrian side.[2]

His conduct on the trial of Sir Thomas Cooke.

At last, though he cherished his notions of hereditary right with unabating constancy, he forfeited his office because he would not prostitute it to the purpose of the King and the Ministers in wreaking their vengeance on the head of a political opponent. Sir Thomas Cooke, who inclined to the Lancastrians, though he had conducted himself with great caution, was accused of treason, and committed to the Tower. To try him, a special commission was issued, over which Lord Chief Justice Markham presided, and the Government was eager for a conviction. But all that could be proved against the prisoner was, that he entered into a treaty to lend, on good security, a sum of 1000 marks, for the use of Margaret, the Queen of the dethroned Henry VI. The security was not satisfactory, and the money was not advanced. The Chief Justice ruled that this did not amount to treason, but was at most misprision of treason.[3] Of this last offence the prisoner being found guilty, he was sub-

His ruling does not meet the King's wishes.

[1] Fuller, ii. 248.

[2] Fuller, in praising Fortescue and Markham, says, "These I may call two Chief Justices of the Chief Justices, for their signal integrity; for though the one of them favored the HOUSE OF LANCASTER, and the other of YORK, in the titles to the crown, both of them favored the HOUSE OF JUSTICE in matters betwixt party and party."

[3] Misprision of treason consists in a bare knowledge and concealment of treason without consenting to it.—*Blackst. Com.*

CHAP. IV.

jected to fine and imprisonment, but he saved his life and his lands. King Edward IV. was in a fury, and, swearing that Markham, notwithstanding his high pretensions to loyalty, was himself little better than a traitor, ordered that he should never sit on the bench any more; and appointed in his place a successor, who, being a *puisne*, had wished to trip up the heels of his chief, and had circulated a statement, to reach the King's ear, that Sir Thomas Cooke's offence was a clear overt act of high treason.[1] Markham bore his fall with much dignity and propriety,—in no respect changing his principles, or favoring the movement which for a season restored Henry VI. to the throne after he had been ten years a prisoner in the Tower. Fuller says, "John Markham, being ousted of his Chief Justiceship, lived privately but plentifully the remainder of his life, having fair lands by his marriage with an heiress, besides the estate he acquired by his practice and his paternal inheritance."

He is dismissed from his office. 23d Jan. 1470.

His death.

The ex-Chief Justice died some time after the restoration of Edward IV., and was buried in Markham church, a gravestone being placed over his remains, with this simple inscription:

"Orate pro anima Johannis Markham Justiciarii."[2]

His character.

For ages after his death he was held up as the pattern of an upright judge. Thus Sir Nicholas Throckmorton,[3] when tried before Lord Chief Justice Bromley, in the reign of Elizabeth, said,—

"I would you, my Lord Chief Justice, should incline your

[1] Stow says that he lost his office through the Lord Rivers and the Duchess of Bedford: p. 420. Markham's dismissal has been connected with two other celebrated trials for treason in the reign of Edward IV., but it is quite clear that neither of them took place before him.—See 1 St. Tr. 894; 1 Hale's Pleas of Crown, 115.

[2] "Pray for the soul of John Markham, Justiciar."

[3] Sir Nicholas Throckmorton (*b. circa* 1513, *d.* 1571), English diplomatist; was sent by Elizabeth as ambassador to France and to Mary, Queen of Scots.—*Cassell's Biog. Dict.*

judgments rather after the example of your honorable predecessors, Justice Markham and others, which did eschew corrupt judgments, judging directly and sincerely after the law, and in principles in the same, than after such men as, swerving from the truth, the maxim, and the law, did judge corruptly, maliciously, and affectionately."[1] CHAP. IV.

Upon the dismissal of Sir John Markham, Edward IV., who no longer showed the generous spirit which had illustrated his signal bravery while he was fighting for the crown, and now abandoned himself by turns to voluptuousness and cruelty, tried to discover the fittest instrument that could be found for gratifying his resentments by a perversion of the forms of law, and with felicity fixed upon SIR THOMAS BILLING, who, by all sorts of meannesses, frauds, and atrocities,—aided by natural shrewdness, or, rather, low cunning,—had contrived to raise himself from deep obscurity to be a Puisne Judge of the King's Bench; and in that situation had shown himself ready to obey every mandate, and to pander to every caprice of those who could give him still higher elevation. This is one of the earliest of the long list of politico-legal adventurers who have attained to eminence by a moderate share of learning and talent, and an utter want of principle and regard for consistency. Sir Thomas Billing. His character.

His family and the place of his education are unknown.[2] He was supposed to have been the clerk of an attorney; thus making himself well acquainted with the rules of practice, and the less reputable parts of the law. However, he contrived (which must have been a difficult matter in those days, when almost all who were admitted at the Inns of Court were young His obscure origin.

[1] 1 St. Tr. 894.

[2] Fuller says that he was born in Northamptonshire, and held lands at Ashwell in that county; but is silent both as to his ancestors and descendants, and is evidently ashamed of introducing such a character among "Worthies."

CHAP. IV.

men of good birth and breeding) to keep his terms and to be called to the bar. He had considerable business, although not of the most creditable description; and in due time he took the degree of the coif.

A.D. 1450.

He starts as a Lancastrian.

His ambition grew with his success, and nothing would satisfy him but official preferment. Now began the grand controversy respecting the succession to the crown; and the claim to it through the house of Mortimer, which had long been a mere matter of speculation, was brought into formidable activity in the person of Richard, Duke of York. Billing,—thinking that a possession of above half a century must render the Lancastrian cause triumphant, notwithstanding the imbecility of the reigning sovereign,—was outrageously loyal. He derided all objections to a title which the nation had so often solemnly recognized; enlarging on the prudence of Henry IV., the gallantry of Henry V., and the piety of the holy Henry VI., under whose mild sway the country now flourished,—happily rid of all its continental dependencies. He even imitated the example of Sir John Fortescue, and published a treatise upon the subject; which he concluded with an exhortation "that all who dared, by act, writing, or speech, to call in question the power of Parliament to accept the resignation of Richard II., or to depose him for the crimes he had committed and to call to the throne the member of the royal family most worthy to fill it according to the fashion of our Saxon ancestors, should be proceeded against as traitors." This so pleased Waynflete[1] the

His treatise.

[1] William Waynflete, a prelate and statesman, was the son of Richard Patten, or Barbour, of Waynflete, Lincolnshire. He was educated at Winchester School and at Oxford. About 1429 he became master of the school where he had been bred; but Henry VI. prevailed upon him to remove to his new foundation at Eton, of which he was made provost, 1442. Five years afterwards he succeeded Cardinal Beaufort in the bishopric of Winchester, and in 1456 he was made Lord Chancellor, which office he resigned in 1460. He died Aug. 11, 1486, and was interred in

CHAP. IV.

Chancellor, and the other Lancastrian leaders, that Billing was thereupon made King's Sergeant, and knighted.

He is made King's Sergeant. A.D. 1458. A.D. 1460.

When the right to the crown was argued, like a peerage case, at the bar of the House of Lords,[1] Billing appeared as counsel for Henry VI., leading the Attorney and Solicitor General; but it was remarked that his fire had slackened much, and he was very complimentary to the Duke of York, who, since the battle of Northampton,[2] had been virtually master of the kingdom.

We know nothing more of the proceedings of this unprincipled adventurer till after the fall of Duke Richard,[3] when the second battle of St. Albans had placed his eldest son on the throne. Instantly Sir Thomas Billing sent in his adhesion; and such zeal did he express in favor of the new dynasty, that his patent of King's Sergeant was renewed, and he became principal law adviser to Edward IV. When Parliament assembled, receiving a writ of summons to the House of Lords, he assisted in framing the acts by which Sir John Fortescue and the principal Lancastrians, his patrons, were attainted, and the three last reigns were pronounced tyrannical usurpations. He likewise took an active part in the measures by which the persevering efforts of Queen Margaret[4] to regain

A.D. 1461.

He goes over to the Yorkists.

A.D. 1463.

the cathedral of Winchester. Bishop Waynflete founded Magdalen College, Oxford, and a free school in his native town.

[1] Lives of Chancellors, vol. i. ch. xxii.

[2] In 1460, the royal army was defeated at Northampton by the Yorkists.—*Green's Hist. of Eng.*, vol. i. p. 538.

[3] Richard, Duke of York, was defeated and slain at Wakefield.

[4] For three years Margaret and her friends, flitting between England, Scotland, and the Continent, maintained a fitful struggle in the north. The Lancastrians were at last crushed for a time by the defeats of Hedgeley Moor, near Wooler, and Hexham. King Henry, after this last defeat, lay for more than a year hidden in Lancashire and Westmoreland, but was finally betrayed and brought prisoner to the Tower.—*Thompson's Hist. of Eng.*, chap. 24, p. 139.

CHAP. IV.

her ascendency were disconcerted, and Henry VI. was lodged a close prisoner in the Tower of London.

Sir John Markham, the honorable and consistent Yorkist, now at the head of the administration of the criminal law, was by no means so vigorous in convicting Lancastrians, or persons suspected of Lancastrianism, as Edward and his military adherents wished; and when state prosecutions failed, there were strong murmurs against him. In these Mr. Sergeant Billing joined, suggesting how much better it would be for the public tranquillity if the law were properly enforced. It would have appeared very ungracious as well as arbitrary to displace the Chief Justice who had been such a friend to the house of York, and was so generally respected. That there might be one Judge to be relied upon, who might be put into commissions of oyer and terminer, Billing was made a Puisne Justice of the Court of King's Bench. He was not satisfied with this elevation, which little improved his position in the profession; but he hoped speedily to be on the woolsack,[1] and he was resolved that mere scruples of conscience should not hold him back.

His schemes against Markham.

He is made a Puisne Judge. A.D. 1465.

Trials for treason before him.

Being thus intrusted with the sword of justice, he soon fleshed it in the unfortunate *Walter Walker*, indicted before him on the statute 25 Edward III., for compassing and imagining the death of the King. The prisoner kept an inn called the CROWN, in Cheapside,[2]

[1] The seat of the Lord Chancellor of England in the House of Lords, being a large, square bag of wool, without back or arms, covered with red cloth.—*Webster's Dict.*

[2] Before the time of the Commonwealth, Cheapside, with its avenue of stately buildings, and its fountains and statues dispersed at intervals down the centre of the street, cannot have been unlike the beautiful Maximilian's Strasse of Augsburg. Opposite the entrance of Foster Lane stood "the Little Conduit." Then, opposite the entrance of Wood Street rose the beautiful Cheapside Cross, one of the nine crosses erected by Edward I. to Queen Eleanor. It was gilt all over for the arrival of Charles V. in 1522; again for the coronation of Henry VIII. and Anne Boleyn; again for the coronation of Edward VI., and again for the arrival of the Span-

in the City of London; and was obnoxious to the Government because a club of young men met there who were suspected to be Lancastrians, and to be plotting the restoration of the imprisoned King. But there was no witness to speak to any such treasonable consult; and the only evidence to support the charge was, that the prisoner had once, in a merry mood, said to his son, then a boy, "Tom, if thou behavest thyself well, I will make thee heir to the CROWN."

The case of Walker.

Counsel were not allowed to plead in such cases then, or for more than three centuries after; but the poor publican himself urged that he never had formed any evil intention upon the King's life,—that he had ever peaceably submitted to the ruling powers,—and that though he could not deny the words imputed to him, they were only spoken to amuse his little boy, meaning that he should succeed him as master of the Crown Tavern, in Cheapside, and, like him, employ himself in selling sack.

Mr. Justice Billing, however, ruled—

Billing's ruling.

"That upon the just construction of the Statute of Treasons, which was only declaratory of the common law, there

ish Philip. In 1581 it was "broken and defaced." In 1595 and 1600 it was "fastened and repaired," and it was finally destroyed in 1643, when Evelyn went to London on May 2 and "saw the furious and zealous people demolish that stately cross in Cheapside." Beyond the cross, at the entrance of Poultry, stood "the Great Conduit," where Jack Cade beheaded Lord Saye and Sele. It was erected early in the thirteenth century. Here, on the site of many executions, the most beautiful young girls in London, standing garland-crowned, prophetically welcomed Anne Boleyn. Here also Lady Jane Grey was proclaimed Queen; and here stood the pillory in which Defoe was placed for his second punishment, receiving all the time a triumphant ovation from the people. Lastly, at the entrance of Poultry stood "the Standard in Chepe," where Stapleton, Bishop of Exeter, was beheaded in the time of Edward II. During the reigns of the Henrys and Edwards, Cheapside was frequently the scene of conflicts between the prentices of the different city guilds, in constant rivalry with one another. They were always a turbulent set, and in the reign of Edward III. Thomas the Fishmonger and another were beheaded in Chepe for striking the august person of the Lord Mayor himself. The gay prentices of Chepe are commemorated by Chaucer in "The Coke's Tale."—*Hare's London.* vol. i p. 223.

CHAP. IV.

was no necessity, in supporting such a charge, to prove a design to take away the natural life of the King; that anything showing a disposition to touch his royal state and dignity was sufficient; and that the words proved were inconsistent with that reverence for the hereditary descent of the crown which was due from every subject under the oath of allegiance: therefore, if the jury believed the witness, about which there could be no doubt, as the prisoner did not venture to deny the treasonable language which he had used, they were bound to find him guilty."

A verdict of guilty was accordingly returned, and the poor publican was hanged, drawn, and quartered.[1]

Mr. Justice Billing is said to have made the criminal law thus bend to the wishes of the King and the ministers in other cases, the particulars of which have not been transmitted to us; and he became a special favorite at court, all his former extravagances about cashiering kings and electing others in their stead being forgotten, in consideration of the zeal he displayed since his conversion to the doctrine of "divine right."

Therefore, when the Chief Justice had allowed Sir Thomas Cooke to escape the penalties of treason, after his forfeitures had been looked to with eagerness on account of the great wealth he had accumulated, there was a general cry in the palace at Westminster that he ought not to be permitted longer to mislead juries, and that Mr. Justice Billing, of such approved loyalty and firmness, should be appointed to succeed him, rather than the Attorney or Solicitor General, who, getting on the bench, might, like him, follow popular courses.

He is made Chief Justice of the King's Bench.

Accordingly, a *supersedeas* to Sir John Markham[2]

[1] Baker's Chron. p. 299; Hale's Pleas of the Crown, vol. i. p. 115.

[2] The cause of his removal is thus stated by Fuller (*Worthies*, ii. 207): "It happened that Sir Thomas Cooke, late Lord Mayor of London, one of vast wealth, was cast beforehand at the court (where the Lord Rivers and the rest of the Queen's kindred had pre-devoured his estate), and was

was made out immediately after the trial of *Rex* v. *Cooke*, and the same day a writ passed the Great Seal whereby "the King's trusty and well-beloved Sir Thomas Billing, Knight, was assigned as Chief Justice to hold pleas before the King himself." CHAP. IV. 23d Jan. 1469—70.

The very next term came on the trial of Sir Thomas Burdet. This descendant of one of the companions of William the Conqueror, and ancestor of the late Sir Francis Burdett,[1] lived at Arrow, in Warwickshire, May 1470.

only, for formality's sake, to be condemned in Guildhall by extraordinary commissioners in Oyer and Terminer, whereof Sir John Markham was not the meanest. The fact for which he was arraigned was for lending money to Margaret, the wife of Henry VI. This he denied, and the single testimony of one Hawkins, tortured on the rack, was produced against him. Judge Markham directed the jury (as it was his place, and no partiality in point of law to do) to find it only misprision of treason; whereby Sir Thomas saved his *lands*, though heavily fined, and *life*, though long imprisoned."—*Foss's Lives of the Judges of Eng.*

[1] Sir Francis Burdett, Bart., was born Jan. 25, 1770. After passing through Westminster School he went to Oxford, but did not graduate. In 1790 he went on a continental tour, in the course of which he became a convert to the revolutionary doctrines then so popular in France and other countries. On his return he married a daughter of Mr. Coutts, the banker, and received with her a large fortune. He succeeded to the baronetcy on the death of his grandfather, 1797. By the influence of the Duke of Newcastle he was returned to Parliament for Boroughbridge, and at the outset of his public career was an ardent supporter of ultra-liberal measures. Afterwards, when member for Westminster, he assailed the government so vehemently and incessantly that his political enemies took the earliest opportunity afforded by his want of discretion to make his conduct the subject of legal proceedings. Early in 1810 he addressed a letter to his constituents, in which he denied the power of committing for libel that the House of Commons had recently exercised in the case of Mr. John Gale Jones. This letter was brought under the notice of the House, and a resolution was agreed to, declaring that the publication of such a document was a gross breach of their privileges. Another resolution immediately followed, that the hon. baronet be committed to the Tower. Sir Francis, however, refused to surrender to the sergeant-at-arms, and his house was consequently broken into. He was seized and taken to the Tower, escorted by a large body of infantry and dragoons. The populace warmly sympathized with him, and on the return of the troops some lives were lost among the mob. The prorogation of Parliament put an end to his imprisonment. When the riots occurred in Manchester in 1819, he wrote a letter to his constituents, for which he was prosecuted by the Attorney-General, found guilty of libel, and sentenced to three months' imprisonment in the King's Bench, and to pay a fine of £1,000. In 1837 he ceased to represent Westminster, and was afterwards returned to North

CHAP. IV.

Trial of Rex *v.* Burdet.

where he had large possessions. He had been a Yorkist, but somehow was out of favor at court; and the King, making a progress in those parts, had rather wantonly entered his park, and hunted and killed a white buck of which he was peculiarly fond. When the fiery knight, who had been from home, heard of this affair, which he construed into a premeditated insult, he exclaimed, "I wish that the buck, horns and all, were in the belly of the man who advised the King to kill it;" or, as some reported, "were in the King's own belly." The opportunity was thought favorable for being revenged on an obnoxious person. Accordingly he was arrested, brought to London, and tried at the King's Bench bar on a charge of treason, for having compassed and imagined the death and destruction of our lord the King.

The prisoner proved, by most respectable witnesses, that the wish he had rashly expressed was applied only to the man who advised the King to kill the deer, and contended that words did not amount to treason, and that—although, on provocation, he had uttered an irreverent expression, which he deeply regretted—instead of having any design upon the King's life, he was ready to fight for his right to the crown, as he had done before,—and that he would willingly die in his defence.

Chief Justice Billing's charge to the jury.

"Lord Chief Justice Billing left it to the jury to consider what the words were; for if the prisoner had only expressed a wish that the buck and his horns were in the belly of the man who advised the King to kill the buck, it would not be a case of treason, and the jury would be bound to acquit; but the story as told by the witnesses for the Crown was much more probable, for sovereigns were not usually advised on such affairs, and it had been shown that on this occasion the King had acted entirely of his own head, without any advisers, as

Warwickshire, when he joined the Conservative party, of which he was ever afterwards a supporter. Died Jan. 23, 1844.

CHAP. IV.

the prisoner, when he uttered the treasonable words, must have well known: then, if the words really were as alleged by the witnesses for the Crown, they clearly did show a treasonable purpose. Words merely expressing an opinion, however erroneous the opinion, might not amount to treason; but when the words refer to a purpose, and incite to an act, they might come within the statute. Here the King's death had certainly been in the contemplation of the prisoner; in wishing a violence to be done which must inevitably haved caused his death, he imagined and compassed it. This was, in truth, advising, counselling, and commanding others to take away the sacred life of his Majesty. If the wicked deed had been done, would not the prisoner, in case the object of his vengeance had been a subject, have been an accessory before the fact? But in treason accessories before the fact were principals, and the prisoner was not at liberty to plead that what he had planned had not been accomplished. Therefore if the jury believed that he had uttered the treasonable wish directed against his Majesty's own sacred person, they were bound to convict him."

The barbarous execution of Burdet makes a deep impression on the public mind.

The jury immediately returned a verdict of GUILTY; and the frightful sentence in high treason, being pronounced, was carried into execution with all its horrors. This barbarity made a deep impression on the public mind, and, to aggravate the misconduct of the Judge, a rumor was propagated that the late virtuous Chief Justice had been displaced because he had refused to concur in it. After the death of Edward IV., in the famous speech delivered to the citizens of London to induce them to set aside his children, and to have the Duke of Gloucester[1] for their King, the Duke of Buckingham[2] says:

"Your goods were taken from you much against your will, so that every man was to pay, not what he pleased, but what the King would have him; who never was moderate in his demands, always exorbitant, turning forfeitures into fines, fines

[1] Richard, Edward IV.'s youngest brother.
[2] Henry Stafford.

CHAP. IV.

into ransoms; small offences into misprisions of treason, and misprision into treason itself. We need not give you the examples of it. Burdet's case will never be forgot; who, for a word spoken in haste, was cruelly beheaded. Did not Judge Markham resign his office rather than join with his brethren in passing that illegal sentence on that honest man?"

Lord Hale's comment on the cases of Walker and Burdet.

On this rhetorical authority, Lord Hale, commenting in his PLEAS OF CROWN upon these two cases of Walker and Burdet, for words, observes, "Both were attaint of high treason, and executed, though Markham, Chief Justice, rather chose to lose his place than assent to the latter judgment."[1] But I believe that Burdet's prosecution had not been commenced till Markham's removal had been caused by his supposed misconduct on the trial of Sir John Cooke.[2]

Billing again a Lancastrian.

Lord Chief Justice Billing, having justified his promotion by the renegade zeal he displayed for his new friends, and enmity to his old associates, was suddenly thrown into the greatest perplexity, and he must have regretted that he had ever left the Lancastrians. One of the most extraordinary revolutions in history—when a long continuance of public tranquillity was looked for—without a battle, drove Edward IV.[3] into

[1] Vol. i. p. 115. This sentence is repeated in the text of Blackstone (Com. vol. iv. p. 80). Hume, to add to the effect of his narrative, thinks fit to connect this atrocity with the murder of the Duke of Clarence, and postpones it till 1477, nearly eight years after Markham had been displaced and Billing had been appointed to succeed him. (Vol. iii. p. 261.)—See 1 St. Tr. 275. Burdet had been a retainer of the Duke of Clarence, who very probably reproached Edward IV. with his violent death, but this event must have happened long before the fatal quarrel between the two royal brothers.

[2] In reference to this case, where the conviction was for *misprision of treason*, the Duke of Buckingham asks, "Were you not all witnesses of the barbarous treatment one of your own body, the worshipful Alderman Cook, met with? And you your own selves know too well how many instances of this kind I might name among you."—*Sir Thomas More's History of Richard III.; Kennet*, 498.

[3] Edward IV.'s marriage with Elizabeth Wydeville offended the Nevilles, who joined the Lancastrian party, and Edward was forced to fly to Holland. Within six months he returned, landed in Yorkshire,

exile, and replaced Henry VI. on the throne, after he had languished ten years as a captive in the Tower of London. CHAP. IV.

There is no authentic account of Billing's deportment in this crisis, and we can only conjecture the cunning means he would resort to, and the pretences he would set up, to keep his place and to escape punishment. Certain it is that within a few days from the time when Henry went in procession from his prison in the Tower to his palace at Westminster, with the crown on his head, while almost all other functionaries of the late Government had fled or were shut up in jail, a writ passed the Great Seal, bearing date the 49th year of his reign, by which he assigned "his trusty and well-beloved Sir John Billing, Knight, as his Chief Justice to hold pleas in his Court before him."[1] There can be as little doubt that he was present at the parliament which was summoned immediately after in Henry's name, when the crown was entailed on Henry and his issue, Edward was declared an usurper, his most active adherents were attainted, and all the statutes which had passed during his reign were repealed. It is not improbable that there had been a secret understanding between Billing and the Earl of Warwick[2] (the King-maker), who himself so Nov. 1470.

marched southwards, gathering forces on the way, and defeated and killed Richard Neville, Earl of Warwick, at Barnet, 1471.—*Thompson's Hist. of Eng.*

[1] The teste is "apud Westmonasterium, 9 Oct. 49 Henry III."—*Pat. Roll*, m. 18.

[2] Richard Neville, Earl of Warwick, K.G., well known by the appellation of "the King-maker," was born about 1420, being the eldest son of Richard Neville, Earl of Salisbury. Having married an heiress of the Beauchamps, earls of Warwick, he was raised to that earldom 1449. At the first battle of St. Albans he gave the onset; and the Duke of York directly nominated him captain of Calais. He also led the van at the battle of Northampton, and was engaged in the field of Towton. Having established King Edward IV. on the throne, he was richly rewarded, and made great chamberlain and high-steward of England; but, taking offence at the King (probably, among other reasons, for having married Lady

CHAP. IV.

often changed sides, and who was now in possession of the whole authority of the government.

While Edward was a fugitive in foreign parts, the doctrine of divine right was, no doubt, at a discount in England, and Billing may have again bolted his arguments about the power of the people to choose their rulers; although, according to the superstition of the age, he more probably countenanced the belief that Henry was a Saint, and that he was restored by the direct interposition of Heaven.

A.D. 1471.

But one would think he must have been at his wits' end when, in the spring of the following year, Edward IV. landed at Ravenspurg, gained the battle of Barnet, and, after the murder of Henry VI.[1] and the Prince of Wales,[2] was again on the throne, without a rival. Billing does seem to have found great difficulty in making his peace. Though he was dismissed from his office, it was allowed to remain vacant about a twelvemonth, during which time he is supposed to have been in hiding. But he had vowed that, whatever changes might take place on the throne, he himself should die Chief Justice of the King's Bench: and he contrived to be as good as his word.

Billing again a Yorkist.

By his own representations, or the intercession of friends, or the hope of the good services he might yet render in getting rid of troublesome opponents, the

Grey when the earl was negotiating with him an alliance in France), he presumed too much on his power, and fighting to restore King Henry, was slain at the battle of Barnet, April 14, 1471.—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

[1] King Henry, who had been again imprisoned in the Tower, died shortly after, of a broken heart, as the Yorkists said, or murdered, according to Lancastrian rumor, by Edward's youngest brother Richard, Duke of Gloucester.—*Thompson's Hist. of Eng.*, p. 140.

[2] Edward, Prince of Wales, was brought before his victorious namesake, who asked him how he durst be so bold as to make war in his realm. The youth made answer that he came to recover his inheritance, whereupon the King struck him in the face with his gauntlet and the King's brothers or their attendants forthwith despatched him with their swords. —*Thompson's Hist. of Eng.*, chap. 24, p. 141.

King was induced to declare his belief that he who had sat on the trials of Walker and Burdet had unwillingly submitted to force during the late usurpation; and, on the 17th of June, 1472, a writ passed the Great Seal, by which his Majesty assigned "his right trusty and well-beloved Sir John Billing, Knight, as Chief Justice to hold pleas before his Majesty himself."[1]

For nearly nine years after, he continued in the possession of his office, without being driven again to change his principles or his party. One good deed he did which should be recorded of him—in advising Edward IV. to grant a pardon to an old Lancastrian, Sir John Fortescue. But for the purpose of reducing this illustrious Judge to the reproach of inconsistency, which he knew made his own name a by-word, he imposed a condition that the author of DE LAUDIBUS should publish a new treatise, to refute that which he had before composed, proving the right of the House of Lancaster to the throne; and forced him to present the petition in which he assures the King "that he hath so clearly disproved all the arguments that have been made against his right and title that now there remaineth no color or matter of argument to the hurt or infamy of the same right or title by reason of any such writing, but the same right and title stand now the more clear and open by that any such writings have been made against them."[2]

One good deed to be recorded of him.

A.D. 1473.

There are many decisions of Chief Justice Billing on dry points of law to be found in the YEAR-BOOKS, but there is only one other trial of historical importance mentioned in which he took any part, and it is much to be feared that on this occasion he inflamed, instead of soothing, the violent passions of his master, with whom he had become a special favorite.

[1] Pat Roll, 11 Ed. IV p. 1, m. 24; Dugd. Chron. Ser.

[2] Rot. Parl. vi. 26, 69.

CHAP. IV.

Jan. 14. 1478.

His conduct on the trial of the Duke of Clarence.

Edward IV., after repeated quarrels and reconciliations with his brother the Duke of Clarence,[1] at last brought him to trial, at the bar of the House of Lords, on a charge of high treason. The Judges were summoned to attend; and Lord Chief Justice Billing was their mouthpiece. We have only a very defective account of this trial, and it would appear that nothing was proved against the first prince of the blood, except that he had complained of the unlawful conviction of Burdet, who had been in his service, that he had accused the King of dealing in magic, and had cast some doubts on his legitimacy,—that he had induced his servants to swear that they would be true to him, without any reservation of their allegiance to their Sovereign,—and that he had surreptitiously obtained, and preserved, an attested copy of an act of parliament, passed during the late usurpation, declaring him next heir to the crown after the male issue of Henry VI. The Duke of Buckingham presided as High Steward, and in that capacity ought to have laid down the law to the Peers; but, to lessen his responsibility, he put the question to the Judges, "Whether the matters proved against the Duke of Clarence amounted, in point of law, to high treason?" Chief Justice Billing answered in the affirmative. Therefore, an unanimous verdict of GUILTY was given; and sentence of death was pronounced in the usual form. I dare say Billing would not have hesitated in declaring his opinion that the beheading might be commuted to drowning in a butt of malmsey wine; but this story of Clarence's exit, once so current, is now generally discredited, and

[1] George Plantagenet, Duke of Clarence, a younger son of Richard, Duke of York, and brother to King Richard IV., married Isabel, eldest daughter of Richard Neville, Earl of Warwick and Salisbury, with whom he joined in confederacy against his brother. He was attainted of high treason, and suffered death by being drowned in a butt of malmsey wine, 1477.—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

CHAP. IV.

the belief is that he was privately executed in the Tower, according to his sentence.[1]

Lord Chief Justice Billing enjoyed the felicitous fate accorded to very few persons of any distinction in those times,—that he never was imprisoned—that he never was in exile—and that he died a natural death. In the spring of the year 1482, he was struck with apoplexy, and he expired in a few days,—fulfilling his vow—for he remained to the last Chief Justice of the King's Bench, after a tenure of office for seventeen years, in the midst of civil war and revolutions.

His death.

He amassed immense wealth, but, dying childless, it went to distant relations, for whom he could have felt no tenderness. Notwithstanding his worldly prosperity, few would envy him. He might be feared and flattered, but he could not have been beloved or respected, by his contemporaries; and his name, contrasted with those of Fortescue and Markham, was long used as an impersonation of the most hollow, deceitful, and selfish qualities which can disgrace mankind.

Sir John Hussey.

Sir John Hussey,[2] who succeeded him, was Chief Justice during four reigns, ever preserving a fair character;—for, being a mere lawyer, he devoted himself exclusively to the duties of his office; and he was promoted to the highest honors of his profession without mixing in any political contest.

His legal studies.

He was the younger son of a Lincolnshire family of respectable station but small means; and he had considerable difficulties to struggle with in early life. But he was endowed with much energy, perseverance, and love of law. His favorite manual was the Registrum Brevium; and Littleton's celebrated treatise on

[1] Rot. Parl. vi. 193, 194, 195, 174.

[2] Often spelt Hussee.—Called "Sir William Huse" by Foss in his Lives of the Judges.

CHAP. IV.

TENURES (destined to be commented on by COKE) being now completed, and handed about in MS., he copied it with his own hand, and he is said to have committed it to memory.

He is made Attorney General.

His progress at the bar was rapid; and in 1472, on the restoration of Edward IV., he was made Attorney General.[1] He had to prosecute a good many Lancastrians; but the proceedings were less bloody than might have been expected, and, without displeasing the King, he gained some credit for moderation and humanity. He had a most painful duty to perform in conducting the impeachment of the Duke of Clarence for treason; but he had no concern in advising this proceeding, and he is not supposed in any part of it to have exceeded the line of his professional duty. If the sentence of beheading was changed to drowning in malmsey, he must have been consulted about it; but there is no record of his opinion on this delicate question.

It seems strange to us that he should afterwards have taken the degree of the coif; but then, and long afterwards, King's Sergeants had precedence of the Attorney and Solicitor General on all occasions; and all other Sergeants claimed the like precedence, except in conducting the King's business. Hussey, therefore, although Attorney General, to add to his dignity was, in the year 1478, called Sergeant, with ten others, and gave a grand feast to the King, the Lord Mayor, and Aldermen of London, all the Judges, and many of the nobility.

A.D. 1482.

On the death of Lord Chief Justice Billing, Sir William Hussey, who had now for ten years ably

[1] His patent, which is extant, contained the words still introduced into the patent of the Attorney General: "Cum potestate deputandi Clericos ac officiarios sub se in qualibet Curiâ de recordo." ["With power to send clerks and officers under himself into any court of record he pleases."]—*Pat.* 11 *Edw. IV.* p. 1, m. 28.

CHAP. IV.

filled the office of Attorney General, was appointed to succeed him, with the increased salary of 140 marks a year.[1] There is sometimes great disappointment when a very eminent counsel is raised to the bench; but all who mention Hussey's name concur in giving him a high character for judicial excellence. Without any improper compliances, he continued to enjoy court favor, as well as the respect of the public; and it was not apprehended that his tenure of office could be exposed to any peril, the King being a much younger man than himself, with seeming vigorous health. The constitution of Edward, however, had been undermined by licentious indulgences, and he was suddenly carried off while yet only in the forty-first year of his age.

He is made Chief Justice of the King's Bench.

April 9, 1483.

Hussey was supposed to be in great jeopardy, as Richard Duke of Gloucester, made Protector, was expected to fill the high offices of the law with instruments adapted to the unprincipled purposes which he was suspected to entertain; but this extraordinary man, ruthless in the commission of deeds of blood, had the sagacity to perceive that he would facilitate his ascent to supreme power by the reputation of a regard for the pure administration of justice. Therefore, having, in the name of the young King, delivered the Great Seal to the virtuous John Russell,[2] he reap-

April 21, 1483.

[1] "Will. Husee constit. Capitalis Justic. T. R. apud West. 7 Maii." ["William Husee appointed Chief Justiciar by writ of the King at Westminster, May 7."]—*Pat.* 21 *Edw. IV.* "Idem Will. habet CXL marcas annuas sibi concessas pro statu suo decentius manutenendo. T. R. apud Westm. 12 Junii." ["The same William has 140 marks granted to him yearly for his respectable maintenance."]—*Pat.* 21 *Edw. IV.* p. 2, m. 6.

[2] John Russell, Bishop of Lincoln, was born in the parish of St. Peter's in the suburbs of Winchester. He received his education at Oxford, being admitted a fellow of New College in 1449, and taking the degree of doctor of the canon law. He was raised to the episcopal bench as Bishop of Rochester on September 20, 1476, and was soon after in-

CHAP. IV.

pointed Sir William Hussey Chief Justice of the King's Bench.[1]

In Easter and Trinity Terms following, we learn from the YEAR-BOOKS that Hussey presided in that court, as the representative of the infant sovereign.

On the 26th of June following, the Protector changed his own title to that of King; and that very same day, when he had proceeded from Baynard's Castle[2] to Westminster, and had been proclaimed, having experienced the popularity arising from the appointment of able and upright judges, he caused a writ to pass the Great Seal whereby "Richard III. by the grace of God King of England and France, Lord of Ireland, etc., assigned his right trusty and well-beloved Sir William Hussey, Knight, his Chief Justice, to hold pleas in his Court before him."[3]

His submission to Richard III.

The Chief Justice may be blamed for acquiescing in this usurpation; but we must remember that he had

trusted with the government of the king's infant son. From Rochester he was translated to Lincoln on September 9, 1480, and was one of the executors of King Edward's will. The patent of the bishop's appointment as Lord Chancellor has not come down to us, but it may be presumed that he received the Great Seal about the middle of May, 1483. Sir Thomas More describes him as "a wise man, and a good, and of much experience, and one of the most learned men undoubtedly that England had in his time." The only doubt upon his character arises from his continuing in the chancellorship after Richard had shown himself in his true colors. But we must remember that the usurper had so much art, and manners so insinuating, that we may readily believe that it would be long before those about him, whom he was desirous to retain, would credit the reports to his prejudice; and we cannot but give some weight to the peril and inutility of resistance in an age when most parties concurred so easily in a transfer of their allegiance. (*Godwin*, 299, 536.) —*Foss's Lives of the Judges.*

[1] Pat. 1 Ed. V. m. 2.

[2] Baynard's Castle, destroyed in the Great Fire, and "so called of Baynard, a nobleman that came in with William the Conqueror." It was to Maud Fitzwalter, daughter of "the Lord of Castle Baynard," that King John paid his unwelcome addresses. The palace built on this site by Humphrey, Duke of Gloucester, was the place where the crown was offered to Richard III.—*Hare's Walks in London.*

[3] 26th June, Pat. 1 Ric. III. p. 1, m. 12.

no concern in bringing it about,—that plausible reasons had been brought forward to make out the illegitimacy of the sons of Edward IV.,—that no danger was as yet apprehended for their lives,—and that Richard's claim had been sanctioned by the City of London and by the will of the nation.

As the new King chose to get rid of Hastings, Rivers,[1] Buckingham, and the other grandees who were obnoxious to him, by summary violence rather than judicial murder, the Chief Justice was not exposed to any difficulty in acting under his authority; and he continued till after the battle of Bosworth,[2] amidst insurrections and civil war, calmly to adjust the private rights of the suitors who came before him. Instead of putting on a coat of mail taken from the King's armory, like Sir John Fortescue, he declared that it became him to be seen by the public only in the scarlet robe, lined with white minever, he had received from the King's wardrobe.

Henry VII.,[3] who had a deep dislike to all whom

[1] Anthony Woodville, Earl Rivers, was the son of Sir Richard Woodville, Lord Rivers, by Jacqueline of Luxemburg, Duchess of Bedford. He was born about 1442; and, in his seventeenth year, accompanied his father on an expedition to deprive the Earl of Warwick of the government of Calais, where they were made prisoners. When Edward IV. came to the throne, and married the daughter of Lord Rivers, Anthony Woodville was honored with the Garter, and appointed captain-general of the King's forces. He was also made governor of Prince Edward, and chief butler of England. On the death of the King, the earl assembled a body of troops, with the intention of crowning his nephew; but his design was defeated by the Duke of Gloucester, afterwards Richard III., who caused the gallant nobleman to be beheaded in the Castle of Pontefract, June 13, 1483. Earl Rivers was the patron of Caxton, who printed "The Dictes and Sayings of the Philosophers," translated by him from the French, 1477; "The Moral Proverbs of Christine of Pyse;" "The Boke namd Cordyale or Memorare Novissima." According to Caxton, Lord Rivers also "made divers balades agenst the seven dedely synnes." One of these ballads is in Percy's Reliques.—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

[2] The battle of Bosworth, Aug. 22, 1485, in which Richard III. was defeated and killed, and Henry Tudor, Earl of Richmond, hailed as King. —*Thompson's Hist. of Eng.*, p. 148.

[3] Henry VII. on his father's side was a grandson of Owen Tudor and

CHAP. IV.

A.D. 1485.

He is continued in his office by Henry VII.

he knew or suspected to be Yorkists, was much inclined to cashier Chief Justice Hussey as he had done Lord Chancellor John Russell; but, after a month's consideration, came to the conclusion that his loyalty might be safely trusted to any King *de facto*,[1] and accordingly reappointed him in the usual form.[2] The Lancastrian sovereign had no reason to repent the confidence he reposed in the Yorkist Chief Justice, whose scruples were, no doubt, soothed by the approaching royal marriage and the promised union of the Roses.

November.

Ingenious construction of the act of attainder against Henry.

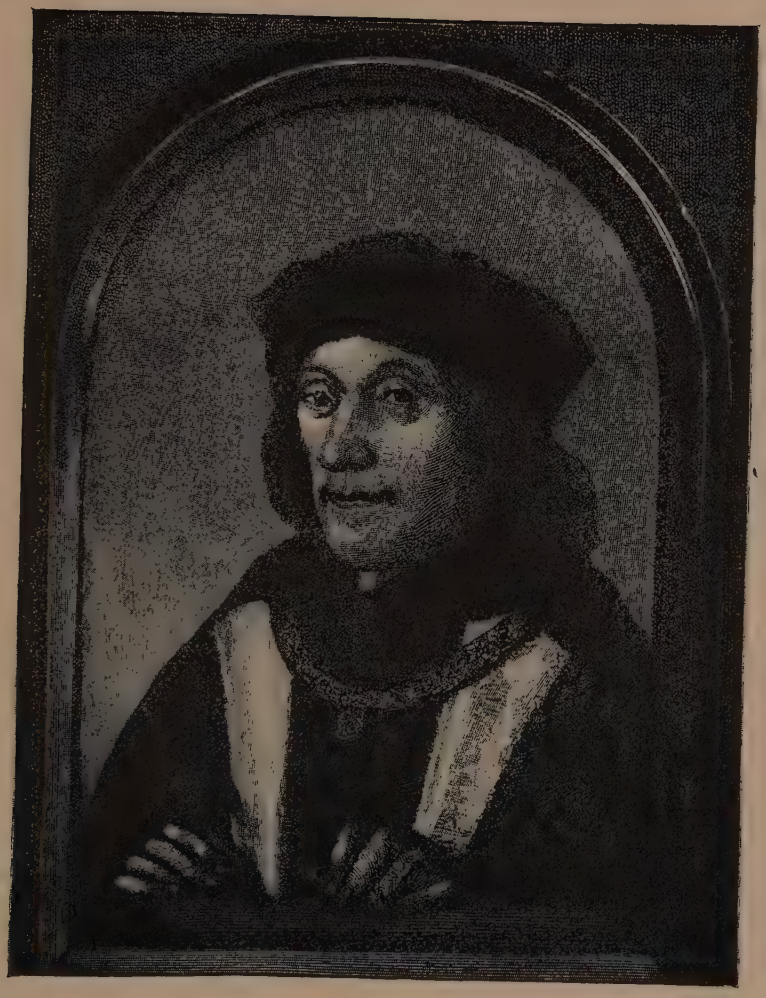
When Parliament met, the Chief Justice was of essential service in removing difficulties which presented themselves in the way of legislation. In the first place, Henry himself had been attainted by an act passed in the preceding reign, and, instead of mounting a throne, and explaining the reasons for summoning the two Houses,—according to the letter of the law, he was liable to lose his life on the scaffold. Nor could this act of attainder be reversed in the usual form, as the King while under attainder (it was suggested) could not lawfully exercise any function of royalty. The question being put to the Judges, Hussey assembled them in the Exchequer Chamber, and induced them all to agree in this ingenious solution of the problem that "the descent of the crown of itself takes away all defects and disabilities arising from attainder, and therefore that the act of attainder must be considered as already virtually reversed."

Next, it was ascertained that more than half the

Katharine, widow of Henry V., and on his mother's a descendant through the Beaufort line of John of Gaunt.—*Thompson's Hist. of Eng.*, p. 146.

[1] A King *de facto*, or in fact, distinguished from a King *de jure*, by right.—*Webster's Dict.*

[2] Henry dated his reign from 22d of August, 1485, and Hussey's new writ was tested 20th September following. "Will. Husee, miles, constitutus Capitalis Justic. T. R. apud Westm. 1 Hen. VII. p. 1, m. 22."



HENRY VII.
PICTURE IN NATIONAL PORTRAIT GALLERY.

CHAP. IV.

Peers who were summoned, and a great many representatives returned to the House of Commons, had been attainted in the same manner; and the question was, whether their attainder could be treated as a nullity, on the ground that Richard III., who gave the royal assent to it, was a usurper? Hussey being consulted, prudently answered, "that it would be of dangerous example to suffer those who ought to observe a law to question the title of the sovereign under whom the law had been enacted, and that the attainted peers and commoners ought not to take their seats in either house till their attainder had been reversed by a new act of parliament assented to by the King who now is." All the Judges concurred in this opinion, of which Henry made dextrous use by obtaining the famous statute, indemnifying all who act in obedience to the commands of a King *de facto*.[1]

Hussey continued Chief Justice of the King's Bench under Henry VII. for a period of ten years, when he expired full of days and of honors. He assisted in remodelling the Court of Star Chamber,[2] and occasion- A.D. 1485—1495. His death.

[1] Roll Parl. 1 Henry VII.; 1 Parl. Hist. 450; Lord Bacon's Hist. Henry VII.

[2] Star Chamber (possibly from the Hebrew *shetar*, the Jewish covenants that were kept in the Star Chamber). One of the main objects of Henry VII. was to secure good "governance" for the country and to keep the nobles in order. For this purpose he caused an act (3 Henry VII. c. 1) to be passed, which, after reciting the evils caused by maintenance, and the giving of liveries, by the abuse of the power of the sheriffs, by the bribery of jurors, and by the riots and unlawful assemblies which prevented the administration of justice, empowers the Chancellor, Treasurer, and Keeper of the Privy Seal, or any two of them, with a bishop and a temporal Lord of the Council, and the Chief Justices of the King's Bench and Common Pleas, or two other justices in their absence, to call before them persons offending in the above-mentioned respects, and to inflict such punishment, not extending to death, as might be imposed were they convicted in the ordinary course of law. This seems to have been not so much the creation of an entirely new court, as a parliamentary recognition of certain powers of criminal jurisdiction long claimed by the Privy Council, and the limitation of their exercise to what may be regarded as practically a committee of that body. The Privy Council had long been accustomed to meet in the Star Chamber, but now this term Star Chamber began to be definitely

CHAP. IV.

ally sat there as a Judge, but none of its sentences were chargeable with excessive severity in his time. He left no issue behind him; and having given away much in charity while he lived, he disposed of the residue of his fortune for pious uses, which in the following age were reckoned superstitious.

Sir John Fineux.

The next Chief Justice of the King's Bench was SIR JOHN FINEUX,[1] of whom, although he presided in

applied to the new court which had sprung out of the Council. The words do not occur in the bill itself, only in the heading, but in the act 20 Henry VII., which extended the jurisdiction of the court, the title is actually employed. Subsequently, however, the jurisdiction of the court was extended beyond the act 3 Henry VII., so that in the reigns of James I. and Charles I. it included most "misdemeanors of an aggravated nature, such as disturbances of the public peace, assaults accompanied with a good deal of violence, conspiracies, and libels. Besides these, every misdemeanor came within the proper scope of its inquiry; those especially of public importance, and for which the law, as then understood, had provided no sufficient punishment." (Hallam.) At the same time the limitation as to the judges came to be disregarded, and any member of the Privy Council was allowed to sit. Thus the Star Chamber became, as has been aptly said, a sort of scratch tribunal consisting of Privy Councillors, a change which, according to Hallam, probably took place during the reign of Edward VI. It can scarcely be doubted that during a great part at any rate of the Tudor period the power of the court was beneficially exercised. . . . Moreover, it was able to provide equitable remedies for cases which could not be fairly dealt with by the ordinary law courts. But its power had very early been abused: juries were summoned before it for verdicts disagreeable to the Government, and were fined or imprisoned, so that although the Star Chamber could not itself condemn to death, the fear of its displeasure made juries sufficiently pliant. Persons accused before the court were forced to incriminate themselves by examination upon oath, and, it is scarcely necessary to add, no jury was employed to determine the question of guilt. It imposed ruinous fines (though in many cases they were remitted), and began in Elizabeth's reign to sentence to the pillory, whipping, and cutting off the ears. Under James I. and Charles I., the Star Chamber became the chief weapon of defence used by the Government against its assailants; the punishments inflicted by it in such cases as those of Prynne, Burton, and Bastwick, excited general indignation; and it was abolished by act of Parliament (July, 1641).—*Low and Pulling's Dict. of Eng. Hist.*

[1] He was made a judge of the Common Pleas on February 11, 1494, and gave so much satisfaction in that court that in less than two years he was promoted to the office of Chief Justice of the King's Bench, on November 24, 1495. During the remainder of the reign, and for the first sixteen years of that of Henry VIII., he retained his high position with an unblemished reputation both as a lawyer and a man. He was a considerable benefactor to the Augustin friars and the priory of Christchurch in Canterbury, and also to the abbey of Faversham; and it tells well of his

CHAP. IV.

that court twenty-eight years, I find little of good or of evil. The office of Chancellor, held successively by Morton, Wareham, Wolsey, and More, now gained such an ascendency, that the Common-Law Judges occupied but a small space in the public eye, and their names are seldom connected with events of historical interest. But even Fineux has had biographers, and they divide his career into three portions of twenty-eight years each. He was quite idle for twenty-eight years, during which he spent a fair estate at Swenkfield in Kent, inherited by him from his ancestors; he then took to the study of the law, in which he made great proficiency, and at the end of twenty-eight years he was made a Judge. But I find nothing more memorable recorded of him than that he had a house in Canterbury, in each window of which was to be seen his motto, "*Misericordias Domini cantabo in æternum.*" [1]

Tripartite division of his life.

Rivalling his immediate predecessor in posthumous piety, he left for the good of his soul all his property to St. Augustine's Priory, in Canterbury,—a monk of which wrote a treatise in his praise, describing him as "Vir prudentissimus, genere insignis, justitiâ præclarus, pietate refertus, humanitate splendidus, et charitate fœcundus." [2]

His posthumous piety.

He died in Michaelmas Term,[3] in the seventeenth year of the reign of Henry VIII. A.D. 1526.

character that Archbishop Morton, who had opposed him, made him his executor, and that he was nominated to the same duty under the will of Henry VII.—*Foss's Lives of the Judges.*

[1] "I will sing of the mercies of God for ever."

[2] ["A very intelligent man, of excellent birth, renowned for his justice and patriotism, distinguished for his philanthropy, and abounding in good works."]—See Fuller's Worthies: Kent.

[3] In England there are four terms in the year: Hilary Term, from January 23d to February 12th; Easter Term, from the Wednesday fortnight after Easter to the Monday next after Ascension-day; Trinity Term, from the Friday next after Trinity Sunday to the Wednesday fortnight after; and Michaelmas Term, from November 6th to the 28th. These terms are observed by the Courts of King's Bench, the Common Pleas, and Exchequer, but not by the Parliament, the Chancery, or by inferior courts. The rest of the year is called *vacation.*—*Webster's Dict.*

CHAPTER V.

CHIEF JUSTICES TILL THE APPOINTMENT OF CHIEF JUSTICE POPHAM BY QUEEN ELIZABETH.

CHAP. V.

Sir John Fitzjames.

WE know more of the next Chief Justice, SIR JOHN FITZJAMES, but very little to his credit. Of obscure birth and not brilliant talents, he made his fortune by his great good humor, and by being at college with Cardinal Wolsey. It is said that Fitzjames, who was a Somersetshire man, kept up an intimacy with Wolsey when the latter had become a village parson in that county; and that he was actually in the brawl at the fair, when his reverence, having got drunk, was set in the stocks by Sir Amyas Paulet.[1]

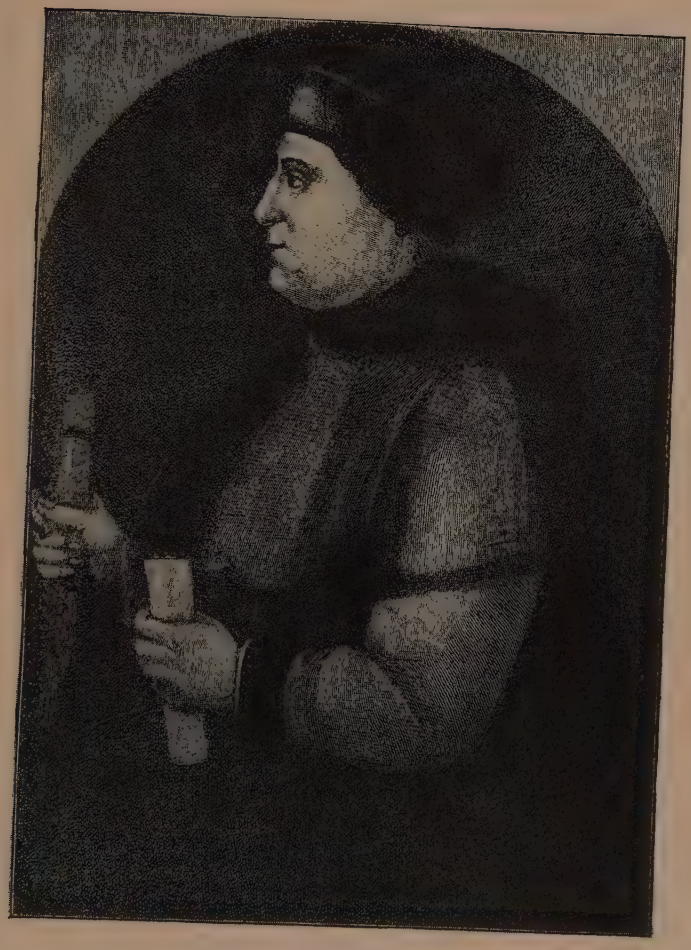
While Wolsey tried his luck in the Church with little hope of promotion, Fitzjames was keeping his terms in the Inns of Court; but he chiefly distinguished himself on gaudy days, by dancing before the Judges, playing the part of "Abbot of Misrule," and swearing strange oaths,—especially by *St. Gillian*, his tutelary saint. His agreeable manners made him popular with the "Readers" and "Benchers"[2]; and through their favor, although very deficient in "moots"[3] and "bolts," he was called to the outer bar. Clients, however, he had none, and he was in deep despair, when his former chum—having insinuated

Plays the part of "Abbot of Misrule."

[1] Lives of Chancellors, i. 444.

[2] A *Bencher* is one of the senior members of a society who have the government of one of the Inns of Court. They have been *readers*, and being admitted to plead within the bar, are called inner barristers.—*Webster's Dict.*

[3] Moot is a discussion or debate; especially, a discussion of fictitious causes by way of practice. Bolting differs from mooting in being less public and formal.—*Webster's Dict.*



CARDINAL WOLSEY.
PICTURE IN NATIONAL PORTRAIT GALLERY.

himself into the good graces of the stern and wary old man, Henry VII., and those of the gay and licentious youth, Henry VIII.—was rapidly advancing to greatness. Wolsey, while Almoner, and holding subordinate offices about the Court, took notice of Fitzjames, advised him to stick to the profession, and was able to throw some business in his way in the Court of Wards and Liveries,— CHAP. V.

His early intimacy with Cardinal Wolsey.

> "Lofty and sour to them that lov'd him not;
> But to those men that sought him, sweet as summer."

Fitzjames was devotedly of this second class; and was even suspected to assist his patron in pursuits which drew upon him Queen Catherine's censure:

> "Of his own body he was ill, and gave
> The clergy ill example."

For these or other services the Cardinal, not long after he wrested the Great Seal from Archbishop Warham,[1] and had all legal patronage conferred upon him, boldly made Fitzjames Attorney General, notwithstanding loud complaints from competitors of his inexperience and incapacity.

He is made Attorney General. A.D. 1519.

The only state trial which he had to conduct was that of the unfortunate Stafford, Duke of Buckingham,[2] May 13, 1522.

[1] William Warham, an English prelate, was born at Okely, in Hampshire, and educated at Winchester School, from whence he was elected to a fellowship in New College, Oxford, where he took the degree of Doctor of Laws, in which he was incorporated at Cambridge in 1500. He then entered upon public employment, and was sent on an embassy to the Duke of Burgundy; after which he was made Master of the Rolls, and next Lord Chancellor. In 1503 he was promoted to the see of London, and, within a few months, was raised to the archbishopric of Canterbury. In 1515 he resigned the Great Seal on account of the differences between him and Wolsey. His piety, humility, and learning are much commended by his contemporaries, and he is especially known as the friend and patron of Erasmus. Died Aug. 23, 1532.—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

[2] Edward Stafford, Duke of Buckingham, was eldest son of Henry Stafford, Duke of Buckingham, and, it is believed, studied at Cambridge. His father was beheaded in 1483 and attainted, but the attainder was set aside on the accession of Henry VII. The young Duke being descended from Edward III. through a female, fancied that, in case of the King's death without issue, he had a title to the throne, notwithstanding the

CHAP. V. who, having quarrelled with Wolsey, and called him a "butcher's cur," was prosecuted for high treason before the Lord High Chancellor and Court of Peers on very frivolous grounds. Fitzjames had little difficulty in procuring a conviction; and although the manner in which he pressed the case seems shocking to us, he probably was not considered to have exceeded the line of his duty: and Shakspeare makes Buckingham, returning from Westminster Hall to the Tower, exclaim,—

He conducts the prosecution against the Duke of Buckingham.

> . . . "I had my trial,
> And, must needs say, a noble one; which makes me
> A little happier than my wretched father."[1]

Feb. 6, 1523. He is made a Puisne Judge.

The result was, at all events, highly satisfactory to Wolsey, who, in the beginning of the following year, created Fitzjames a Puisne Judge of the Court of King's Bench, with a promise of being raised to be Chief Justice as soon as there should be a vacancy.[2] Sir John Fineux, turned of eighty, was expected to drop every term, but held on four years longer. As soon as he expired, Fitzjames was appointed his successor.[3] Wolsey still zealously supported him, although thereby incurring considerable obloquy. It was generally thought that the new Chief was not only wanting in gravity of moral character, but that

Jan. 23, 1527. Chief Justice of the King's Bench.

superior claims of the dowagers of Scotland and France and their descendants. Impressed with this idea, he used idle and vaunting language to his servants, and most imprudently entered into correspondence with one Nicholas Hopkins, a brother of the Charterhouse, at Henton, Somersetshire, who pretended to the gift of prophecy, and foretold he should be king. Moreover, his enormous wealth excited the King's cupidity, and he in some respects justified suspicion by increasing the number of his retainers. He also treated Wolsey, then in the plenitude of his power, with undisguised contempt, on account apparently of his low origin. The Duke was seized on his way to the court, tried for treason, found guilty, and condemned to death. Scorning to solicit mercy, he was beheaded on Tower Hill, May 17, 1521.—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

[1] Henry VIII., Act ii. sc. 1; 1 St. Tr. 287–298.

[2] Pat. 13 Henry VIII. p. 2.

[3] Pat. 17 Henry VIII. Rot. 1.

he had not sufficient professional knowledge for such a situation. His highest quality was discretion, which generally enabled him to conceal his ignorance, and to disarm opposition. Fortunately for him, the question which then agitated the country, respecting the validity of the King's marriage with Katherine of Aragon, was considered to depend entirely on the canon law, and he was not called upon to give any opinion upon it. He thus quietly discharged the duties of his office till Wolsey's fall.

Oct. 1529.

His base conduct on the fall of Wolsey.

But he then experienced much perplexity. Was he to desert his patron, or to sacrifice his place? He had an exaggerated notion of the King's vengeful feelings. The Cardinal having been not only deprived of the Great Seal, but banished to Esher, and robbed of almost the whole of his property under process of *præmunire*,[1] while an impeachment for treason was still threatened against him,—the Chief Justice concluded that his utter destruction was resolved upon, and that no one could show him any sympathy without sharing his fate. Therefore, instead of going privately to visit him, as some old friends did, he joined in the cry against him, and assisted his enemies to the utmost. Wolsey readily surrendered all his private property, but wished, for the benefit of his successors, to save the palace at Whitehall,[2] which belonged to

1 The offence of introducing foreign authority into England, the penalties for which were originally intended to depress the civil power of the Pope in the kingdom.—*Webster's Dict.*

The penalties of *præmunire* were subsequently applied to many other offences; but prosecutions upon a *præmunire* are at this day unheard of in England.—*Blackstone.*

2 Almost the whole of the space between Charing Cross and Westminster on one side, and between St. James's Park and the Thames on the other, was once occupied by the great royal palace of Whitehall. The first palace on this site was built by Hubert de Burgh, Earl of Kent, the minister of Henry III., who bought the land from the monks of Westminster for 140 marks of silver and the annual tribute of a wax taper. He bequeathed his property here to the Convent of the Black

CHAP. V. the see of York, being the gift of a former archbishop. A reference was then made to the Judges, "whether it was not forfeited to the Crown?" when the Chief Justice suggested the fraudulent expedient of a fictitious recovery in the Court of Common Pleas, whereby it should be adjudged to the King under a superior title. He had not the courage to show himself in the presence of the man to whom he owed every thing; and Shelley, a Puisne Judge, was deputed to make the proposal to him in the King's name. "Master Shelley," said the Cardinal, "ye shall make report to his Highness that I am his obedient subject, and faithful chaplain and bondsman, whose royal commandment and request I will in no wise disobey, but most gladly fulfil and accomplish his princely will and pleasure in all things, and in especial in this matter, inasmuch as the fathers of the law all say that I may lawfully do it. Therefore I charge your conscience, and discharge mine. Howbeit, I pray you show his Majesty from me that I most humbly desire his Highness to call to his most gracious remembrance that there is both Heaven and Hell."

Wolsey's message to the King.

This answer was, no doubt, reported by Shelley to

Friars in Holborn, where he was buried, and they, in 1248, sold it to Walter de Grey, Archbishop of York, after which it continued, as York Place, to be the town-house of the Archbishops of York till the time of Wolsey. By Wolsey, York Place was almost entirely rebuilt. Here the Cardinal lived in more than regal magnificence, and with a household of eight hundred persons. It was hither that the Duke of Suffolk came to bid Wolsey resign the Great Seal, and hence, having delivered an inventory of all his treasures to the King, the Cardinal "took barge at his privy stairs, and so went by water to Putney," on his way to Esher, leaving his palace to his master, who almost immediately occupied it. Henry VIII. changed the name of York Place to "the King's Manor of Westminster," more generally known as Whitehall, and greatly enlarged it. He also obtained an act of parliament enacting that "the entire space between Charing Cross and the Sanctuary at Westminster, from the Thames on the east side to the park wall westward, should from henceforth be deemed the King's whole Palace of Westminster."—*Hare's Walks in London.*

WOLSEY RECEIVED BY THE MONKS OF LEICESTER.

his brethren assembled in the Exchequer Chamber, although, probably, not to the King; but it excited no remorse in the breast of Chief Justice Fitzjames, who perfected the machinery by which the town residence of the Archbishops of York henceforth was annexed to the Crown, and declared his readiness to concur in any proceedings by which the proud ecclesiastic, who had ventured to sneer at the reverend sages of the law, might be brought to condign punishment.

Nov. 8. Fitzjames assists in drawing up the articles of accusation against Wolsey.

Accordingly, when parliament met, and a select committee of the House of Lords was appointed to draw up articles of impeachment against Wolsey, Chief Justice Fitzjames, although only summoned, like the other judges, as an assessor, was actually made a member of the committee, joined in their deliberations, and signed their report.[1] Some of the Articles drawn by him indicate a pre-existing envy and jealousy, which he had concealed by flattery and subserviency:

"XVI. Also the said Lord Cardinal hath hindered and undone many of your poor subjects for want of dispatching of matters, for he would no man should meddle but himself; insomuch that it hath been affirmed, by many wise men, that ten of the most wisest and most expert men in England were not sufficient in convenient time to order the matters that he would retain to himself; and many times he deferred the ending of matters because that suitors should attend and wait upon him, whereof he had no small pleasure."—"XX. Also the said Lord Cardinal hath examined divers and many matters in the Chancery after judgment thereof given at the common law, in subversion of your laws."—"XXVI. Also

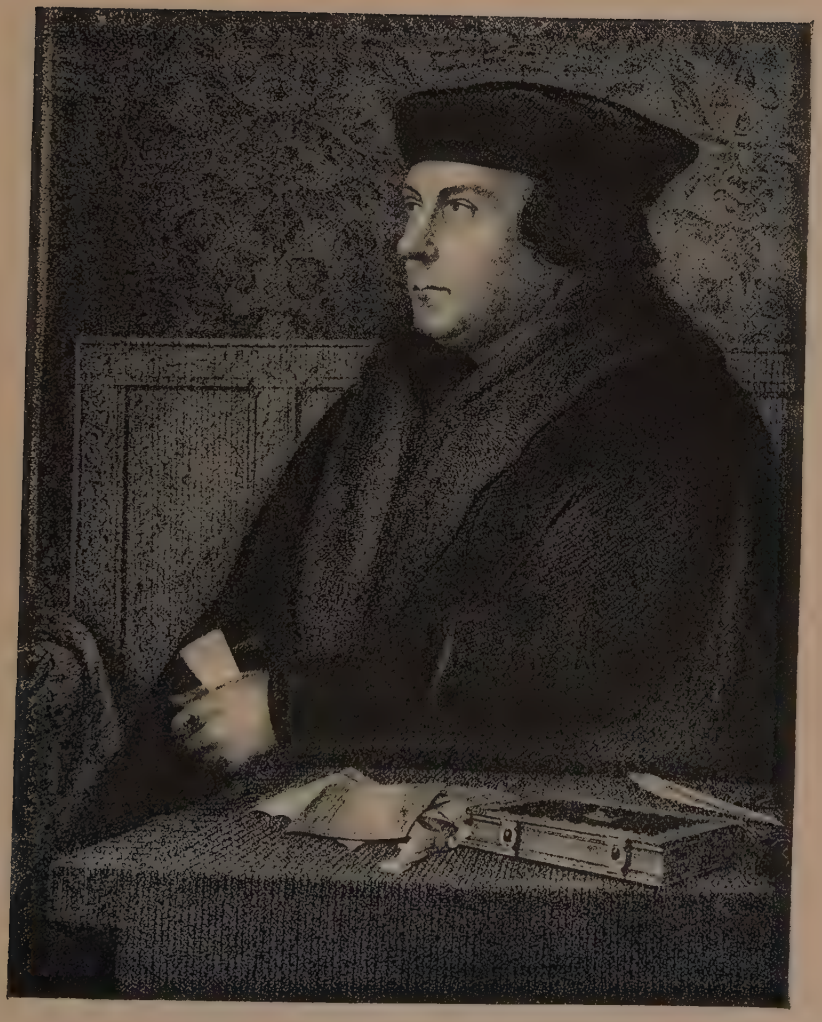
[1] It appears very irregular to us that Sir Thomas More, the Chancellor, should have sat upon the committee, and acted as chairman, for, although Speaker by virtue of his office, he was not a member of the House, and was only entitled to put the question; yet he signed the report before the Duke of Norfolk, the first peer of the realm, or the Duke of Suffolk, the King's brother-in-law. In early times the committee on a bill was not considered necessarily a proceeding of the House, and sometimes a bill was "committed to the Attorney and Solicitor General."

CHAP. V. when matters have been near at judgment by process at your common law, the same Lord Cardinal hath not only given and sent injunctions to the parties, but also sent for your Judges, and expressly by threats commanding them to defer the judgment, to the evident subversion of your laws if the Judges would so have ceased."—"XXXVII. Also he hath divers times given injunction to your servants, that have been before him in the Star Chamber, that they, nor other for them, should make labor, by any manner of way, directly or indirectly, to your Grace, to obtain your gracious favor and pardon ; which was a presumptuous intent for any subject."

The articles agreed to by the Lords but rejected by the Commons.

The authority of the Chief Justice gave such weight to the Articles that they were agreed to by the Lords *nemine contradicente ;* but his ingratitude and tergiversation caused much scandal out of doors, and he had the mortification to find that he might have acted an honorable and friendly part without any risk to himself, as the King, retaining a hankering kindness for his old favorite, not only praised the fidelity of Cavendish[1] and the Cardinal's other dependants who stuck

[1] George Cavendish (1500–1561 ?), biographer of Wolsey. In 1526 or 1527 he entered the service of Cardinal Wolsey as gentleman-usher, "abandoning," as Wolsey said, "his own country, wife, and children, his own house and family, his rest and quietness, only to serve me." From this time to Wolsey's death he was in close attendance upon him, and accompanied him in his embassy to France, about which he gives many curious particulars. When Wolsey lost the royal favor Cavendish stayed with him, and he gives a full account of the life of the great cardinal in his adversity. He was with him when he died at Leicester, and after his funeral went to London, where he was questioned before the privy council about Wolsey's last words. The Duke of Norfolk bore witness in his behalf: "This gentleman both justly and painfully served the Cardinal, his master, like a just and diligent servant." Henry VIII. rewarded him by giving him six of Wolsey's best cart-horses, with a cart to carry his stuff, and five marks for his costs homewards, also ten pounds of unpaid wages, and twenty pounds for a reward. With this Cavendish, in 1530, returned to his home at Glemsford, in Suffolk, where he lived a quiet life. He was attached to the old faith, and looked on with misgivings at the changes of the later years of Henry VIII. In the reign of Mary he was cheered by a ray of hope, and set to work to write down his remembrances of the master whom he loved, but whose career had served to him as a warning against the vanity of human endeavor. Internal evidence shows that his "Life of Wolsey" was written in 1557 ; but it was not published,



THOMAS CROMWELL, EARL OF ESSEX.

After Holbein.

by him in adversity, but took Cromwell[1] into favor, CHAP. V.
and advanced him to the highest dignities, pleased with his gallant defence of his old master: thus the articles of impeachment (on which, probably, Fitzjames had founded hopes of the Great Seal for himself) were ignominiously rejected in the House of Commons.[2]

The recreant Chief Justice must have been much alarmed by the report that Wolsey, whom he had abandoned, if not betrayed, was likely to be restored to power, and he must have been considerably relieved by the certain intelligence of the sad scene at Leicester A.D. 1530.
Abbey[3] in the following autumn, which secured him

for the accession of Elizabeth brought forth changes, and it was dangerous to publish a work which necessarily spoke of disputed questions and reflected on persons who were still alive. C. died in 1561 or 1562.—*Dict. Nat. Biog.*

Sir William Cavendish, the founder of the English house of Devonshire, was born about 1505. After he had served Cardinal Wolsey as gentleman-usher, he became a privy councillor of Henry VIII. about 1546.—*Thomas' Biog. Dict.*

[1] Thomas Cromwell, Earl of Essex, was born in or about 1498, being the son of a blacksmith at Putney, in Surrey. Early in life he became clerk or secretary to the English factory at Antwerp, which situation he soon left, and went into several countries as the secret agent of his sovereign. On his return to England he was taken into the service of Cardinal Wolsey, who obtained for him a seat in the House of Commons, where he defended his master with great spirit. On the fall of the Cardinal the King took Cromwell into his own service, and gave him several valuable and important offices. He was very instrumental in procuring the dissolution of the religious houses and in promoting the principles of the Reformation. For these services he obtained the title of the Earl of Essex, with many manors and estates, chiefly the spoils of the church. At length his affairs took an adverse turn. He had the imprudence to advise the marriage of the King with Anne of Cleves; but the union did not prove agreeable to the tyrant, who wreaked his vengeance on Cromwell by causing him to be attainted of high treason and heresy. He was beheaded on Tower Hill, July 28, 1540. With his dying breath he declared his firm belief in the sacraments and doctrines of the church which he had been engaged in persecuting and robbing during the greater part of his career. —*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

[2] 1 Parl. Hist. 492.

[3] About ¾ m to the north of the town are the insignificant but picturesque ruins of Leicester Abbey, dedicated to "St. Mary of the Meadows," where Cardinal Wolsey died in 1530. The abbey was erected in the 12th cen-

CHAP. V. for ever against the fear of being upbraided or punished in this world according to his deserts.

However, he had now lost all dignity of character, and henceforth he was used as a vile instrument to apply the criminal law for the pleasure of the tyrant on the throne, whose relish for blood soon began to display itself, and became more eager the more it was gratified.

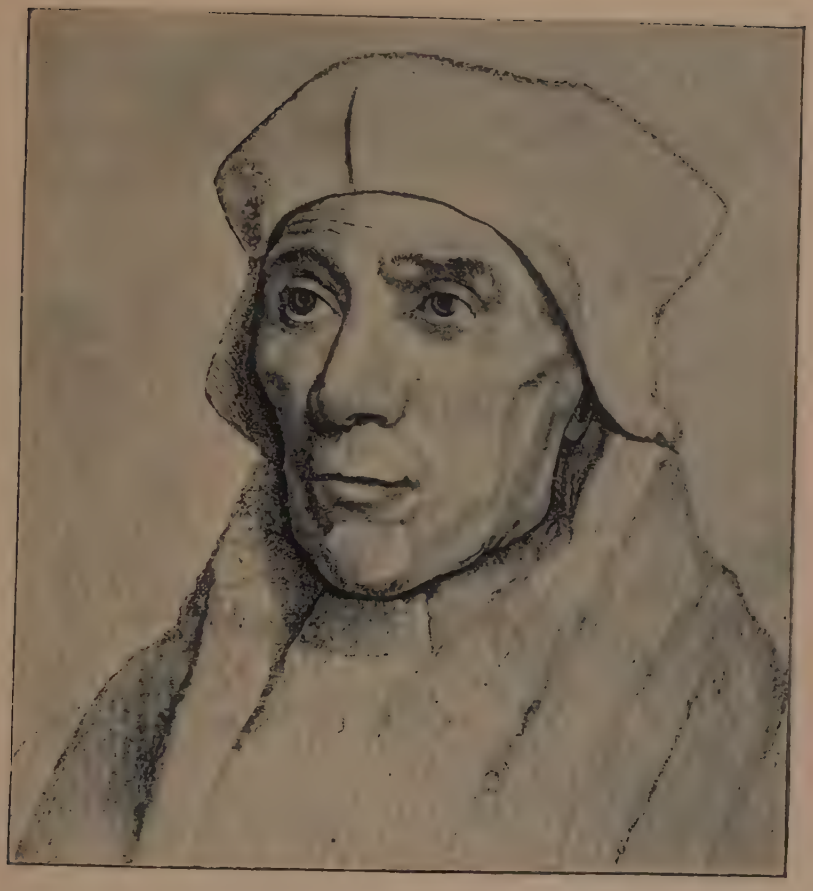
Fitzjames condemns to death Protestants and Roman Catholics.

Henry retaining all the doctrines of the Roman Catholic religion which we Protestants consider most objectionable, but making himself Pope in England in place of the Bishop of Rome, laws were enacted subjecting to the penalties of treason all who denied his *supremacy;* and many of these offenders were tried and condemned by Lord Chief Justice Fitzjames, although he was suspected of being in his heart adverse to all innovation in religion.

I must confine myself to the two most illustrious victims sacrificed by him—Fisher,[1] Bishop of Roches-

tury, but the remaining ruins, except the gateway in the east wall, date only from the 16th century. A house has been built with part of the old materials.—*Baedeker's Gt. Britain*, p. 353.

1 John Fisher (*b. circa* 1459, *d.* 1535), divine, born at Beverley, entered Michael College, Cambridge, in 1483; became a fellow in 1491, and master in 1497. In 1502 he was chosen by Margaret, Countess of Richmond (Henry VII.'s mother), as her chaplain and confessor; the next year he was appointed the first Lady Margaret professor of divinity, the office having been created by his patroness. In 1504 he was elected chancellor of the university, and was also raised to the bench as Bishop of Rochester. He was an ardent advocate of the new learning, and of reformation; but contended that the reform should come from within, and was a strong opponent of Luther. He bravely opposed the divorce which Henry VIII. was seeking from Katherine of Aragon, and so fell under the royal displeasure, which was intensified by his opposition to the King's ecclesiastical supremacy in March, 1534. Having shown some encouragement to the Holy Maid of Kent, he was attainted of misprision of treason, and in April of the same year was committed to the Tower for refusing the oath of succession. When in May of the following year he was made a cardinal, the King grimly remarked to Cromwell, "Let the Pope send him a hat, but I will so provide that he shall wear it on his shoulders, for a head he shall have none to set it on." The brave old man was tried on the 17th of the following June for denial of the King's ecclesiastical suprem-



JOHN FISHER, BISHOP OF ROCHESTER.
After Holbein.

A.D. 1534. Trial of Bishop Fisher on charge of denying Henry's supremacy.

ter, and Sir Thomas More.[1] Henry, not contented with having them attainted of *misprision of treason*, for which they were suffering the sentence of forfeiture of all their property and imprisonment during life, was determined to bring them both to the block; and for

acy, and was executed on Tower Hill. His remains now lie in the chapel of St. Peter ad Vincula in the Tower.—*Cassell's Biog. Dict.*

[1] Sir Thomas More, Chancellor of England, was the son of Sir John More, one of the judges of the King's Bench, and born in Milk Street, London, 1480. He was educated in the family of Cardinal Morton, Archbishop of Canterbury, who was wont to say, "More will one day prove a marvellous man." In 1497 he went to Canterbury College, now Christchurch, Oxford, and, in 1499, became a student of Lincoln's Inn. At the age of twenty-one he obtained a seat in Parliament, where he opposed a subsidy demanded by Henry VII. with such spirit as to incur the resentment of the King, who avenged himself on the judge his father, by causing him to be fined and imprisoned. When admitted to the bar, More delivered a lecture in the church of St. Lawrence-Jewry, on part of St. Augustine's works, and the reputation he thereby acquired procured him to be chosen law-reader in Furnival's Inn. In 1508 he was made judge of the sheriff's court, and a justice of peace. In 1518 he published his "Utopia," a political romance; and about this time the friendship began between him and Erasmus, which lasted through life. Such talents could not pass unnoticed at the court of Henry VIII., who delighted in the conversation of More, and conferred upon him the honor of knighthood; besides which he made him Treasurer of the Exchequer. Sir Thomas assisted the monarch in his book against Luther, and he afterwards defended it in a very able treatise. In 1523 he was chosen Speaker of the House of Commons, at the instance of Wolsey, who was, however, much exasperated by his frustrating an oppressive subsidy; and said, on that occasion, "Would to God, you had been at Rome, Mr. More, when I made you Speaker." To which the other replied, "Your Grace not offended, so would I too." Yet in 1527 they were joined in a mission to France, and, upon More's return, he was made chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster. In 1530 he succeeded Wolsey as Lord Chancellor, which office he discharged for three years with scrupulous integrity. Finding, however, that the affair of the King's divorce, to which he was adverse, would involve him in difficulties, he resigned the seals, and thereby provoked the anger of Henry, who was still more irritated by his refusal to attend the coronation of Anne Boleyn. An attempt was made to implicate him in the practices of Elizabeth Barton; and, though this failed, he was committed to the Tower, for refusing the oath of supremacy. After an imprisonment of twelve months, he was brought to his trial in the Court of King's Bench, where, notwithstanding his eloquent defence, he was found guilty of treason, and sentenced to be beheaded. His behavior, in the interval, corresponded with the uniform tenor of his life; and, on July 6, 1535, he ascended the scaffold, with his characteristic pleasantry, saying to the lieutenant of the Tower, "I pray you, see me safe up; and as for

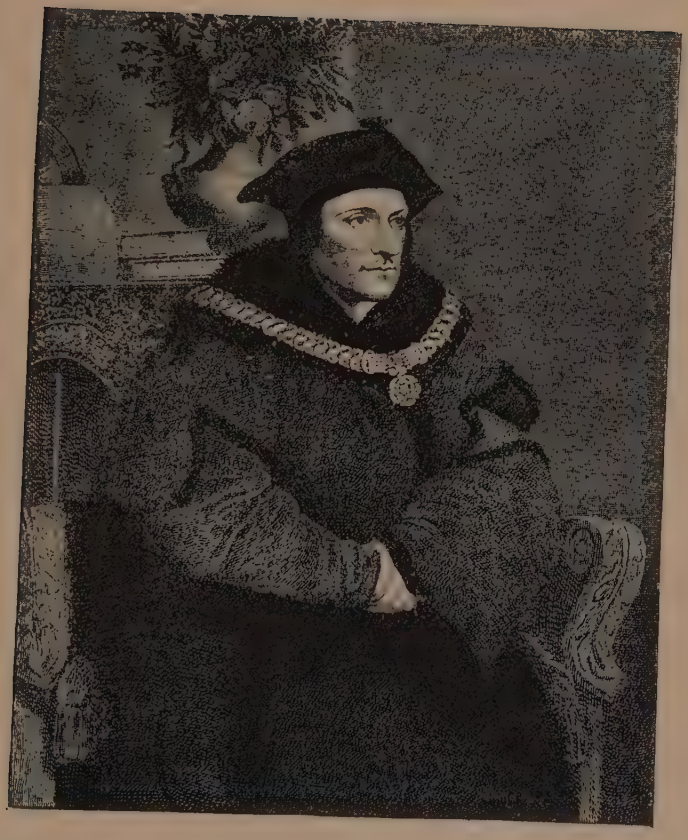
CHAP. V. this purpose issued a special commission to try them on the capital charge of having denied his supremacy. The Lord Chancellor was first commissioner; but it was intended that the responsibility and the odium should chiefly rest on the Lord Chief Justice Fitzjames, who was joined in the commission along with several other common-law judges of inferior rank.

June 17. The evidence of Rich.

The case against the Bishop of Rochester rested on the evidence of Rich,[1] the Solicitor General, who swore he had heard the prisoner say, "I believe in my conscience, and by my learning I assuredly know, that the King neither is, nor by right can be, supreme head of the Church of England;" but admitted that this was in a confidential conversation, which he had introduced by declaring that "he came from the King to ask what the Bishop's opinion was upon this question, and by assuring him that it never should be mentioned to any one except the King, and that the King had promised he never should be drawn into question

my coming down, you may let me shift for myself." In the same spirit, when he laid his head on the block, he told the executioner to wait till he had removed his beard, "for that," said he, "hath committed no treason." Thus fell this illustrious Englishman, whose learning and virtue entitled him to a better fate. The English works of Sir Thomas More were published together, 1557, and his Latin ones at Basle, 1563.—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

[1] Richard Rich resided in his youth in the same parish in London where Sir Thomas More dwelt, and, according to the authority of that eminent man, was of no commendable fame, very light of tongue and a great dicer—one with whom neither he nor any man else would ever in any matter of importance vouchsafe to communicate. "And so," More adds (*Roper*, 82), "in your house at the Temple, where hath been your chief bringing up, were you likewise accounted." Assured of the truth of More's representation, it would be curious to discover by what means a character of this stamp pushed himself up so as to become a reader at the Middle Temple in 1529. (*Dugdale's Orig.* 216.) By what patronage he acquired the office of Attorney General of Wales in 1532 is not told. That of Solicitor General to the King followed on October 10, 1533. This he held till April 13, 1536, a period of two years and a half, during which, by his intrigues, his degrading subserviency, and his bold-faced perjury, though he paved the way to worldly honors, he at the same time secured to his name the everlasting infamy that attaches to it.—*Foss's Lives of the Judges.*



SIR THOMAS MORE.
After Holbein.

for it afterwards." The prisoner contending that he was not guilty of the capital crime charged for words so spoken, the matter was referred to the Judges:

Lord Chief Justice Fitzjames, in their names, declared "that this message or promise from the King to the prisoner neither did nor could, by rigor of law, discharge him; but in so declaring of his mind and conscience against the *supremacy* —yea, though it were at the King's own request or commandment—he committed treason by the statute, and nothing can discharge him from death but the King's pardon."

Fisher's able defence.

Bishop of Rochester.—"Yet I pray you, my Lords, consider that by all equity, justice, worldly honesty, and courteous dealing, I cannot, as the case standeth, be directly charged therewith as with treason, though I had spoken the words indeed, the same not being spoken maliciously, but in the way of advice or counsel when it was required of me by the King himself; and that favor the very words of the statute do give me, being made only against such as shall '*maliciously* gainsay the King's supremacy,' and none other; wherefore, although by rigor of law you may take occasion thus to condemn me, yet I hope you cannot find law, except you add rigor to that law, to cast me down, which herein I have not deserved."

Fitzjames construes "maliciously."

Fitzjames, C. J.—"All my brethren are agreed that '*maliciously*' is a term of art and an inference of law, not a qualification of fact. In truth, it is a superfluous and void word; for if a man speak against the King's supremacy by any manner of means, that speaking is to be understood and taken in law as *malicious*."

Fisher's second plea.

Bishop of Rochester.—"If the law be so, then it is a hard exposition, and (as I take it) contrary to the meaning of them that made the law, as well as of ordinary persons who read it. But then, my Lords, what says your wisdom to this question, 'Whether a single testimony may be admitted to prove me guilty of treason, and may it not be answered by my negative?' Often have I heard it said, that to overcome the presumption from the oath of allegiance to the King's Majesty, and to guard against the dire consequences of the penalties for treason falling on the head of an innocent man, none shall be convicted thereof save on the evidence of two witnesses at the least."

CHAP. V.

Fitzjames, C. J.—"This being the King's case, it rests much in the conscience and discretion of the jury; and as they upon the evidence shall find it, you are either to be acquitted or else to be condemned."

The report says that "the Bishop answered with many more words, both wisely and profoundly uttered, and that with a mervailous, couragious, and rare constancy, insomuch as many of his hearers—yea, some of the Judges—lamented so grievously, that their inward sorrow was expressed by the outward teares in their eyes, to perceive such a famous and reverend man in danger to be condemned to a cruell death upon so weake evidence, given by such an accuser, contrary to all faith, and the promise of the King himself."

He is pronounced guilty.

A packed jury, being left to their conscience and discretion, found a verdict of GUILTY; and Henry was able to make good his saying, when he was told that the Pope intended to send Bishop Fisher a cardinal's hat,—"'Fore God, then, he shall wear it on his shoulders, for I will have his head off."[1]

July 1, 1534. Trial of Sir Thomas More.

The conduct of the Chief Justice at the trial of Sir Thomas More was not less atrocious. After the case for the Crown had been closed, the prisoner, in an able address to the jury, clearly proved that there was no evidence whatever to support the charge, and that he was entitled to an acquittal; when Rich, the Solicitor General, was permitted to present himself in the witness-box, and to swear falsely, that "having observed, in a private conversation with the prisoner in the Tower, 'No parliament could make a law that God should not be God,' Sir Thomas replied, 'No more can the Parliament make the King supreme head of the Church.'"

Rich's false witness.

More is pronounced guilty.

A verdict of GUILTY was pronounced against the prisoner, notwithstanding his solemn denial of ever having spoken these words. He then moved, in arrest of judgment, that the indictment was insufficient, as it

[1] 1 St. Tr. 395–408.

CHAP. V.

did not properly follow the words of the statute which made it high treason to deny the King's supremacy, even supposing that Parliament had power to pass such a statute. The Lord Chancellor, whose duty it was, as head of the commission, to pass the sentence,—"not willing," says the report, "to take the whole load of his condemnation on himself, asked in open court the advice of Sir John Fitzjames, the Lord Chief Justice of England, whether the indictment was valid or no?"

He pleads the insufficiency of the indictment.

Fitzjames, C. J.—"My Lords all, by St. Gillian (for that was always his oath), I must needs confess that if the act of parliament be not unlawful, then the indictment is not, in my conscience, invalid."

Lord Chancellor.—"*Quid adhuc desideramus testimonium? Reus est mortis.*[1] Sir Thomas More, you being, by the opinion of that reverend Judge, the Chief Justice of England, and of all his brethren, duly convicted of high treason, this Court doth adjudge that you be carried back to the Tower of London, and that you be thence drawn on a hurdle to Tyburn, where you are to be hanged till you are half dead, and then being cut down alive and embowelled, and your bowels burnt before your face, you are to be beheaded and quartered, your four quarters being set up over the four gates of the City, and your head upon London Bridge."[2]

His sentence.

[1] "What further testimony do we need? The defendant is deserving of death."

[2] 1 St. Tr. 385–396.

In 1176 the first stone bridge was built by Peter, priest of St. Mary Colechurch, in which Thomas à Becket had been baptized. Hence, on the central pier, Colechurch erected a chapel in honor of the sainted Archbishop, where, when he died in 1205, he was himself buried. This chapel was of great beauty, having a crypt, connected by a flight of stairs with the river. All the other piers were covered with houses, and towards the Southwark side from the end of the sixteenth century stood "Nonsuch House," a fantastic building of wood, said to have been constructed in Holland, with four towers crowned by domes with gilded vanes. The last building on the Southwark side was "the Traitors' Gate." The heads exposed here included those of William Wallace, 1305; the Earl of Northumberland, 1408; and Bishop Fisher and Sir Thomas More, 1535. Hall says that at the end of a fortnight Fisher's head had to be thrown into the Thames, because the bridge was choked up with people coming

CHAP. V.

Fitzjames an accessory to this murder.

No one can deny that Lord Chief Justice Fitzjames was an accessory to this atrocious murder.

May, 1536. Trial of Anne Boleyn and her supposed gallants.

The next occasion of his attracting the notice of the public was when he presided at the trials of Smeaton and the other supposed gallants of Anne Boleyn.[1] Luckily for him, no particulars of these trials have come down to us, and we remain ignorant of the arts by which a conviction was obtained, and even a *confession*,—although there is every reason to believe that the parties were innocent. According to the rules of evidence which then prevailed, the convictions and confessions of the gallants were to be given in evidence to establish the guilt of the unhappy Queen, for whose death Henry was now as impatient as he had once been to make her his wife.

When the Lord High Steward and the Peers assembled for her trial, Fitzjames and the other Judges attended, merely as assessors, to advise on any point of law which might arise.

to see it, "for it could not be perceived to waste nor consume, . . . but daily grew fresher and fresher, so that in his lifetime he never looked so well; for his cheeks being beautified with a comely red, the face looked as though it had beholden the people passing by, and would have spoken to them." Sir Thomas More's head was removed after a time to make room for others, and would also have been thrown into the Thames, but this opportunity had been watched for by his loving daughter Margaret Roper, who bought it and conveyed it safely away to Canterbury. After the Restoration the heads of some of the regicides were exposed here.—*Hare's Walks in London*, vol. i. p. 447.

[1] Anne Boleyn, Queen of Henry VIII. of England, and mother of Queen Elizabeth, was born 1507, being the daughter of Sir Thomas Boleyn. Her early years were spent at the French court, where she attended the wife of Louis XII., on whose death she returned to England, and became maid of honor to Queen Katherine. She thus was often in the company of Henry, who became enamoured of her charms; but not being able to succeed on other than what she considered honorable terms, he resolved to procure a divorce from his first wife. This base design he carried into execution, and married Anne privately; but when she proved with child, he publicly acknowledged her as Queen, and she so continued till the tyrant conceived a passion for Jane Seymour. He then caused Anne to be tried for high treason, in having been unchaste with her brother and four other persons. She was beheaded in the Tower May 19, 1536.—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

CHAP. V.

I do not find that they were consulted till the verdict of GUILTY had been recorded, and sentence was to be pronounced. *Burning* was the death which the law appointed for a woman attainted of treason; yet, as Anne had been Queen of England, some Peers suggested that it might be left to the King to determine whether she should die such a cruel and ignominious death, or be *beheaded*, a punishment supposed to be attended with less pain and less disgrace. But then a difficulty arose, whether, although the King might remit all the atrocities of the sentence on a man for treason, except beheading, which is part of it, he could order a person to be beheaded who was sentenced to be burnt. A solution was proposed, that she should be sentenced by the Lord High Steward to be "burnt or beheaded at the King's pleasure;" and the opinion of the Judges was asked, "whether such a sentence could be lawfully pronounced?"

The verdict.

Fitzjames, C. J.—"My Lords, neither myself nor any of my learned brothers have ever known or found in the records, or read in the books, or known or heard of, a sentence of death in the alternative or disjunctive, and incline to think that it would be bad for uncertainty. The law delights in certainty. Where a choice is given, by what means is the choice to be exercised? And if the sheriff receives no special directions, what is he to do? Is sentence to be stayed till special directions are given by the King? and if no special directions are given, is the prisoner, being attainted, to escape all punishment? Prudent antiquity advises you *stare super antiquas vias;*[1] and that which is without precedent is without safety."

Fitzjames' opinion as to the sentence.

After due deliberation, it was held that an absolute sentence of beheading would be lawful, and it was pronounced accordingly; the Court being greatly

[1] "To stand upon old ways;" i.e., to be attached to old habits or customs and resist novelties or innovations.

CHAP. V.

comforted by recollecting that no writ of error lay, and that their judgment could not be reversed.[1]

Death of Fitzjames.

Fitzjames died in the year 1539, before this judgment served as a precedent for that upon the unfortunate Queen Catherine Howard; and he was much missed when the bloody statute of the Six Articles[2] brought so many, both of the old and of the reformed faith, on capital charges before the Court of King's Bench.

The Six Articles.

He left no descendants; but Sir John Fitzjames, descended from his brother, was a friend and patron of Fuller, the author of the WORTHIES, who, therefore, writes this panegyric on the Chief Justice: "There needs no more be said of his merit, save that King Henry VIII. preferred him, who never used dunce or drone in church or state, but men of activity and ability. He sat above thirteen years in his place, demeaning himself so that he lived and died in the King's favor."

Fuller's panegyric on Fitzjames.

Fitzjames, although not considered by nature cruel or violent, had incurred much obloquy by his ingratitude to Cardinal Wolsey, and by his sneaking subserviency; insomuch that he had not the influence over juries which was desirable for obtaining at all times an easy conviction; and Lord Chancellor Audley[3] sug-

Lord Chancellor Audley.

[1] St. Tr. 410–434; Hall's Henry VIII., fol. 227b; Fox, Mart. ii. 987; Stow, 572; Speed, 1014.

[2] The Six Articles were adopted in 1539, forming the new church in England, and embracing the real presence, communion in both kinds not necessary to salvation; forbidding the marriage of priests; upholding vows of chastity; declaring that private masses should be continued; and providing for the continuance of auricular confession.—*Appl. Encyc.*, vol. viii. p. 652.

[3] Thomas Audley, Lord Audley, was born in Essex, 1488, and educated, it is supposed, at Buckingham College, Cambridge. He afterwards studied law in the Inner Temple. In 1532 he was knighted and made Lord Keeper of the Great Seal, being advanced to the dignity of Lord Chancellor Jan. 26, 1532–3. He was created Lord Audley of Walden 1538, and elected a K.G. 1540. Died April 30, 1544. He is represented to have had much learning, but he proved himself a submissive tool of his tyran-

gested the expediency of having for his successor a man of fair and popular reputation, who at the same time would be likely to make himself agreeable to the King. After the office of Chief Justice of the King's Bench had been kept vacant some months, it was filled by SIR EDWARD MONTAGU, another legal founder of a ducal house still flourishing. CHAP. V. Sir Edward Montagu.

Although he owed his rise entirely to his own exertions, he was of an ancient race. His ancestor, having come over with the Conqueror, built a castle on the top of a sharp hill in Somersetshire, and was thence called "Roger de *Monte acuto.*" The family long took the surname of Montacute; and the elder branch, till it became extinct in the beginning of the reign of Henry VI., for several generations bore the title of Earl of Salisbury. The Chief Justice was the younger son of a younger brother; a junior branch of the family, settled at Hemington in Northamptonshire, who had gradually changed their name to Montagu. He was born at Brigstock in that county, in the latter end of the reign of Henry VII. Being early destined to the profession of the law, which had become the highway to wealth and honors, he was sent when very young to study at an Inn of Chancery, and in due time was entered a member of the Society of the Middle Temple. Here he is said to have made himself, by indefatigable industry, complete master of all the learning of the common law, not neglecting more liberal pursuits, which the example of Sir Thomas More had made fashionable among professional men. I do not find any statement of his call to the bar, or his progress in business; but so highly was he esteemed for learning by the Benchers, His family. His birth and education. His professional progress.

nical master, and must be regarded as a mean, crafty, sordid, and unprincipled politician. He in part founded and endowed Magdalen College, Cambridge.—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

CHAP. V. that he was appointed by them "Autumn Reader" in 1524, and "Double Reader" a few years afterwards.

He is returned to the House of Commons: how a leader of Opposition was dealt with by Hen. VIII.

Enterprising lawyers now began to get on by politics; and when a parliament was summoned in 1523, Montagu contrived to be returned as a member of the House of Commons. But this speculation had nearly ended fatally to him. Like Sir Thomas More and Lord Bacon, he indiscreetly made a maiden speech against granting a supply. This was the parliament in which Sir Thomas More was chosen Speaker, and in which Wolsey had gone down to the House of Commons to complain of the tardy progress of the money bill. Montagu, thinking that he had found a favorable opportunity for his *début*, made a violent harangue on the breach of privilege which had been committed. But the next day he was sent for by the King, who thus addressed him: "Ho! will they not let my bill pass?" The young patriot, in a great fright, knelt down; when Henry, laying his hand on his head, added, "Get my bill to pass by twelve of the clock to-morrow, or else by two of the clock to-morrow this head of yours shall be off." In an instant was Montagu cured of his public spirit, and he became a steady courtier for the rest of his days.

A.D. 1531. When he "put on the coif," or "took upon himself the degree of sergeant-at-law," he gained prodigious applause. A call of sergeants in those times was an event of historical importance, by reason of the festivities attending it, and of its marking an era in the annals of Westminster Hall. The chroniclers celebrate the call of sergeants which included Sir Edward Montagu as the most splendid on record, and ascribe its success in no small degree to his liberality and taste. The feast was held in Ely House,[1] Hol-

[1] Almost opposite St. Andrew's Church, on the left, is the entrance of *Ely Place*, marking the site of the grand old palace of the Bishops of

CHAP. V. Grand feast when Montagu was called Sergeant.

born,[1] and lasted five days: Friday, the 10th of November, and Saturday, Sunday, Monday, and Tuesday following. On the Monday, which was the greatest day, King Henry and Queen Katherine dined there, with all the foreign Ambassadors, all the Judges, the Lord Mayor and Aldermen of London, all the King's Court, and many of the nobility. "It were tedious," says Dugdale, "to set down the preparation of fish, flesh, and other victuals spent in this feast, and would seem almost incredible, and wanted little of a feast at a coronation."[2]

This must have been almost the last occasion of the King being seen in public with his first wife; and he would have been much obliged to the sergeants if they could, by their *cantrips*, have put Anne Boleyn

Ely, once entered by a great gateway, built by Bishop Arundel in 1388. The palace was bequeathed to the see by Bishop John de Kirkeby, who died in 1290. Here, in 1399, died "Old John of Gaunt, time-honored Lancaster," his own palace of the Savoy having been burnt by the rebels under Wat Tyler.

[1] A thoroughfare in London of varying widths. It was anciently called Old-bourne from being built on the side of a brook or bourn (Old bourne or Hilbourne) which emptied into Fleet ditch. By this road criminals were formerly conveyed from Newgate and the Tower to the gallows at St. Giles's and Tyburn. Milton lived in Holborn in 1647-49.—*Hare's London*, vol. ii. p. 196.

[2] However, he gives a few items as a specimen, "noting the prices to show how things had risen in a century":

"There were brought to the slaughter-house,—

	£	s.	d.	
24 great biefes, at	1	6	8	the piece.
100 fat muttons, at	0	2	10	"
51 great veales, at	0	4	8	"
34 porkes, at	0	3	3	"
90 pigs, at	0	0	6	"
Capons of Greece, 10 dozen, at	0	1	8	"
Capons of Kent, 9 dozen and 6, at	0	1	0	"
Cocks of Grose, 7 dozen and 9, at	0	0	8	"
Cocks course, 14 dozen, at 8*d.* and 3*d.* a piece.				
Pullets, the best	0	0	2	ob.
Pigeons, 37 dozen, at	0	0	10	a dozen.
Swans, 13 dozen.				
Larks, 340 dozen, at	0	0	8	" "

—*Dug. Or. Jur.* p. 128; *Stow's Survey of London*, 426.

CHAP. V. in her place; but they contrived to satisfy him highly, and he declared, on his departure, that "the entertainment had been much to his good liking." He took great notice of Sergeant Montagu, whose manners were particularly agreeable, and invited him to the palace at Westminster. From that time, there was a personal intimacy between them, and Montagu was set down a sa royal favorite marked for promotion.

He gains Henry's favor.

He is made Chief Justice of the King's Bench. Jan. 21, 1539-40.

However, year after year passed away, without any change in his position, and he thought himself doomed to perpetual neglect, when, without having been ever Attorney or Solicitor General, or King's Sergeant, or Puisne Judge, he found himself one day Chief Justice of England.

Pleasures and discomforts experienced by him.

For a short time he, no doubt, was pleased in observing the joy of his wife and children; in receiving the congratulations of his friends; in listening to a panegyric on his learning and his virtues from Lord Chancellor Audley; in appointing his officers; in giving good places to his dependants; in putting on his scarlet robes, and throwing the collar of S.S. round his neck; in witnessing the worshipful homage paid to him when he took his seat on the bench; in attending divine service at St. Paul's, and afterwards dining with the Lord Mayor of London; in hearing discourse addressed to him, interlarded with "My Lord" and "Your Lordship;" in limners soliciting leave to draw his portrait; in seeing how the Bar not only nodded submissively to his law, but laughed vociferously at his jests; in encountering the envy and jealousy of his enemies and his rivals; and in finding that his small salary was amply made up to him from the fees, gratuities, and presents which flowed in upon him from all quarters. But it is certain that these pleasures soon faded away, and that he

wished himself again a sergeant-at-law, quietly and drowsily practising in the Court of Common Pleas. Unfortunately for his comfort he had a *conscience*,—and he was unable either to obey its dictates or to silence its reproaches. A Chief Justice in those days, long to relish his elevation, must have been made of sterner stuff than Sir Edward Montagu. CHAP. V.

He professed, and, I believe, sincerely, an inclination for the new doctrines in religion; but, under the statute of the SIX ARTICLES, he was often called upon to convict and to sentence to death both Papists and Protestants. He was still more annoyed by what may be called the *extrajudicial work* required of him. When Anne of Cleves[1] was to be divorced because her person after marriage was found not agreeable, and the King declared that in going through the marriage ceremony he had never, in his own mind, given his consent to the marriage, the Chief Justice was obliged to give an opinion that the marriage had not been duly contracted and ought to be declared null. When Cromwell, for negotiating this marriage, and deceiving the King as to the lady's personal charms, was to lose his head, the Chief Justice was obliged to certify to the House of Lords that innocent acts which he had done with the King's authority amounted to treason, and afforded sufficient ground

Gives an opinion on the invalidity of the King's marriage with Anne of Cleves.

His opinion on Cromwell's acts.

[1] Anne of Cleves, sister to William, Duke of Cleves, and fourth wife of Henry VIII., King of England. Her portrait, drawn by the flattering hand of Holbein, was not unpleasing to the King, but her ungraceful behavior shocked his delicacy at first sight, and he peevishly asked "whether they had brought him a Flanders mare." However, on Jan. 6, 1539-40, he completed his engagement by marrying her at Greenwich. His aversion increasing after marriage, he soon came to the determination of obtaining a divorce. This was proposed to Anne, and her sensibility of mind not being affected by it, an accommodation soon took place. In the following year she retired into privacy, with a pension of £3,000 per annum. The reason which the King gave as a ground for the divorce was, that having espoused her against his will, he had not given an inward consent to the marriage. Anne died at Chelsea, July 16, 1557, and was buried in Westminster Abbey.—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

CHAP. V. for passing a bill of attainder against him. When Queen Catherine Howard,[1] who certainly had been guilty of incontinence before her marriage, but against whom there was no sufficient evidence of such misconduct afterwards as would subject her to the pains of treason, was to be put to death because she had deceived the King in persuading him that she had come a virgin to his arms, the Chief Justice was obliged to answer in the affirmative a question submitted to him, "Whether, as the accused party was a Queen, the law would infer that she had committed adultery, from facts which in the case of a common person would afford no such inference?"[2]

His opinion on the proofs against Catherine Howard. Jan. 1546.

His mind troubled.

This last affair seems to have weighed heavily on his mind; he thenceforth openly declared that he was tired of his dignity, and he even talked of resigning it and retiring into private life. But he was tempted to remain by large grants of abbey lands. An apologist A.D. 1546. says, "In his time, though the golden showers of abbey lands rained amongst great men, it was long before he would open his lap (scrupling the acceptance of such gifts), and at last received but little in proportion to others of that age."[3] This very graphically delineates his character. He would much rather have gained all his objects by honorable means,—but he could not resist temptation, although sin was followed by remorse. In truth, he partook very largely of the

[1] Catherine Howard, fifth wife of Henry VIII., King of England, was the daughter of Lord Edmund Howard. She was educated under the care of her grandmother, the duchess dowager of Norfolk; and when she grew up the charms of her person soon captivated the affections of Henry, who, upon his divorce from Anne of Cleves, married her, and showed her publicly as Queen Aug. 8, 1540. She was afterwards accused of adultery, and being found guilty, was executed Feb. 12, 1541–2.—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

[2] He answered, that the facts put to him hypothetically, "considering the persons implicated, formed a satisfactory presumption that adultery had been committed."

[3] Fuller.

HENRY VIII.
After Holbein.

spoils of the Church, and, in spite of his unhappiness, he was reluctant to renounce not only the emoluments of office, but the chance of further aggrandizement. CHAP. V.

He exchanges his office for the Chief Justiceship of the Common Pleas.

An expedient presented itself, of which he eagerly availed himself. The office of Chief Justice of the Common Pleas became vacant by the sudden death of Sir John Baldwin. This had now acquired the name of the "pillow," from its allowing the possessor to be put to sleep by the somnolent pleadings of the sergeants who exclusively practised there, in conducting real actions, without any excitement from criminal or political trials. For profit it was superior to the Chief Justiceship of the King's Bench; and most of those who had the good luck to lay their heads upon it, when taken from the tumults of the bar, remained fully contented with it for life. Yet, being inferior in point of rank, an etiquette had prevailed that no one could accept it who had been in the higher situation of Chief Justice of England. Montagu probably had some scruples, as usual when he was about to do an improper action; but if he had any, he soon overcame them, for a few days after Baldwin's death he went to the King, and, after making a parade of his services, and his loyalty, and his extreme desire still to be of service to his Highness, he feigned ill-health and infirmity, and prayed that he might be allowed to be Chief Justice of the Common Pleas instead of the King's Bench. Wriothesley,[1] a rigorous Roman Catholic,

Wriothesley.

[1] Thomas Wriothesley (Lord Wriothesley, Earl of Southampton), according to Dugdale, was entered at Gray's Inn in 1534; but he does not appear to have taken any office in that society, nor does his name occur in any law report. In 1537, however, he was appointed coroner and attorney in the Court of Common Pleas, and in 1538 he was placed in the responsible post of one of the king's secretaries, and knighted. In 1540 he was made constable of Southampton Castle, and two years afterwards of that of Portchester; and to these honorable appointments was added the profitable one of chamberlain of the Exchequer. In 1545 he acted as one of the commissioners for managing the treaty of league with the Emperor Charles, and on January 1, 1544, was raised to the peerage

CHAP. V. was then Chancellor, and he bore no good will to Montagu, who advocated the King's supremacy, and was a grantee of Church property. However, he thought that such a character would be less mischievous in the obscurer place which he coveted, and by his advice the King consented to the exchange.

A.D. 1546. Accordingly, on the 6th Nov., 1546, Montagu was superseded as Chief Justice of the King's Bench, and took his seat as Chief Justice of the Common Pleas.[1]

His complacency in his new office.

Now he was like a ship that, having been tossed on a stormy ocean, suddenly enters a creek where the winds are stilled and the waters are smooth. He might feel some mortification when he saw Richard Lyster, whom he had lately snubbed at the bar, take precedence of him in judicial processions as Lord Chief Justice of the King's Bench; and when he thought that his decisions were liable to be reversed by the caprice of that court where his word had been law; but he must have exulted in experiencing the quiet and security he had managed to obtain,—in soothing his conscience by resolutions to repent of past transgressions, without being driven to commit new ones,—and in thinking that, when the golden showers of abbey lands again fell, he might still open his lap.

During the remainder of this memorable reign,

by the title of Baron Wriothesley of Tichfield in Hants, the monastery of which had been granted to him. The sickness of Lord Audley quickly following, the Great Seal was placed in Wriothesley's hands on April 22 as keeper, a title which was changed on May 3 to that of Lord Chancellor, on Audley's death. Before the end of the year he was installed a Knight of the Garter. The change from Lord Chancellor Audley to Lord Chancellor Wriothesley was a fatal one to many of those who were proselytes to the new religious tenets. The king having publicly exhibited his own sentiments, by passing the act of the Six Articles, Wriothesley, always a secret supporter of these extreme doctrines, now pursued to extremity those who impugned them.—*Foss's Lives of the Judges.*

[1] Pat. 37 Henry VIII. p. 18. Fuller remarks, "A descent in honor, but ascent in profit,—it being given to old age rather to be thrifty than ambitious."

CHAP. V.

His conduct on the trial of the Duke of Norfolk.

once, and once only, he was in danger of being subjected to the like perils, pangs, and remorse to which he had been exposed when Chief Justice of the King's Bench. The old Duke of Norfolk,[1] having become obnoxious to the Seymours, who were gaining an ascendency at Court, was under prosecution for treason, the principal charge against him being that, as he was descended from the royal family through a female, he had ever since his father's death quartered on his shield the royal arms of England with a difference. The two Chief Justices were summoned to attend his examination before the Council, and it was expected that they would be asked whether this pretension, which ought to have been decided by the College of Heralds, amounted to a compassing of the King's death under the statute of 25 Edw. III. But, luckily for the consciences of the Chief Justices, the Duke, knowing the hopelessness of a defence, and hoping to soften the King by submission, voluntarily subscribed, in their presence, a formal confession of his guilt, whereby he admitted that he had quartered the royal arms in the manner alleged, which, as he knew, by the laws of this realm amounted to high treason. This document was attested by the two Chief Justices (Montagu signing after Lyster[2]), and all they could be blamed for was that they did not caution him against such an indiscretion.

The Duke's Confession.

As soon as the proceeding had been completed in due form, it was made the foundation of an act of attainder, and the Duke would have suffered death as

The Duke attainted.

[1] Thomas Howard, Duke of Norfolk, stood at the head of the party hostile to Cromwell and to the reformers. The Seymours had risen into high favor with the king, and there was bitter jealousy between them and the Howards. The latter belonged to the old nobility, and leaned towards the old faith; the Seymours were "new" men, and well disposed to the new doctrines.—*Thompson's Hist. of Eng.*, p. 167.

[2] 1 St. Tr. 458.

CHAP. V. a traitor if there had not been an opportune demise of the Crown early in the morning of the day appointed for his execution.

Jan. 28, 1547.

Montagu's commission renewed by Edward VI.

The commission of Montagu as Chief Justice of the Common Pleas was renewed, and he held the office during the whole of the reign of Edward VI. Although he had been named one of Henry VIII.'s executors, he long contrived to steer clear of the violent factions by which the country was agitated. But, after the tragical end of both the Seymours,[1] Dudley, Duke of Northumberland,[2] having become complete master of the kingdom, and seeing the approaching end of the

[1] Edward Seymour, Duke of Somerset, K.G., was the eldest son of Sir John Seymour, by Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Henry Wentworth. In 1533 he accompanied the Duke of Suffolk to France, and was knighted the same year. When his sister became the wife of Henry VIII., in 1536, he was created Viscount Beauchamp and Earl of Hertford. In 1540 he was made Knight of the Garter, and in 1542 Lord Chamberlain of England. In 1544 he was appointed Lieutenant-General of the North, and commanded an expedition against the Scots. The same year he was at the siege of Boulogne, where he defeated the French, who lay encamped before the place. By the king's will, he was nominated one of his executors and governor of his son; but Seymour soon after was declared protector of the kingdom. In 1548 he was appointed lord-treasurer, created Duke of Somerset, and made earl marshal of England. The same year he marched into Scotland, and gained the victory of Musselburgh; but though this raised his reputation, his fate was now fast approaching, to which the execution of his brother, the admiral, greatly contributed. His greatest enemy was the Earl of Warwick, and though a marriage had been effected between their children, yet when that nobleman became Duke of Northumberland he accused Seymour of treason, and he was executed on Tower Hill, Jan. 22, 1551–2.—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

[2] John Dudley, Duke of Northumberland, was born about 1502. He was restored in blood 1511, and afterwards became the favorite of Henry VIII., who created him Viscount Lisle and made him one of the executors of his will. On the death of that monarch he was created Earl of Warwick, and in 1551 Duke of Northumberland. Finding that Edward VI. was in a dying state, the duke contrived a marriage between his son, Lord Guilford Dudley, and the Lady Jane Grey, daughter of the Duke of Suffolk, after which he persuaded the king to settle the crown upon that unfortunate lady, to the exclusion of his sisters. On the death of Edward, Lady Jane was proclaimed queen; but Mary's adherents were too powerful, and the Duke of Northumberland perished on the scaffold, August 22, 1553, as his son and daughter-in-law also did some time afterwards.—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

young King, resolved to prolong his own rule by defeating the succession of the Princess Mary. He thought that the Chief Justice of the Common Pleas would be a useful instrument in carrying into effect the project he had formed. This was to induce the dying Edward to make a will disinheriting his sisters, Mary[1] and Elizabeth, and leaving the crown to his cousin, Lady Jane Grey.[2] Of all the Judges on the bench, Montagu was considered to have the fairest character, with the weakest nerves; and, without any notice of the business to be debated, he and two or three Puisnies, over whom he was supposed to have influence, were summoned to attend a council at Greenwich,[3] where the court then lay. Being required to

He is employed to make the will of Edward VI. in favor of Lady Jane Grey.

[1] Mary was the daughter of Katharine of Aragon; Elizabeth's mother was Anne Boleyn, while Edward was the son of Jane Seymour.

[2] Lady Jane Grey was the daughter of Henry Grey, Marquis of Dorset, by Lady Frances Brandon, daughter of the Duke of Suffolk; so that she was royally descended on both sides. She was born in 1537, at Bradgate, her father's seat in Leicestershire; and early in life gave proofs of an uncommon genius. She worked admirably with her needle; wrote an incomparable hand; played well on different instruments; and acquired a knowledge of the Greek and Latin, as well as of the French and Italian languages. In 1551 her father was created Duke of Suffolk; and at this time Lady Jane Grey was much at court, where the ambitious Duke of Northumberland projected a marriage between her and his son, Lord Guilford Dudley, which took place at the end of May, 1553. Soon after this Edward VI. died, having been prevailed upon in his last illness to settle the crown upon the Lady Jane, who, sorely against her will, was proclaimed with great pomp. This gleam of royalty, however, was of short duration. The kingdom was dissatisfied and the nobility indignant at the presumption of Northumberland; so that Mary soon overcame her enemies, and she was not backward in taking ample revenge. Lady Jane and her husband, after being confined in the Tower some months, were arraigned and condemned to death, Nov. 3, 1553. This sentence, however, was not carried into execution till the 12th of February, 1553–4, when Lord Guilford suffered first, and his lady immediately afterwards on the same scaffold.—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

[3] The first royal abode at Greenwich was built by Duke Humphrey of Gloucester, uncle to Henry VI., who called his palace "Placentia" or the manor of Pleasaunce. He also enclosed the park and built a tower on the site of the present Observatory. Edward IV. enlarged the palace, and it continued a favorite royal residence until the commencement of the civil war.—*Murray's Kent*, p. 6.

CHAP. V. A.D. 1553.

prepare a will for the King to the effect before stated, he was thrown into greater perplexity than he had ever experienced when Chief Justice of the King's Bench under Henry VIII.; and, although charged to obey upon his allegiance, he plucked up courage to refuse till he should have an opportunity to look into the acts passed for regulating the succession, and to consult the whole of his brethren. The more he considered the matter, the more he was frightened, for he saw that what he was asked to do was not only contrary to law, but would be sure to expose him to the penalties of treason. Accordingly, at a council held two days after, he explained that by act of parliament the crown was entailed on the Lady Mary after the death of his Highness without issue, and that nothing short of an act of parliament could alter this destination. But, Northumberland threatening the utmost violence against all who should attempt to thwart his inclination, the following plan was resorted to—that a commission should pass the great seal, authorizing Montagu to draw the will in the prescribed form; that it should, when drawn and executed by Edward, be signed by all the Judges; and that a pardon at the same time should pass the great seal to indemnify them for any offence against the law which they might thereby have committed. Thus fortified, Montagu drew the will, and under it the Lady Jane Grey was proclaimed Queen of England.

His perplexity.

Coerced by Northumberland.

Lady Jane Grey proclaimed Queen, July 9.

He waited upon her when she came from Sion House[1] to the Tower of London preparatory to her coronation; but he was one of the first to desert her when he heard of the general expression of loyalty in favor of Queen Mary.

[1] Sion House, Isleworth, Middlesex, is the seat of the Duke of Northumberland. It is a very large and imposing structure, said to contain 365 windows to equal the number of days in the year.—*Wheeler's Familiar Allusions.*

CHAP. V.

He loses his office on the accession of Queen Mary.

For some time he was in considerable danger of a capital prosecution, the will of Edward being in his handwriting, and a report being spread that he had furnished the arguments in law by which an attempt had been made to support it. He was arrested, confined in the Tower, and subjected to repeated examinations; but Bishop Gardyner,[1] now Chancellor and Prime Minister, was convinced that he had acted under constraint, and, while others expiated on the scaffold the offence in which he had been implicated, after six weeks' imprisonment he was set at liberty, being punished only by the loss of his Chief Justiceship, by a fine of 1000*l.*, and by the surrender of some abbey lands granted to him at the recommendation of the Protector Somerset.

His death.

He then retired to his country house, where he died on the 10th of February, 1556. He was buried with his ancestors in Hemington church, and a splendid marble monument was there erected to his memory, with the following semi-barbarous inscription, which, if prepared by himself, shows that he did not concur in the saying that "the receiver of abbey lands can have no faith in prayers for the dead."

His Epitaph.

"ORATE PRO ANIMA EDWARDI MOUNTAGU MILITIS NUPER CAPITALIS JUSTIC. DE COMMUNI BANCO APUD WESTM.

"Montacute pater, legum jurisque magister,
O Edwarde, vale! quem disciplina severa
Furit et improbitas hominum scelerata timebat.
Moribus antiquis vixisti, pacis amator,

[1] Stephen Gardiner (*b.* 1483, *d.* 1555), English ecclesiastical statesman; natural son of Dr. Woodville, Bishop of Salisbury, brother of Edward IV.'s queen; became secretary to Cardinal Wolsey, was employed to negotiate the divorce from Katharine of Aragon, and was named Bishop of Winchester in 1531 and secretary of state; adopted the king's supremacy over the Church, and defended it in *De Vera Obedientia*, but opposed Cromwell and the Protestants; was imprisoned under Edward VI. and deprived of his bishopric, but was restored and made chancellor under Mary; first opposed and afterwards forwarded the Spanish marriage; directed the persecution, in the midst of which he died.—*Cassell's Biog. Dict.*

CHAP. V.

Virtutis rigidus custos, vitiique flagellum.
O venerande senex! te luxuriosa juventus,
Criminis ultorem metuens, in funere gaudet
Patria sed meret, sancto spoliata latore,
Qui vixit justi summus defensor et æqui.
Hunc tu præteriens lector defende precando."[1]

Having been thrice married, he left eight sons and nine daughters, for all of whom he was able amply to provide. The title of Duke of Montagu bestowed upon one branch of his descendants, and of Earl of Halifax upon another, have become extinct, but the Duke of Manchester and the Earl of Sandwich are sprung from him in the direct male line.

The five obscure Chief Justices of the King's Bench.

The next five persons successively appointed to the office of Chief Justice of the King's Bench (Sir Richard Lyster, 9th Nov. 1546; Sir Roger Cholmley, 21st March, 1552; Sir Thomas Bromley, 4th Oct. 1553; Sir William Portmore, 11th June, 1554; and Sir Edward Saunders, 8th May, 1556) were neither eminent in their profession nor connected with the stirring events of the times in which they lived. I shall therefore pass them over without further notice, and introduce to the reader a contemporary Chief Justice of the Common Pleas, to whom we lawyers still look up with much reverence—SIR JAMES DYER.

Sir James Dyer, Lord Chief Justice of the Common Pleas.

I myself am bound particularly to honor him as the first English lawyer who wrote for publication "Reports of Cases" determined in our municipal courts,—being followed by a long list of imitators, containing my humble name. To show the respect in which our craft was once held, and to excuse myself to the reader for introducing a Law Reporter, I begin with some Latin lines, composed by his editor soon after his death, when a huge folio, the labor of thirty years, was given to the world:

[1] 2 Bridge's Northampton, 347.

"CANDIDO LECTORI CARMEN.

CHAP. V.
Latin verses in his praise.

Ecce per assiduos tandem collecta labores,
Expectata diu, jam monumenta patent.
Et quæ ter denos vix sunt congesta per annos,
En uno inclusit pro brevitate libro.
In cujus laudem, satis est scripsisse Dierum,
Patronoque alio non opus esse reor.
Cujus nota satis doctrina, potentia, virtus,
Cujus juncta gravi cum pietate fides.
Cujus summus honor, cujus veneranda potestas,
Semper erunt domini signa notæque sui.
Ergo vade Liber, primoque in fronte, Dierum
Inscriptum gestas, hoc duce tutus eris.
Improba ne dubites vani convicia vulgi,
Sat tibi sit tanti gesta fuisse viri.
Quem nec consumet spatium nec longa vetustas,
Tempora quem rapient nulla, nec ulla dies:
Docte Diere vale, tua fama perennis Olympo
Vivet ad extremos te moriente dies."

I may not flatter myself that I can assist in fulfilling these prophecies, and in making his name immortal; but I can easily show that he deserves a place among the Worthies of Westminster Hall.

His origin and education.

He was descended from an ancient family of Somersetshire, which likewise produced Sir Edward Dyer,[1] Chancellor of the Garter under Queen Elizabeth,—an eminent poet, as well as an accomplished courtier, and a very formidable competitor with the Earl of Leicester[2]

[1] Sir Edward Dyer, an English poet, was born probably in Somersetshire about 1540. He was educated at Oxford; after which he become a courtier, and was appointed Chancellor of the Garter in 1596. He died about 1610. Some of his poems are in "England's Helicon."—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

[2] Robert Dudley, Earl of Leicester, fifth son of Sir John Dudley, afterwards Duke of Northumberland, was born in or about 1532. He also was condemned with his father, but received a pardon, and was restored in blood by Queen Mary. In the next reign he was made Master of the Horse, Knight of the Garter, and a member of the privy Council. In 1560 his lady died, not without suspicion of violence, it being generally believed that Dudley aspired to the hand of his sovereign. Elizabeth, however, proposed him to Mary Queen of Scots for a husband, but that unfortunate princess treated the overture indignantly. In 1564 he was created Baron Denbigh and Earl of Leicester; soon after which he was elected Chancellor of Oxford. About 1572 he privately married Lady Douglas Sheffield, by whom he had two children, but as he never would acknowledge the mother for his wife, the offspring were considered ille-

CHAP. V. and Sir Christopher Hatton[1] for the favors of their royal mistress.—James Dyer was born about the year 1512, and was the second son of Richard Dyer, who had a good estate at Wincanton, in that county.

Whetstones' rhymes. Whetstones, the rhyming biographer, who celebrated the great ornaments of the reign of Elizabeth, gives us this account of his education:

> "In tender yeares he was to learning set;
> And vessels long their seasoned liquors taste;
> As time grew on, he did to Oxford get,
> And so from thence he was in *Strand Inne*[2] plaste;
> But him with fame the Middle Temple graste:
> The depth of lawe he searcht with painefull toyle,
> Not cunning quirks the simple man to spoyle."[3]

His early genius for reporting. As a proof of the early genius he displayed for reporting, we are told by prose authorities that he was remarkable for a diligent attendance in the courts of law every morning from seven to eleven, with his note-book, in which he took down, in short-hand, the arguments and judgments in all important cases occurring in Westminster Hall. When he returned to his chamber after supper, at six o'clock, he digested and abridged his notes into a lucid report of each case, introducing only the facts necessary for raising the

A.D. 1530.

gitimate. In 1575 the earl entertained the queen at his castle of Kenilworth, in Warwickshire, but offended her very much the year following by marrying the countess dowager of Essex. In 1585 he was appointed governor of the Protestant Low Countries, but returned the same year by the queen's command. He went thither again in 1587, but owing to the public complaints, he was recalled from thence within a few months. In 1588 he was appointed to command the forces assembled at Tilbury on the prospect of a Spanish invasion; but he died Sept. 4, the same year, at Cornbury, in Oxfordshire, and was buried at Warwick.—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

[1] Sir Christopher Hatton (*b.* 1540, *d.* 1591), English courtier and judge, a great favorite with Queen Elizabeth, who called him her "Liddes," and made him captain of her guard, vice-chamberlain, and (1587) Lord Chancellor. He was one of the commissioners for the trial of Mary Stuart.—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

[2] Then an Inn of Chancery where legal studies began.

[3] THE LIFE AND DEATH OF THE GOOD LORD DYER," reprinted in 1816 at the Auchinlack press.

point of law determined, with a brief statement of the manner in which it was presented by the counsel to the court, and the opinion of each of the judges;—improving infinitely upon the YEAR-BOOKS, which generally presented a confused mass of dialogue between the counsel and the judges,—the reader often being left in doubt whether the speaker stood at the bar or sat on the bench. Hence the admirable reports of Lord Chief Justice Dyer, which were afterwards given to the world, and hence the valuable labors of succeeding reporters on the same model. CHAP. V. His merits as a reporter.

After having been a student of law rather more than seven years, he was called to the bar. His progress there was not very rapid, for both his parts and acquirements are said to have been more solid than brilliant. He avoided all evil arts to promote the success either of others or of himself. A.D. 1537.

> "He with much care his clyents' wrongs redrest;
> By vertue thus he clymede above the rest,
> And feared no fall, sith merit was his guide,
> When reaching heads ofte slip in cheifest pride."[1]

He steadily advanced in business and in reputation, insomuch that in the last parliament of Edward VI. he was returned as a member of the House of Commons; and he was elected Speaker, although without the rank of Solicitor General, or of Sergeant, usually considered necessary for that dignity. We have no particulars of his performance when, being presented at the bar of the House of Lords, he prayed that the privileges of the Commons might be allowed,—for the Journals merely say that he made "an ornate oration before the King." On account of Edward's declining health, the parliament sat only one month,[2]—at the end of which, Dyer ceased for ever to be a parliament man; and, having received 100*l.* for his Mar. 1553. He is Speaker of the House of Commons.

[1] Whetstones.

[2] 1 Parl. Hist. 599-602.

CHAP. V. A.D. 1553.

fee as Speaker, he was probably not sorry to be freed from the distraction of politics, that he might devote himself exclusively to his favorite pursuit.

Immediately after, he took the degree of Sergeant at Law; and, as he had warmly espoused the Protestant side, it was expected that he would soon receive high promotion; but his hopes seemed extinguished by the premature death of the Protestant King, and the accession of the bigoted Mary.

He had no concern in the plot for putting the Lady Jane Grey on the throne, and, as a sound lawyer, he had denied the power of Edward to change the succession to the crown by his will, contrary to an act of parliament as well as to the common law of the realm.

Oct. 19. He is made Queen's Sergeant.

It was probably for that reason that, although he did not, like many others, now change his religion, he was honored with the appointment of Queen's Sergeant. I presume that, without any formal reconciliation to the Church of Rome, he must, after the example of Sir Nicholas Bacon,[1] Sir William Cecil,

[1] Sir Nicholas Bacon (*b.* 1510, *d.* 1579) was born at Chiselhurst and educated for the law, obtaining in 1537 the office of Solicitor to the Court of Augmentations. During the reign of Mary, Sir Nicholas, like many others, conformed to the Catholic religion, although he had been, under Edward VI., an active supporter of the Reformation. Having married a daughter of Sir Anthony Cooke, he became Cecil's brother-in-law, and by the latter's recommendation obtained the post of Lord Keeper of the Great Seal on the accession of Elizabeth. He speedily won the confidence of the Queen, and became famous for his decisions in equity. In 1561 he did his best to bring about an alliance with the Huguenot leaders in France, and subsequently strongly supported the marriage of the Queen, whose favor he lost for a time in 1564, owing to his having participated in the publication of John Hales's book on the succession. The Lord Keeper was for this offence struck off the roll of Privy Councillors, at the instance of his enemy, the Earl of Leicester, and "strictly enjoined to meddle with no business whatever except that of the Court of Chancery." Shortly afterwards, however, he recovered his position at Court. In 1568 he was one of the commissioners to inquire into the guilt of the Queen of Scots in the matter of the Darnley murder, and he superintended the trial of the Duke of Norfolk in 1572, although he took no active part in it. Lord Keeper Bacon had a great influence

and the Princess Elizabeth herself,—good Protestants in their hearts,—have conformed, during this reign, to the dominant worship; for Lord Chancellor Gardyner could not have recommended to the royal favor a notorious schismatic. CHAP. V.

April, 1554. He conducts the prosecution against Sir Nicholas Throckmorton.

Dyer certainly enjoyed the confidence of Mary's Government; and he was employed as one of the counsel to prosecute Sir Nicholas Throckmorton, charged with high treason, as an accomplice in Sir Thomas Wyatt's[1] rebellion.[2] On this occasion, he met with a signal defeat; the prisoner, who was a man of great ingenuity and eloquence, having the almost unprecedented good luck, in those ages, to obtain a verdict of acquittal. We have a very minute report of the proceedings, showing that as yet there were no rules whatever as to procedure or evidence on criminal trials. Much of the time was occupied with questioning the prisoner, and, instead of any formal speeches being delivered, a conversation was kept up between

over his brother-in-law Cecil, and is said to have framed the acts aimed at the Queen of Scots and her supporters. He died Feb. 20, 1579, having held his office for twenty years. His son says of him: "He was a plain man, direct and constant, without all finesse and doublenesse," whilst a contemporary describes him as "a man of greate diligence and ability in his place, whose goodnesse preserved his greatness from suspicion, envye, and hate."—*Dict. Eng. Hist.*

[1] Sir Thomas Wyatt was born in 1520 or 1521. He inherited his father's estate in 1542, and served with distinction in the war against the French between 1544 and 1550. Wyatt and the Duke of Suffolk became in 1554 the leaders of an insurrection, the design of which was to dethrone Queen Mary or to prevent her marriage with Philip II. Wyatt gained some successes over the royalist forces, and entered Southwark. He was captured in London and executed in April, 1554.—*Thomas' Biog. Dict.*

[2] It has been supposed that he acted as one of the judges on this occasion, because his name is mentioned in the commission (see Life of Dyer, prefixed to the last edition of his Reports); but it is mentioned with that of the Attorney General, and it always has been, and still is, the custom, in commissions of oyer and terminer, to name the King's counsel as commissioners; this nomination not preventing them from practising as advocates before their brother commissioners. I have often thought of the difficulty which would arise if they were to be guilty of a contempt of court, and deserve to be committed,—since, for anything I know, they might at any moment seat themselves on the bench and act as judges.

CHAP. V. A.D. 1554.

the judges, the jury, the counsel, and the prisoner, in the midst of the reading of written confessions and depositions. When the jury had been sworn, thus spoke Sir Nicholas:

Throckmorton's remarks.

"And it may please you, Master Sergeant, and the others my masters of the Queen's learned counsel, albeit you are appointed to give evidence against me, yet I pray you remember I am not alienate from you, but that I am your Christian brother. You ought to consider that you are not so privileged but you have a duty of God; which, if you exceed, will be grievously required at your hands. It is lawful for you to use your gifts which I know God hath largely given you, as your learning, art, and eloquence, so as thereby you do not seduce the minds of the simple and unlearned jury. For, Master Sergeant, I know how by persuasions, enforcements, prescriptions, applying, implying, inferring, conjecturing, deducing of arguments, wresting and exceeding the law, the circumstances, the depositions, and confessions, unlearned men may be enchanted to think and judge things indifferent, or at the worst but oversights, to be great treasons. Almighty God, by the mouth of his prophet, doth conclude such advocates to be cursed, saying, 'Cursed be he that doth his office craftily, corruptly, and maliciously.' And consider, also, that my blood shall be required at your hands, and punished in you and yours to the third and fourth generation. You and the Justices, when called in question, excuse such erroneous doings by the verdict of twelve men; but I assure you such purgation serveth you as it did Pilate, and you will wash your hands of my bloodshed as Pilate did of Christ's. And now to your matter."

Throckmorton interrogated.

An attempt was first made to induce the prisoner to confess, without any evidence being given against him, and he is thus interrogated:

"'How say you, Throgmorton, Did not you send Winter to Wyat, and devise that the Tower of London should be taken?' —*A.* 'I confess I did say to Winter that Wyat was desirous to speak with him.' *Q.* 'Yea, sir, and you devised together of

taking the Tower of London, and of other great treasons.'— *A.* 'No, I did not so: prove it.'" CHAP. V. A.D. 1554.

Dyer afterwards said,—"And it may please you, my Lords, and you, my masters of the jury, to prove that Throckmorton is a principal doer in this rebellion, many things are to be declared,—amongst others, Crofte's confession. He saith, Sir Nicholas, that he and you, and your accomplices, did many times devise about the whole matters, and he made you privy to all his determinations." *Throckmorton:* "Master Crofte is yet living, and is here this day; how happeneth it he is not brought face to face to justify this matter? Either he said not so, or he will not abide by it." *Dyer:* "For the better confirmation of all the treasons objected against the prisoner, and therein to prove him guilty, you of the jury shall hear the Duke of Suffolk's deposition, who was a principal, and hath suffered accordingly."

"Then," says the report, the said Sergeant read the Duke's confession touching the prisoner, amounting to this effect, *That the Lord Thomas Grey did inform the said Duke that Sir Nicholas Throckmorton was privy to the whole devices.*"

Throckmorton: "But what doth the principal author of this matter say against me; I mean the Lord Thomas Grey, who is yet living? Why is not his deposition brought against me, for so it ought to be if he can say anything? Neither the Lord Thomas Grey hath said, can say, or will say anything against me, notwithstanding the Duke's confession and accusation, or he should have been here now. The Duke doth refer only to what he says he has heard from the Lord Thomas."

After a long trial, conducted in the same fashion, the jury very properly found a verdict of NOT GUILTY,— for which they were imprisoned and heavily fined.[1] Throckmorton acquitted.

[1] 2 St. Tr. 869-902.—However unconstitutional the practice may have been, there is no doubt that in the Tudor reigns juries were summoned before the Star Chamber or Privy Council, and fined for verdicts of acquittal in criminal cases, and sometimes even when they convicted the prisoner. Sir Thomas Smith says that he had seen in his time (that of Elizabeth) an inquest for pronouncing one guilty of treason contrary to the evidence, not only imprisoned, but heavily fined; and another inquest for acquitting another, both fined and "put to open ignominie and shame." But he makes the important admission that "those doings were even then of many accounted very violent, tyrannical, and contrary to the liberty and custom of the realm of England." This arbitrary conduct of the crown was

CHAP. V. This acquittal was a great mortification to the Government, although they had the consolation of con-

imitated by the courts of law, and several attempts were made by the latter, by the exercise of their own mere authority, to fine and imprison jurors, on the ground that their verdict was false. But it was solemnly decided, in the reign of Charles II., that this was contrary to law. The occasion of this judgment was a case where, on a return to a writ of *habeas corpus*, it was alleged that the prisoner had been committed to prison, for that being a juryman among others charged at the Sessions Court of the Old Bailey to try an issue between the King and Penn and Mead, upon an indictment for assembling unlawfully and tumultuously, he did, *contra plenam et manifestam evidentiam*, openly given in court, acquit the prisoners indicted. Chief Justice Vaughan said, "That the court could not fine a jury at the common law where attaint did not lie (for where it did it is agreed they could not), I think to be the clearest position that ever I considered, either for authority or reason of law."—*Forsyth's Trial by Jury*, (Morgan's Ed.), p. 153.

If the judge considered that their verdict was against evidence, they might be punished with loss of all their personal property, might be imprisoned for a year, and were ever afterwards considered infamous; while the amount of bullying to which they were exposed, both from the judge and from the counsel, would scarcely be credited at the present day. They were threatened, laughed at, and even taunted with being accessory to the prisoner's guilt, if they hesitated about giving the desired verdict. After enduring all this uncomplainingly for some hundred years, we find juries about the middle of the sixteenth century suddenly attempting to throw off the disgraceful shackles with which they had been for so long loaded. The first important case on record in which a jury boldly stood out against the judge is that of Sir Nicholas Throckmorton, tried at Guildhall in 1554.

Throckmorton was indicted for high treason, and after a shamefully one-sided trial, the jury were almost *directed* to find him guilty. After a long absence from the court they returned and deliberately pronounced a verdict of "Not guilty." "Upon this," says the reporter, "the Lord Chief Justice remonstrated with them in a threatening tone, saying, 'Remember yourselves better. Have you considered substantially the whole evidence as it was declared and recited? The matter doth touch the Queen's highness and yourselves also; take good heed what you do.'" When he had finished, Whetston, the foreman, said: "My Lord, we have found him not guilty, agreeably to our consciences; and so say we all." But the jury suffered grievously for their honesty; the court committed all twelve to prison: four were soon discharged on humbly admitting that they had done wrong; but of the remaining eight, the Star Chamber adjudged that three of them should be fined £2000 each, and the other five £200 each. So much for impartiality in the sixteenth century!

Throckmorton's jury had, however, broken the ice, and others were not slow in following their example; and for more than one hundred years after, battles were being continually fought between judge and jury with ever-varying results. In poor Mrs. Lisle's case the judge (Jeffreys) gained the day; on William Penn's trial the jury stood firm and triumphed.

MARY TUDOR.

Picture by Sir Antonio More, in the Escurial.

victing Sir John Throckmorton, Sir Nicholas's brother, on exactly the same evidence.

May 8, 1556. He is made a Puisne Judge.

Dyer was rewarded for his zeal (which was not considered as having led him at all beyond the line of his professional duty) by being made a Puisne Justice of the Court of Common Pleas; and, in the following year, he was promoted to be a Puisne Justice of the Court of King's Bench.

April 23, 1557.

He turned out to be a consummate Judge, although he had been only an indifferent advocate. He was allowed to be by far the best lawyer of his time; he was above all suspicion of bribery, when judicial corruption was by no means rare; he evinced extraordinary soundness of intellect, as well as acuteness; and, caring nothing about literature, and very little about the religious disputes which agitated the public, he was indefatigably industrious in the discharge of his official duties.

Nov. 18, 1558.

Queen Elizabeth, who was above all things anxious to have the judgment-seat properly filled, the very day after her accession to the throne renewed his commission as a Puisne Justice, bringing him back to the Common Pleas; and shortly afterwards she made him Chief Justice of that court, in the room of Sir Anthony

Jan. 22, 1559. Chief Justice of Common Pleas.

When he and Mead were brought before the Lord Mayor and the recorder charged with preaching in Grace-church Street, the jury were thrice sent back to reconsider their verdict, and shape it to the desired pattern. The last time, they were locked up for the night, but the morning found them of the same mind; and "Not guilty" was still their award. "I am sorry," said the irate recorder,—"I am sorry you have followed your own judgments and opinions rather than the good advice that was given you. I pray that *my* life be kept out of your hands! But for this the Court fines you forty marks a man, and commands imprisonment till paid." The four hundred and eighty marks not being forthcoming, the twelve really good men and true were consigned to durance vile in Newgate. A writ of *habeas corpus* soon opened the prison doors; and the case was referred to a full bench of twelve judges, who pronounced the fining and imprisonment to be contrary to law. The jurymen subsequently obtained exemplary damages for false imprisonment, and the freedom of the box was triumphantly established.—*Green Bag*, vol. i. p. 309; vol. ii. p. 301.

CHAP. V. Brown, whom, from being Chief Justice, she degraded to be a Puisne, and who was contented to serve under a Chief allowed by himself, as well as the rest of the world, to be greatly his superior.[1]

More verses by Whetstone.

"From roome to roome[2] he stept by true degrees,
And mounts at length to soveraigne justice' place,
Where long he sat Chief Judge of Cõmon Pleas,
And to say truth he sat with justice grace
Whose sacred will was written in his face;
Settled to heare but very slowe to speake,
Till either part, at large, his minde did breake.

"And when he spake he was in speeche reposde;
His eyes did search the simple sutor's harte;
To put by bribes his hands were ever closde,
His processe just he tooke the poore man's parte,
He rulde by lawe and listened not to arte,
These foes to truthe—loove, hate, and private gaine,
Which most corrupt, his conscience could not staine."[3]

Fuller says, "Sir James Dyer remained Chief Justice of the Court of Common Pleas twenty years,—longer, if my eye or arithmetic fail me not, than any in that place before or after him."[4]

His later career.

But as no criminal or political cases were within his jurisdiction, and he mixed so little with any thing beyond its strict limits, his subsequent career is less interesting, although it excited the admiration of his contemporaries.

[1] If this precedent had been followed, it might have been very useful for Westminster Hall; but, however superior a puisne may have been esteemed to the chief, I am not aware of any other instance of their changing places.

[2] "Roome" in old English was used for *office*.

[3] Whetstones.

[4] Judge Dyer was promoted to the head of the Common Pleas on January 22, 1559. Here he presided till his death, on March 24, 1582, a period of more than twenty-three years, during which the law was administered in his court and on the circuit with such efficiency, firmness, and patience as not only to secure the confidence and admiration of his contemporaries, but also to fix a glory round his name which three centuries have failed to dim. His Reports, which extend from 4 Henry VIII. to the period of his death, are remarkable for their conciseness and accuracy. They were first published in French three years after he died, and several editions have since issued from the press. That of 1688 was

CHAP. V.

He still employed himself in digesting notes of the most important cases which came into his court, or which, on account of their difficulty, were adjourned into the Exchequer Chamber before all the Judges.[1] His "Reports" were not printed till after his death; but he had prepared them for publication, and they afford a stupendous proof of his industry and learning. Although now of litle use to tell what the law is, they are valuable records of the history of English jurisprudence and English manners.

His Reports.

We have a case illustrating the custom of the marriage of children then prevailing. A boy of the age of twelve years contracted marriage with a girl of sixteen, *per verba de præsenti;*[2] the marriage was solemnized in the face of the church, and the married pair were put into bed together. The husband dying a few days after, the widow brought a writ of dower, claiming one third of his lands. The heir pleaded that they *had never been joined in lawful matrimony.*[3]—Her counsel cited an authority from the YEAR-BOOK of 12 Richard II., where, in a writ of dower, the wife, at the time of the death of him who was supposed her husband, was only of the age of eleven years; and he who was supposed her husband, of the age of ten years and a half; and judgment was given, that she should recover seisin

14 Eliz. Case on the marriage of minors.

illustrated by marginal notes and references by Chief Justice Treby; and that of 1794, the edition now used, is an English translation by John Vaillant, Esq., with valuable additions of modern cases, and preceded by a life of the author.—*Foss's Lives of the Judges.*

[1] This course was then very common, and it continued to be occasionally resorted to till the reign of George IV., when it was entirely superseded by the establishment of a new system of courts of error, by which the decisions of each of the superior courts of common law were subjected to the review of a tribunal consisting of the judges of the two others. Another remnant of the Aula Regis was, the reference to all the judges of questions of criminal law, which was superseded in the year 1848, by the bill I had the honor to introduce for establishing a court of appeal from courts of oyer and terminer, and from the quarter sessions.

[2] "By words in the presence" (of witnesses).

[3] In Norman-French, "ne unques accouplés en loyal matrimonie."

CHAP. V. of one third of her husband's lands. On the other side it was argued, that consent only constitutes matrimony; that here the supposed husband had not reached the age of consent; that, by all the authorities, he might have afterwards dissented and annulled the marriage; and that the supposed consummation was a nullity;—a dictum of a learned judge in the time of Edward I. was relied upon: "A wife shall lose dower, if her lord (*scil.* her husband) die before nine years of age."—Thereupon, a writ was directed to the bishop of the diocese, to certify whether this was a valid marriage; and he returned a certificate, which Dyer, C. J., and Meade and Mounson, JJ., against the opinion of Wyndham, J., held to be insufficient, and the action was abated. But, eight years after, it was revived, and a writ being directed to the successor of the former bishop, he certified that "the demandant is to be taken for a lawful wife and accoupled in lawful matrimony;" so judgment was given in her favor, that she was entitled to dower, on the ground that "there had been espousals, and that espousals continue always till defeated by dissent; whereas here, there had been no dissent, and at the time of the husband's death the marriage subsisted."[1]

22 Eliz.

Case on the benefit of clergy.

In Dyer's time, a man being convicted of a simple felony,—as stealing any chattel of the value of twelve pence,—if, when asked why he should not be sentenced to die, he prayed the benefit of clergy,[2] the book containing the "neck verse" was put into his hand; and if he could read, he was discharged; but if he could not, he was hanged.[3] A question arose

[1] Dyer, Rep. 313a, 368b.

[2] The exemption of the persons of clergymen from criminal process before a secular judge—a privilege which was extended to all who could read, such persons being, in the eye of the law, clerici, or clerks. This privilege was abridged and modified by various statutes, and finally abolished in the reign of George IV.—*Webster's Dict.*

[3] The "wisdom of our ancestors" in their criminal law was particu-

"whether, if a man, who may have his clergy granted in case of felony, prays his book, and, in fact, cannot read, and it is recorded *non legit ut clericus*,[1] and, being respited for a time, he learns to read before he is executed, he shall have his clergy, notwithstanding the record?" The matter was referred to all the Justices of Assize assembled at Sergeants' Inn, and it was resolved *in favorem vitæ*[2] that he should have his clergy; "for," said Dyer, "he should have had it allowed under the gallows by the Year-Book 34 H. 6. 49 a, b, pl. 16., if the judge passed by there, and much more here. And although he has been taught and schooled in the jail to know letters and read, that shall help him for his life; BUT THE JAILER SHALL BE PUNISHED FOR IT."[3] 3 & 4 Eliz.

Cases on the law of villeinage.

The most curious cases in Dyer's Reports are upon questions respecting "villeinage" or *slavery*. It is not generally known that, down to the reign of Queen Elizabeth, there were in England both "villeins in gross," or slaves that might have been sold separately like chattels, and "villeins regardant," or slaves attached to particular land, with which they were transferred along with the trees growing upon it.—I will give a few examples:

In an action of trespass and assault, there was a justification by the lord of a manor that the plaintiff was his *villein regardant*, and the evidence being that he was his *villein in gross*, the question arose, for which side judgment should be given? The defendant insisted that the substantial question was, "villein or free?" not "villein regardant or villein in gross?" and

larly shown in their treatment of women; for as no woman could lawfully be a *clerk* (Pope Joan's case not being recognized), all women convicted of larceny were hanged, whether they could read or not.

[1] "That the clerk does not read."

[2] "In favor of life."

[3] Dyer, 205 a.

CHAP. V. Cases on the law of villeinage.

that having greater rights over the plaintiff as "villein in gross" than as "villein regardant," he had proved more than he was bound to prove, and the action was well barred. One judge inclined to this opinion, but the rest of the Court thought that, in favor of liberty, the plea must be strictly proved; and peradventure the plaintiff was misled by the false issue tendered to him, and might have deemed it enough to negative the *regardancy*, without bringing forward proof to negative the *villeinage in gross*. So the plaintiff became a freeman.[1]

A. B., seised in fee of a manor to which a villein was regardant, made a feoffment of one acre of the manor by these words: "I have given one acre, etc., and further, I have given and granted, etc., John S. my villein." Question, "does the villein pass to the grantee as a villein in gross, or as a villein appendant to that acre?" Two of the judges thought he should pass in gross, as there are several gifts, though in one deed; while the other judges said that if the whole manor had been granted, with a farther grant of "John S. my villein," the villein would clearly have passed as part of the manor, and therefore that the acre and the villein being granted together there was no severance. The Court being equally divided, no judgment seems to have been given.[2]

The tenant in tail of a manor, to which villeins are regardant, enfeoffs one of the villeins of one acre of the manor, and dies. Now he clearly had exceeded his power, although, had he been tenant in fee simple, the effect would have been, that the villein would have been enfranchised. But the question was, whether the son of the feoffer, who was heir in tail, could at once seize the villein? The Court held that, although all the father had done might be disaffirmed, the son

[1] Dyer, 48 b, pl. 1.

[2] Dyer, 48 b, pl. 2.

was bound, first to recover the acre of land, and then, but not till then, he might seize his villein.[1]

Butler, lord of the manor of Badminton, in the county of Gloucester, contending that Crouch was his villein regardant, entered into certain lands, which Crouch had purchased in the county of Somerset, and leased them to Fleyer. Crouch thereupon disseised Fleyer, and Fleyer brought an action against Crouch, who pleaded that he had purchased the land. Fleyer replied his lease from Butler, and alleged that "Butler and his acnestors, and all those whose estate he hath in the manor of Badminton, were seized of Clouch and his ancestors, as of villeins regardant to the same manor, from time whereof the memory of man runneth not to the contrary." Issue being thereupon joined, the jury found a special verdict, "That Butler and his ancestors were seised of the manor from time immemorial; and that the ancestors of Butler were seised, during all that time, of the ancestors of Crouch as of villeins regardant, until the first year of Henry VII., and that Crouch was a villein regardant to the said manor, and that no other seizin of Crouch or his ancestors was had since; but whether the said seizin of the said manor be in law a seizin of the said Crouch and his ancestors since the said first year of Henry VII. the jurors prayed the opinion of the Court."

Dyer, C. J., and all the Judges of the Court of Common Pleas, agreed that upon this verdict there should be judgment for the defendant, chiefly on this ground,—"because no actual or full seizin in Butler

[1] Dyer, 48 b, pl. 4. "So it is holden in our old books, if a villein be made a knight, for the honor of his degree his person is privileged, and the lord cannot seise him until he be disgraded."—*Co. Litt.* 136. If a *niefe*, or female villein, was married by a freeman, the lord could not seise her, but might maintain an action against the husband for the loss of her: and if a villein was professed as a monk, the lord could not seise him, but might maintain a similar action against the superior of the convent who admitted him.—*Litt.* sec. 202; 2 *Bl. Com.* 95, 96.

CHAP. V. and his ancestors, of Crouch and his ancestors as villeins regardant, is found, but only a seizin in law, and the lord having let an hundred years pass without redeeming, the villein or his issue cannot after that seise them."[1]

His conduct on the trial of the Duke of Norfolk.

The only criminal case of much celebrity in which Lord Chief Justice Dyer was concerned was the trial of Thomas, Duke of Norfolk,[2] for high treason in assisting the claim of Mary Queen of Scots to the crown of England. On that occasion, he attended with the other judges to assist the Lord High Steward and the Peers, who were to pronounce on the fate of the noble prisoner.

The Duke, when arraigned, having prayed that counsel might be assigned to him, and cited the case of Humphrey Stafford, Duke of Buckingham, as a precedent in point, Sir James Dyer said,—

Colloquy between the Duke and Dyer.

"My Lord, that case of Humphrey Stafford, *in primo*, Henry VII., was about pleading of sanctuary, for that he was taken out of sanctuary at Culneham, which belonged to the

[1] Dyer, 266, pl. 11. Villeins in gross, as well as villeins regardant, were considered real property. Littleton thus defines villeins in gross: "If a man or his ancestors, whose heir he is, have been seised of a villein, and of his ancestors as of villeins in gross, time out of memory of man, these are villeins in gross." (*Litt.* sec. 182.) Villeinage is supposed to have finally disappeared in the reign of James I., but there is great difficulty in saying when it ceased to be lawful, for there has been no statute to abolish it; and by the old law, if any freeman acknowledged himself in a court of record to be a villein, he and all his after-born issue and their descendants were villeins.—*Litt.* sec. 185.

[2] Thomas Howard, fourth Duke of Norfolk. He was the only peer who at that time possessed the highest title of nobility; and, as there were no princes of the blood, his rank, together with his great wealth and abilities, rendered him the first subject in England. He is represented as generous, prudent, and moderate, and sincerely attached to the Protestant religion. In 1559 Elizabeth appointed him her lieutenant in the northern counties. By aspiring to become the husband of Mary Queen of Scots, he gave offence to Elizabeth, and was committed to the Tower in 1569. Having been released, he renewed his suit, received a promise of marriage from the captive Queen, and joined a conspiracy for her liberation. For this he was condemned and executed in 1572.—*Thomas' Biog. Dict.*

Abbot of Abingdon; so the question was, whether he should be allowed sanctuary in that case, and with that form of pleading, which was matter of law: in which case he had counsel, and not upon the fact of high treason; but only for the allowance of sanctuary, and whether it might be allowed, being claimed by prescription, and without showing any former allowances in Eyre; but all our books do forbid allowing of counsel in treason."

Duke. "I beseech you, weigh what case I stand in. I stand here before you for my life, lands, and goods, my children and my posterity; and that which I esteem most of all, for my honesty. I am unlearned; if I ask anything, and not in such words as I ought, I beseech you bear with me, and let me have that favor the law allows me. If the law does not allow me counsel, I must submit me to your opinions. I beseech you, consider of me. My blood will ask vengeance if I be unjustly condemned. I honor your learnings and your gravities; I beseech you have consideration of me, and grant me what the law will permit me."

The other judges confirmed the rule as laid down by the Chief Justice of the Common Pleas. He does not appear afterwards to have interfered, and he cannot be considered answerable for the unjust conviction which followed.[1]

Dyer soothed by music.

If ruffled by any annoyance in the discharge of his judicial duties, he prayed to Heaven for composure, and when he returned home he played an air on the virginals.

"For publique good, when care had cloid his minde,
The only joye, for to repose his sprights,
Was musique sweet, which showd him well inclind;
For he that dooth in musique much delight
A conscience hath disposed to most right;
The reason is, her sound within our eare
A sympathie of heaven we thinke we heare."[2]

There was one charge brought against him for arbitrary conduct as Judge of Assize. He always, according to the fashion of the times, *rode* the same

[1] 1 St. Tr. 957–1042.

[2] Whetstones.

CHAP. V. circuit, and he chose the MIDLAND. He seems to have rendered himself unpopular upon it by rigidly discountenancing the jobs and oppressions of magistrates, and perhaps by the prejudices and partialities which are apt to influence a judge who becomes too familiar with those among whom he is to administer justice. At last, a "supplication," or memorial, from the justices of Warwickshire, containing nine heads of complaint against him, was presented to the Queen and the Privy Council. They were chiefly of a frivolous nature, as, for example, "that, a gun going off accidentally during the assizes, he accused the justices of a general slackness of their duties, saying, 'they ruled the country as pleased them, and that there was nothing with them but *sic volo, sic jubeo*.'"[1] In his written answer, now extant among the MSS. of the Inner Temple, he says, "As to the shooting once of a gun in the time of the assizes, I am sure I was not so greatly offended, if it were not of purpose done; nor were these words *sic volo, sic jubeo*, used by me in the sense alleged." He justifies himself at great length for what he had done, in supporting a poor widow against the tyranny of a cruel knight, backed by other justices; and he thus concludes,—

Charges against him for arbitrary conduct as Judge of Assize.

His answer to the charge.

> "All which premises being true, as indeed they are, I ask judgment of the said Lords of the Council, and all others indifferent, whether I had just cause ministered unto me by the defaults of the justices and government of the shire, and slackness of her Majesty's service, to be angry and vehemently moved to choler. And although I did say *in excessu meo*,[2] 'omnis homo mendax'[3] (as David said), yet for mine age and long continuance there, which hath been above twenty years in that circuit, I am rather to be borne with than complained of."

[1] "Thus I will, thus I command."
[2] "At my departure."
[3] "All men are liars."

CHAP. V.

Luckily for Dyer, Sir Thomas Bromley,[1] lately appointed Lord Chancellor, was his fast friend, so that due weight was given to his defence, and he was allowed to continue in the exercise of his office.

His death. March 24, 1582.

But, about two years afterwards, he encountered an enemy whom no Chief Justice or Chancellor has been able to conquer—DEATH. Being struck by a sudden disease, while still in the full possession of his faculties, he expired at Great Stoughton, in the county of Huntingdon, in the 71st year of his age. In the parish church there may still be seen a monument erected to his memory by his nephew, with the following inscription:

His epitaph.

"DEYERO tumulum quid statuis, Nepos,
Qui vivit volitatque ora per omnium?
Exegit monumenta ipse perennia,
In queis spirat adhuc; spirat in his themis,
Libertas, Pietas, Munificentia.
En decreta, libros, vitam, obitum senis!
Æternas statuas! Vivit in his themis,
Libertas, Pietas, Munificentia.
Æternas statuas has statuit sibi:
Æternis statuis cedite marmora!"

The eulogium of Camden.

Among his contemporaries Dyer was universally esteemed the most perfect model of a Judge for learning, integrity, and abilities. The eulogium of Camden is only the echo of the public voice: "JACOBUS DIERUS," says that annalist, "*in communi placitorum tribunali*

[1] Bromley, though not yet fifty years of age, was selected as the successor of Sir Nicholas Bacon. He received the Great Seal on April 26, 1579, with the rank of Lord Chancellor, a title which his predecessor had never enjoyed. Fuller says (*Worthies*, ii. 259), 'Although it was difficult to come after Sir Nicholas Bacon, and not *to come after him*, yet such was Bromley's learning and integrity that the court was not sensible of any considerable alteration." He seems to have pursued a steady course in the performance of his official duties, without respect to persons. He presided as chancellor over the commission issued in October 1586 for the trial of Mary Queen of Scots, in which he conducted himself with great decency and personal respect towards the unfortunate prisoner, though in the subsequent proceedings in parliament he was the organ of the House to represent to Elizabeth their unanimous request that the judgment might be executed.—*Foss's Lives of the Judges of Eng.*

CHAP. V. *Justiciarius Primarius, qui animo semper placido et sereno omnes judicis æquissimi partes implevit; et juris nostri prudentiam commentariis illustravit.*" [1]

More of Whetstones' rhymes.

Whetstones particularly lauds the disinterested exercise of his patronage:

"Fit men he did in office ever place,
And ofte put by his freends and neerest kin,
Affirming, though the gifte were in his grace,
'The common-weale cheef intrest had therein,
And therefore meet the worthy should it win:'
Words like himself, who favoured publique good,
Before their gaine that were spronge of his blood."

Publication of his Reports.

He bequeathed his "REPORTS" to his nephews, who published them soon after his death, with a dedication to Lord Chancellor Bromley, in which they say—

"Quamvis supervacaneum fortasse videri possit (ratione præsertim rei ipsius habitâ, Authorisque facultate perspectâ) Protectorem et Patronum adscribere; tamen cum mors nobis Authoris vitam inviderit, multosque hæc nostra ætas protulerit quibus cordi est alienæ industriæ obtrectare, opere precium existimavimus huic nostræ orbitati alterum patrem parentemque adsciscere, quem quidem te (vir insignissime) ut aptissimum, ita et paratissimum fore humillimè obsecrare tandem statuimus." [2]

In an English address "To the Students of the Common Laws of this realm," the editors express a wish "that the good acceptation and friendly thankfulnesse of all such as are to receive knowledge and fruit thereby, may appeare such as the late reverend

[1] "John Dyer, Chief Justice of the Court of Common Pleas, always performed calmly and carefully the duties of a most impartial judge; he showed great knowledge of our law in his Reports."

[2] "Although perchance it may seem needless to appoint a Protector and Patron, especially when the plan of the work and the ability of the author are known; yet since death has deprived us of the life of the writer, and this age of ours has produced many to whom it is a pleasure to decry another's diligence, we have prayerfully determined to adopt another father and parent for this our orphan, and we have at length decided to humbly beseech thee, most eminent sir, as the one most learned and most worthy, to occupy that place."

Judge and painefull Author thereof may receive the guerdon worthie his exquisite and painfull travaile." We have likewise "LECTORI CARMEN," which, after comparing DYERUS to the bee, who collects honey for others, thus proceeds: CHAP. V.

"Fasciculum causas omnes congessit in unum
Curia quas lustris sex celebrata dedit.
Edidit has alter, fructus ut postera proles
Perciperet, tanto qui placuere viro,
Edidit ut semper post funera viveret author:
Quem rapuit studiis mors inimica piis."[1]

I am afraid that the hope of immortality from LAW REPORTS is visionary. But Dyer may really be considered the Shakspeare of Law Reporters, as he had no predecessor for a model, and no successor has equalled him. As yet his fame flourishes, and those who are most competent to appreciate his merit have praised him the most. Thus writes that great lawyer, Sir Harbottle Grimston[2]: "If we have failed in the number of the persons reporting, it hath been amply recompensed in the grandeur and authority of one single author, SIR JAMES DYER, Chief Justice of the Common Pleas, by whose great learning and assiduous study the Judgments and Law Resolutions have been transmitted and perpetuated until the 24th year of the late Queen Elizabeth."[3] The Shakspeare of Law Reporters.

He was married to Margaret, daughter of Sir

[1] "He has collected into a single volume all the cases that the court in thirty years' attendance has decided. Another has published these in order that the following generation might enjoy the advantages which gave pleasure to so great a man; he published them in order that the author might live on after death for ever, whom unfriendly death tore away from noble pursuits."

[2] Sir Harbottle Grimston (*d.* 1683), English politician; a Parliamentarian, but refused to subscribe to the Solemn League and Covenant. He supported, however, the Presbyterians against the Independents, and was excluded from Cromwell's second Parliament. In 1660 he became Speaker of the Convention Parliament, and was made Master of the Rolls by Charles II.—*Cassell's Biog. Dict.*

[3] Preface to Cro. Car.

CHAP. V. Maurice à Barrow, and relict of the celebrated philologist Sir Thomas Elyot, author of "The Governor." By her he had no issue. His estates went to a collateral branch of his family, which flourished for several generations, and was honored with a baronetcy; but is now extinct. The last male representative of the Chief Justice ended his days in a workhouse; whereas it was expected, in the reign of Queen Mary, that in future times the DYERS would be more distinguished than the MONTAGUS.—Rather than to be ancestor of dukes or of kings, it is more glorious to deserve the praise quaintly bestowed on this great and good man:

Sad fate of the last of his house.

> "Alive, refúge of those whom wronge did paine,
> A DYER such as *dy'de* without a *stayne*."[1]

I must now return to the Court of King's Bench, in which, after the very obscure Chief Justices who had presided there in the latter part of the reign of Henry VIII., and in the reigns of Edward VI. and of Queen Mary, Queen Elizabeth placed a distinguished man, whose name is still held in reverence by lawyers, although he has not gained an historical reputation—SIR ROBERT CATLYNE.[2] His supposed extraction is a burlesque upon heraldic pedigrees, for his ancestor, more distinguished than any of the companions of the Conqueror, has been said to be no other than the conspirator LUCIUS CATILINA, who, instead of having fallen in battle, as is related by Sallust, escaped into Britain, and left descendants in Kent, a province which had reached a considerable degree of civilization before it was visited by Julius Cæsar. Fuller, though much disposed to puff the Chief Justice, is modestly contented with saying, "His name hath some allusion to the Roman senator who was the *incendiary* of that

Sir Robert Catlyne, Chief Justice of the King's Bench.

His descent from Catiline the conspirator.

[1] Whetstone.

[2] Spelt likewise Catlyn, Catelyn, Catalyn, Catlin, Catelin, and Cateline.

state, though in nature far different, as who, by his wisdom and gravity, was a great *support* to his nation."[1] CHAP. V.

Our Chief Justice certainly was descended from the Catlynes of Rounds in Northamptonshire, who had been long settled there, and were a branch of a family of the same name which had flourished from time immemorial in Kent. He was born at Bilbey in Leicestershire, having the bad or good luck to be the younger son of a younger brother, who had married the heiress of a small estate in this county.

I do not find any thing authentic of his early career, except that he studied law with extraordinary diligence in the Middle Temple. The first considerable distinction which he gained in public life seems to have been by the wonderful feast given in the year 1555, when he was called Sergeant,—the account of which fills many folio pages of Dugdale's ORIGINES JURIDICIALES. It was held soon after Queen Mary's marriage, and the object was to show to the Spanish nobles who accompanied Philip the riches and magnificence of England. There were seven barristers included in the same call, and—besides rings of great weight presented to the Queen, the officers of state and the judges, and large pecuniary contributions—each voluntarily furnished contingents in kind, of which the following is a sample:

Feast when he was called Sergeant.

April 27, 1555.

"*Cates sent in by Mr. Catlyne.*

His donation to the feast.

	£	s.	d.
"9 swans, each at 10*s.*	4	10	0
3 pheasants, at 4*s.*	0	12	0
Pigeons, 9 dozen and a half, at 18*d.* a dozen	0	14	3
Capons, 7 at 2*s.* 6*d.*	0	17	6
Pea chickens, 4 at 2*s.*	0	8	0
Red deer, rated at	0	10	0
Does, fat, 5, not valued.			
Claret wine, 1 hogshead	1	17	6
Quinces, 60	0	3	0"

[1] Worthies, i. 568.

CHAP. V. Then follow turkey chicks, woodcocks, curlews, goodwits, knotts, plovers, larks, snipes, teals, and coneys, from the same donor. This, being a far more liberal donation than any of the other new sergeants furnished, materially added to the splendor of the entertainment, and was supposed to lay the foundation of the great advancement which was speedily bestowed upon Sergeant Catlyne.[1]

Nov. 1556. In the following year, he was promoted to the rank

[1] The reader may like to see the dishes, and the prices of them, at one of the many tables laid for different degrees of guests :

"A proportion for two mess of meat for the table prepared for the Lords of the King and Queen's Privy Councell, and certain Spanish lords and gentlemen that accompanied them to the Feast :

		£	s.	d.
The first course, two mess of meat.	A standing dish of wax, representing the Court of Common Pleas, artificially made . . .	4	0	0
	A spuld of brawn for either mess			
	Boiled capons in white broth, 2 at a mess . .	0	5	0
	Swans roasted, 2 ; each mess one	1	0	0
	Bustards, 2 ; each mess one	1	0	0
	Chemet pies, 8 ; to each mess 4			
	Pikes, 4 ; to each mess 2	0	10	0
	Capons roasted, 4 ; to each mess 2	0	10	0
	Venison baked, 4 large pasties ; every mess 2			
	Hern and bittern, each mess 2	0	16	0
	Pheasants roasted, 4 ; each mess 2	0	16	0
	Custards, 2			
Second course, two mess of meat.	A standing dish of wax, to each mess one . .	4	0	0
	Jellies planted, 2 dozen			
	Cranes, 2 ; each mess one	1	0	0
	Partridges, 12 ; for each mess six	0	16	0
	Red deer, 4 pasties ; each mess two	0	16	0
	Certain large joules of sturgeon, to each mess one			
	Woodcocks and plovers, 12 each mess . . .	0	6	8
	Quince pies, baked, 8 ; each mess four . . .			
	Rabbit suckers, 12 ; each mess six	0	4	0
	Snipes roasted, 12 ; each mess six	0	3	4
	Larks, 3 dozen ; each mess a dozen and a half	0	2	0
	March-panes, 2 ; each mess one *	0	6	8"

* Sweet cakes. Lawyers' feasts nowadays are not to be despised ; but are nothing, compared with those of our predecessors in the times of the Tudors.

of Queen's Sergeant, and towards the end of Mary's reign he was made a Puisne Justice of the Court of Common Pleas. He had, from the first, a high judicial reputation, on account of the gravity of his deportment and his profound knowledge of the law; and, although inclining to the new doctrines in religion, he was so discreet as to conform to the creed of the Court, whatever that might be, following the example of the most approved statesmen of that age. This gave no offence to Elizabeth; and upon her accession, having taken her Prime Minister and her Chancellor from the same class of conformists, she made Sir Robert Catlyne, who was now a professed Protestant, Chief Justice of England.

CHAP. V.

He is made a Puisne Judge. Oct. 1558.

Chief Justice. Jan. 22, 1559.

He held the office with increasing respect above fifteen years; but it is only from the general praises bestowed upon him by contemporary writers, and from the traditions of Westminster Hall, that we appreciate his merits, for he was not an author himself, and there are hardly any reports of King's Bench decisions in his time.

His merits.

The only state trials in the early part of Elizabeth's reign were those of the Duke of Norfolk and of Hickford his secretary. At the former, which took place before the Lord High Steward and the Peers, Lord Chief Justice Catlyne, attending as assessor, was several times appealed to for his opinion. When the point had been settled about the assignment of counsel, the prisoner said—

A.D. 1571. He assists at the trial of the Duke of Norfolk.

"I am now to make another suit to you, my Lords the Judges: I beseech you tell me if my indictment be perfect, and sufficient in law?" *Lord C. J. C.:* "For the sufficiency of your indictment it hath been well considered by us all, and we have all with one assent resolved, and so do certify you, that if the causes in the indictment expressed be true in fact, the indictment is wholly and in every part sufficient." *Duke:*

CHAP. V. "Be all the points treasons?" *Lord C. J. C.:* "All be treasons, if the truth of the case be so in fact." *Duke:* "I will tell you what moveth me to ask you this. I have heard of the case of the Lord Scrope; he confessed the indictment, and yet traversed that the points thereof were not treasons." *Lord C. J. C.:* "My Lord, he had his judgment for treason upon that indictment, and was executed in the reign of Henry V."

Q. whether the fact of a witness being a Scot renders him incompetent, or only goes to his credit?

A deposition or confession of the Bishop of Ross being afterwards offered in evidence for the Crown, the Duke objected that he was a Scot, and that, having admitted himself to be guilty of high treason against his own sovereign, he ought not to be received as a witness:

Lord C. J. C.: "Though a Scot, he is a Christian, and he has not been attainted or outlawed of treason, nor yet indicted." *Duke:* "It is worse; he has confessed treason. Bracton, if I mistake not, says that witnesses must be *legales homines;* and so cannot strangers be, like the Bishop of Ross." *Lord C. J. C.:* "Bracton, indeed, is an old writer of our law, and by Bracton he may be a witness; a stranger, a bondman, may be a witness. Ask you all the Judges here!" *All the Judges:* "He may, he may!" *Duke:* "You shall not recover lands upon the evidence of a stranger, much less convict of treason." *Lord C. J. C.:* "This would be a strange device, that Scots may not be witnesses; for so, if a man would commit treason, and make none privy but Scots, the treason were unpunishable." *Duke:* "In case of treason they may be heard as witnesses for the Queen, although it resteth in the breast of the Peers whether or no to afford credit unto them."

Catlyne cannot be said to have violated the rules of evidence; for written depositions or confessions of persons alive were then considered clearly admissible in capital cases, and the circumstance of *alienage*, as he stated, could only go to their credit; but he can hardly be defended from the charge of consciously perverting the law of treason.

Catlyne perverts the law of treason.

CHAP. V.

The chief matter urged against the prisoner was, that he had sent a sum of money into Scotland to assist the party there which took the side of Mary, the absent Queen, against the Regent,[1] whom Elizabeth patronized, there being peace between the two countries.

Duke of Norfolk: "The statute of Edward III. only makes it treason to compass the death of the sovereign, or to levy war against him, or to aid his enemies; and there is no proof that I did any of these things." *Lord C. J. C.:* "Usage is the best expounder of the law; and we know that, as this statute has been expounded, you are guilty if you have said or done as the witnesses tell of you." *Duke:* "Supposing it proved that I sent money to the Lord Harris, the subject of the Queen of Scots, how can that be aiding an enemy of our Lady the Queen of England? May a subject be the Queen's Majesty's enemy, while the Prince of that subject is her friend and in amity with her?" *Lord C. J. C.:* "In some cases it may be so; as in France, if the dukedom of Brittany should rebel against the French King, and should (during the amity between the French and Queen's Majesty) invade England, those Britons would be the French King's subjects and the Queen's enemies, though the French King remaineth in amity; and so in your case."

His sophistical reasoning.

Now this is clearly sophistical reasoning; for although an Englishman who joined the invading army from Brittany would certainly have been guilty of high treason, it would have been for levying war against her in her realm, and not for adhering to her enemies.[2] The Judges must all have felt some remorse when, sentence of death being passed upon the prisoner, he said—"I trust shortly to be in better company. God doth know how true a heart I bear to her

The Duke of Norfolk sentenced to death.

[1] James Stuart, Earl of Murray, the brother of Mary Queen of Scots, was appointed Regent of Scotland, Aug. 22. 1567.—*Green's Hist. of Eng. People*, vol. ii. p. 341.

[2] During the Canadian rebellion, I gave an opinion as Attorney General, which was acted upon, that an armed band of American citizens who invaded our territory without the authority of their government were liable to be treated as traitors.

CHAP. V. Majesty, and how true a heart to my country, whatsoever this day hath been falsely objected against me." [1]

Hickford's case.

The trial of Robert Hickford, the Duke's secretary, for high treason, came on soon after at the bar of the Court of King's Bench at Westminster. In fact, nothing more could be proved against him than that he had written in cipher, and deciphered some letters which had passed between his master and Mary Queen of Scots and the Bishop of Ross;[2] but he deemed it more prudent to plead *guilty*, and to pray for mercy. Lord Chief Justice Catlyne then passed sentence upon him in a very long and elaborate discourse, from which I shall make a few extracts to show the taste of the times:

Chief Justice Catlyne passes sentence on him.

"Thou art a gentleman wise and well learned: I wish to God there had been in thee as much loyalty and truth as there is learning and other good qualities and gifts of God; then hadst thou not fallen into this great fault and misery. But there have been evil enticers, evil schoolmasters, evil seedsmen; they have brought thee from truth and good estate to untruth, treason, and wretchedness; where, before, you and others were of good name and fame, they have brought you to infamy; of loyal, good, and true subjects, they brought you to the name and state of disloyal traitors. A great blot to be a traitor, and the greatest infamy that can be. It is the chiefest point of the duty of every natural and reasonable man, which by the gift of reason differeth from a beast, to know his prince and head—to be true to his head and prince. All the members are bound to obey the head; every man is bound to risk life, to lay out and expend goods, lands, and possessions—to forsake father, mother, kindred, wife, and children in respect of preserving the prince; for in defending

[1] 1 St. Tr. 957–1042.

[2] John Lesley, Bishop of Ross (1527–1596), was a Scottish prelate. He opposed the introduction of Protestantism into Scotland, and upon the accession of Mary, whom he accompanied from France, he was appointed Bishop of Ross. After the imprisonment of Mary in Bolton Castle, he took part in the negotiations between her and Elizabeth.—*Appl. Encyc.*, vol. x. p. 367.

CHAP. V. Catlyne's discourse, continued.

the prince they preserve father, mother, kindred, wife, children, and all. All the duties to father, mother, friends, kindred, children, yea, to a man's wife, that is his own flesh, are all inferior to the duty that a subject oweth to his prince. If in any case they shall allure a man from his prince they must be forsaken—they must come behind; it must be said '*vade post me, Satana.*'[1] We must first look unto God, the High Prince of all princes, and then to the Queen's Majesty, the second prince and God's deputy, and our sovereign prince on earth. You are wise and learned, as your master was; but the evil seedsmen, the evil seducers and enticers, have wrought evil effect in you both. The great good Seedsman hath sowed in you good gifts, learning, knowledge, and good quality to serve Him, your prince, and your country withal; as it is said in the Gospel, *Bonus seminator seminavit semen bonum*, but *supervenit inimicus et seminavit zizania;* the good seedsman sowed good seed, but there came the enemy, and he sowed darnel, cockle, and noisome weeds. Such wicked seedsmen have been in England; if they had sown the right seed for their own use, *the seed of hemp, and felt of it*, they had received according to their deserving. If they had been handled as they deserved, they should long ago have had of their own due seed, *hemp*, bestowed upon them, *meet seed for such seedsmen.*

He proceeds to explain how certain foreign ambassadors at the Court of England were the wicked seedsmen, and to prove that they might lawfully be treated with a *hempen cravat;* giving, as an illustration, the case of M. de Marveilles, ambassador of Francis I., "who was beheaded *jure gentium*,[2] at Milan, for conspiring against the prince to whom he was accredited." Thus he concludes that topic:

Its quaintness illustrates the taste of the times.

"May messengers conspire treason against princes to whom they be sent? Treason to princes is not their message; it is no lawful cause of their sending; if of their own heads they presume it, their own heads must answer for it. As for them that seek fame by treason, and by seeking the destruction of

[1] "Get thee behind me, Satan."
[2] "By the law of nations."

CHAP. V. princes, what shall sound that fame? Shall the golden Trump of Fame that Chaucer speaketh of? No! but the black Trump of Shame shall blow out their infamy for ever."[1]

His death and burial.

Lord Chief Justice Catlyne spent the rest of his days in the quiet routine of his judicial duties, and died in the autumn of the year 1574, at his country-seat at Newenham, in Bedfordshire, where, according to the directions of his will, he was privately buried, without any monument being erected to his memory.

His disinterestedness.

With the opportunity of amassing great riches, he died poor, leaving behind him a high reputation for disinterestedness, as well as learning and ability. He would not accept any grant of church lands; and although his place of residence had been the site of a priory, he had purchased it at a fair price, paid from his honest earnings.[2] A descendant of his having spoken disrespectfully to a Chief Justice, whose hands were not so clean, and being thus rebuked, "I expected not such treatment from one whose kinsman was my predecessor in this court, and a great lawyer," made answer, "My Lord, *he* was a very honest man, for he left a small estate."[3]

His descendants.

He married Anne, daughter of Thomas Bowles, Esq., by whom he had an only daughter and heir. She became the wife of Sir John Spencer, of Althorpe, in the county of Northampton; and from them descend the Dukes of Marlborough, so that the Russells, and most of the greatest families in England, may easily trace Sir Robert Catlyne in their pedigree,—if they should be disappointed in their wish to go up to the CONSPIRATOR.

[1] 1 St. Tr. 1044. I must say, for the honor of Westminster Hall, that, notwithstanding the quaintness of this composition, I doubt whether the pulpit, the stage, or parliament, had yet produced anything better. Every one must admire its rhythmical cadences.

[2] Hyson's Bedfordshire, p. 89.

[3] Fuller's Worthies, ii. 568.

CHAP. V.

Sir Christopher Wray.

His doubtful parentage.

The office of Chief Justice of the King's Bench was held during the next eighteen years by SIR CHRISTOPHER WRAY, of whom little is known, except from the Law Reports and the Parliamentary History. His parentage even is doubtful. There are two statements on the subject in the books of the Heralds' College:[1] one says that he was "the son of Thomas Wray, of Richmondshire, by the daughter and heir of Richard Jackson, in the county of York;" and the other, that he was "the natural son of Sir Christopher Wray, Vicar of Hornby, *by a wench in a belfry*, and brought up to the study of the law by a brother of his reputed father, who was a servant of the Lord Conyers of Hornby." The latter is the more probable story; and in the Visitation of the county of Lincoln by the Heralds in 1634, there is a pedigree of the family, signed by his grandson and heir, Sir John Wray, Bart., commencing with the Chief Justice, and giving the arms of Wray, which were granted to him without any quartering of the arms of Jackson; whereas, if legitimate, to the representation of that family he would have been entitled and he would have laid claim.

His rise.

He seems, under the disadvantages of birth, to have raised himself by energy and fair character, without shining abilities. The first perfectly authentic infor-

[1] In England, Heralds are merged in a corporation called the College of Arms or Heralds' College, which was instituted by Richard III. in 1483. At the head of the college is the Earl Marshal of England, a dignity which has been hereditary since 1672 in the family of Howard, Dukes of Norfolk. —*Appl. Encyc.*

Hare, in *Walks in London*, says: "At the foot of Bennet's Hill, facing Queen Victoria Street, is the *Heralds' College*, a red brick building surrounding three sides of a court, with a well-designed outer staircase. It occupies the site of Derby House, built by Thomas, that first Earl of Derby who married the Countess of Richmond, mother of Henry VII. Here, where 'the records of the blood of all the families in the kingdom' are kept, the sword, dagger, and turquoise ring of James IV. of Scotland, slain at Flodden Field, are preserved" (book i., p. 155).

CHAP. V. mation we have of him is, that he took the degree of the coif in 1567, and soon after he was made a Queen's Sergeant.[1]

He is a Sergeant-at-law.

A.D. 1571. In April, 1571, he was returned to parliament; and he must then have been very high in his profession, for he was elected Speaker of the House of Commons,—a post, in those days, always conferred upon an eminent practitioner at the bar. His speech to the Queen, when presented to her for confirmation, is extant, but too long and dull to be copied. He began by proving the Queen's title to be Head of the Church, "from the remembrance of Lucius, the first Christian King of Britain, who, having written to Eleutherius the Pope, 1300 years past, for the Roman laws, was answered that he had the Holy Scriptures, out of the which he might draw good discretion, *for that he was the Vicar of Christ over the people of Britain.*" After enumerating acts done by subsequent sovereigns to check the encroachments of the See of Rome, he says, "In the reports of the law we find that an excommunication of a certain person came from the Pope, under his leaden bull, and was showed in abatement of an action brought at common law; which, beside that it was of no force, the King and judges were of mind that he who brought it had deserved death, so to presume on any foreign authority; which authority being now by God's grace and her Highness's means abolished, and the freedom of consciences and the truth of God's word established, we ought greatly to thank God and her." Having discoursed very tediously concerning religion, government, and legislation, and quoted Plato "*de Legibus*," he concluded with a just compliment to Elizabeth, "that she had given free course to her laws, not requiring the stay of justice by her letters or privy seals, as heretofore sometimes hath been by her progenitors

He is Speaker of the House of Commons.

His speech to the Queen.

His just compliment to Elizabeth.

[1] Dugd. Chron. Ser.

used; neither hath she pardoned any without the advice of those before whom the offenders have been arraigned, and the cause heard." CHAP. V.

The Queen's answer was very courteous to him; but for his guidance as Speaker she told him, that "the Commons would do well to meddle with no matters of state but such as should be propounded unto them, and to occupy themselves with other matters concerning the commonwealth." The Queen's answer.

Mr. Speaker Wray did his best to enforce obedience to this injunction, but, in spite of him, motions were brought forward about the abuse of the prerogative in granting monopolies, and the necessity for an act of parliament to settle the succession to the crown. At the close of the session she highly censured those audacious members of the nether house "for their arrogant and presumptuous folly, thus by superfluous speech spending much time in meddling with matters neither pertaining to them nor within the capacity of their understanding."[1] May 29.

However, no blame was imputed to Sir Christopher Wray; and, as a reward for his services, he was made a Puisne Justice of the Court of Common Pleas.[2] Wray is made a Puisne Judge.

When elevated to the bench, he was distinguished not only by great skill in his profession, but by a striking decency of demeanor, which gained him much respect from the bar and the bystanders.

On the death of Sir Robert Catlyne it was seen that troublous times were approaching, from Mary Queen of Scots, lawfully the heir presumptive and actually the pretender to the throne, becoming impatient of the captivity in which she had been long held, A.D. 1574.

[1] 1 Parl. Hist. 724.

[2] According to Dugdale, his patent bore date May 14, a fortnight before the prorogation; but I think this must be a mistake, for the common-law judges never sat in the House of Commons except during the Commonwealth.

CHAP. V. and from many being disposed at any risk to vindicate her claims. There was an equal dread of retaining her as a prisoner, and of setting her at liberty; and, as assassination and poisoning were reckoned un-English, the idea began to gain ground that it might be necessary to get rid of her by the forms of law, for which there were plenty of precedents in recent reigns. Lord Keeper Sir Nicholas Bacon, therefore, pointed out to Elizabeth the importance of having a safe man at the head of the administration of criminal justice, and he recommended to her Sir Christopher Wray, reminding her of the maxim which, with her approbation, he had adopted for his own motto, MEDIOCRIA FIRMA.[1] She, ever prudent in judicial appointments, unless (as in the case of giving the Great Seal to Sir Christopher Hatton) she was guided by her *heart* rather than her *head*, readily acquiesced, and, after the office had remained vacant a few weeks, Sir Christopher Wray, to the envy of the puisnies, was installed in it; for they all thought themselves superior to him, notwithstanding the high merits discovered in him by the Lord Keeper's harangue when he was sworn in.

He is made Chief Justice of the King's Bench.

The new Chief Justice fully justified the choice made of him. He was not at all puffed up by his elevation. In private life he continued remarkably courteous, but he would permit no solicitations, even from the most powerful, respecting causes which were to come before him. "Each man he respected in his due distance off the bench, and no man on it could bias his judgment."[2]

The effect on him of this appointment.

A.D. 1581. The first important trial at which he presided was that of Campion[3] the Jesuit and the other priests ac-

He tries Campion the Jesuit.

[1] "The middle station is surest."

[2] Fuller.

[3] Edmund Campion (*b.* 1540, *d.* 1581), English Jesuit, at first a zealous defender of the Church of England, became a Roman Catholic, studied at Douay, and was sent to England by Gregory XIII. He was

cused along with him of a conspiracy, at the instigation of the Pope, for murdering the Queen, and for putting Mary in her place. In reading the report of it we are struck with the dextrous manner in which he obtained a conviction, by the display of great seeming calmness and forbearance. Campion was a hot-headed though very able man, and, stung by a sense of the groundlessness of the charge against him, was always breaking out in intemperate sallies. When arraigned, he wished, contrary to a well-known rule of procedure, to make a speech in defence of his innocence:

His seeming calmness and forbearance.

Wray, L. C. J.: "The time is not yet come wherein you shall be tried, and, therefore, you must now spare speech, and preserve it till then; at which time you shall have full liberty of defence, and me to sit indifferent between her Majesty and yourself: whereupon I counsel you now to say *Guilty* or *Not Guilty*."

The evidence was wholly insufficient to make out the charge of treason, and merely proved that the prisoners had come on a fanatical mission from Rome in the hope of reconverting the kingdom to the true faith.[1] The Chief Justice, however, by preserving the same tone, not only persuaded the jury, but the prisoners themselves, that he was their counsel, according to his duty as judge. Having allowed them to address the jury several times without interruption, he observed, "If you have any more to say, speak, and we

apprehended on a charge of high treason, and hung at Tyburn.—*Cassell's Biog. Dict.*

[1] While Campion lay under accusation in the Tower, he was several times examined under torture, and gave such clever answers that Elizabeth had a great curiosity to see him. "By her order he was secretly brought one evening from the Tower, and introduced to her at the house of the Earl of Leicester, in the presence of that nobleman, of the Earl of Bedford, and of the two secretaries. She asked him 'if he acknowledged her for Queen?' He replied 'not only for Queen, but for *his lawful Queen*.' She then inquired 'if he believed that the Pope could excommunicate her lawfully?' He answered that 'he was not a sufficient umpire to decide in a controversy between her Majesty and the Pope.'" —*Lingard*, viii. 147.

CHAP. V. will hear you until to-morrow morning. We would be loath you should have any occasion to complain of the Court, and therefore, if aught rest behind untold that may be available for you, speak, and you shall be heard with indifference." The report says, "They all thanked his Lordship, and said they could not otherwise affirm but they had found of the Court both indifference and justice."

The verdict.

He made short work of it when the jury had given in their verdict of GUILTY:

Lord C. J.: "Campion, and the rest, what can you say why you should not die?" *Campion:* "The only thing that we have now to say is, that if our religion do make us traitors, we are worthy to be condemned; but otherwise have been, and are, as true subjects as ever the Queen had any." *Lord C. J.:* "You must go to the place from whence you came, and from thence you must be drawn on a hurdle[1] to the place of execution, and there hanged by the neck, but not till you are dead," etc. etc. "And may the Lord convert you from your evil ways, and have mercy on your souls."[2]

A.D. 1584. Trial of William Parry for treason.

The next state criminal was William Parry, indicted before special commissioners for a plot to murder Queen Elizabeth. He had confessed being concerned in the plot, and had given a detailed account of it, but, having been employed as a spy, both by Burghley[3]

[1] This was a sled or crate on which criminals were drawn to the place of execution.—*Webster's Dict.*

[2] 1 St. Tr. 1049–1088.

[3] William Cecil, Lord Burghley, K.G., a celebrated statesman, was only son of Richard Cecil, Esq., Yeoman of the Robes, by his wife Jane, daughter and heiress of William Heckington, Esq., of Bourne in Lincolnshire. He was born at Bourne, Sept. 13, 1520, and had his school education at Grantham and Stamford. In 1535 he became a member of St. John's College, Cambridge, where he was so diligent a student that he hired the bell-ringer to call him at four o'clock every morning. Leaving the university, after six years' residence, without a degree, he became a member of Gray's Inn, May 6, 1541. In 1547 he came into possession of the office of *custos brevium*, worth nearly £240 per annum. The Duke of Somerset, Lord Protector, made him master of his requests, and he accompanied that nobleman in his expedition against Scotland, as one of the judges of the marshalsea. He was present at the battle of Mussel-

and by the Court of Rome, it is doubtful whether, in this instance, he did not accuse himself falsely. Upon his arraignment he pleaded *Guilty*, trusting to a pardon; but, the plea being recorded, he became frightened, and wished to retract it. This indulgence the Court refused, and he was asked why judgment of death should not be awarded against him:

Parry: "I see I must die, because I am not settled." *Sir Christopher Hatton* (one of the commissioners): "What meanest thou by that?" *Parry:* "Look into your study and into your new books, and you shall see what I mean." *Sir Christopher:* "Thou doest not well to use such dark speeches, unless thou wouldst plainly utter what thou meanest thereby." *Parry:* "I care not for death; I will lay my blood among you."

burgh, "where he was like to have byn slaine, but myraculously saved by one, that putting forth his arm to thrust Mr. Cecill out of the level of the canon, had his arme stricken off." In 1547 he was returned to Parliament for the borough of Stamford, and in the following year was appointed secretary to the Lord Protector. On the fall of that nobleman he was committed to the Tower, but was liberated on giving a recognizance in 1,000 marks to present himself on due warning before the Privy Council to answer any accusation which might be brought against him. On Sept. 5, 1550, he was appointed one of the secretaries of state, and sworn of the Privy Council, and in the following year he was created a knight. Reluctantly and against his judgment he was induced to subscribe the instrument by which Edward VI. settled the crown on Lady Jane Grey, and although he at first sullenly acquiesced in her accession, he soon sent in his adhesion to Queen Mary, who granted him a general pardon. It is said, but the statement is open to grave doubt, that she would have continued him as Secretary of State if he would have embraced the Catholic religion. Certain it is that he conformed to the change of religion which ensued. He accompanied Lord Paget and Sir Edward Hastings to Brussels to fetch over Cardinal Pole, and was one of the ambassadors on the part of England who met the French and Spanish ambassadors between Calais and Ardres. In the Parliament which met Oct. 21, 1555, he served as one of the knights for the county of Lincoln. During Mary's reign he had been the confidential friend and adviser of the Princess Elizabeth, who, immediately upon her accession to the crown, appointed him Secretary of State. From this time his history is the history of the reign in which he bore so conspicuous a part. On Shrove Sunday, Feb. 25, 1570–1, he was created Lord Burghley; in June, 1572, elected K.G.; and on July 15 following appointed Lord High Treasurer. He was also for many years chancellor of the University of Cambridge, and in 1593 became the first chancellor of the University of Dublin. His death occurred at Burghley House, in the Strand, Aug. 4, 1598.—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

CHAP. V. Lord Chief Justice Wray was then called upon to pronounce the sentence, and spoke as follows:

The sentence is pronounced by Wray.

"Parry, you have been much heard, and what you mean by being '*settled*' I know not; but I see that you are so *settled* in popery, that you cannot *settle* yourself to be a good subject. Thou hast committed horrible and hateful treason against thy most gracious sovereign and thy native country. The matter most detestable—the manner most subtle and dangerous. The matter was the destruction of a most sacred and an anointed Queen, thy sovereign and mistress; yea, the overthrow of thy country in which thou wast born, and of a most happy commonwealth whereof thou art a member. The manner was most subtle and dangerous beyond all that before thee have committed any wickedness against her Majesty. For thou, making show as if thou wouldst simply have uttered for her safety the evil that others had contrived, didst but seek thereby credit and access, that thou mightest take the after opportunity for her destruction. And for the occasions and means which drove thee on, they were most ungodly and villanous, as the persuasions of the Pope, of papists, and of popish books."

His tirade against the Pope's cause.

His Lordship, having indulged in a very lengthened tirade against the Pope, papists, and popish books, pronounced the usual sentence in high treason, which was executed a few days after, although the unhappy man declared that he was in truth innocent, and had only acted by orders of the Government to entrap others. He died unpitied;

"neque enim lex æquior ulla
Quam necis artifices arte perire suâ."[1]

A.D. 1586. Lord Chief Justice Wray was named in the commission for the trial of Anthony Babington,[2] and in

[1] ["For there is no law more just than that the makers of death be destroyed."]—1 St. Tr. 1095–1112.

[2] Anthony Babington (*d.* 1586), an English Roman Catholic gentleman, of good family, known to history by the plots which he formed to liberate Mary Queen of Scots and to assassinate Elizabeth. These were discovered by Walsingham's spies, and Babington, escaping for a time, was finally executed at Tyburn.—*Cassell's Biog. Dict.*

that for the trial of the Queen of Scots herself;[1] but he did not take a leading part in either of them, being superseded by the zeal of Sir Thomas Bromley,[2] who then held the Great Seal, and of Sir Christopher Hatton,[3] who was eager to hold it.[4] CHAP. V.

He presided in the Star Chamber,[5] however, when

[1] Mary Stuart, Queen of Scotland, was born in the palace of Linlithgow, Dec. 7, 1542. She was the daughter and heiress of James V., by Mary of Lorraine, and was only eight days old at the death of her father, on which a great contest took place among the nobility about the guardianship, which at last was intrusted to the Earl of Arran. At the age of six years she was taken to France, where, in 1558, she was married to the Dauphin Francis, who left her a widow two years afterwards, without issue, on which she returned to Scotland. In 1565 she espoused Henry Darnley, who had been previously created Earl of Ross and Duke of Rothesay. By him Mary had one son, who was afterwards James VI. of Scotland, and the First of England. In February, 1567, Henry Darnley was murdered; and in May following, Mary was married forcibly to John Hepburn, Earl of Bothwell, a man of infamous character, and the actual perpetrator of that horrible deed. Bothwell, however, was soon afterwards obliged to leave the kingdom; and the Queen was sent prisoner to the Castle of Lochleven, from whence, after a confinement of eleven months, she escaped to Hamilton Castle. An open war now ensued between her and the Regent, Murray; but Mary's forces, being undisciplined, were soon defeated, and she threw herself on the protection of Queen Elizabeth, who, after keeping her in custody eighteen years, caused her to be tried for conspiracy; and she was executed in the Castle of Fotheringay, Feb. 8, 1586–7.—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

[2] Sir Thomas Bromley, an English Judge, born in the county of Salop about 1530. He became Solicitor General in 1570, and Lord Chancellor in 1579. According to Lord Campbell, "he framed the measures intended to bring Mary Queen of Scots to trial." He presided over the court which condemned her in 1586. Died in 1587.—*Thomas' Biog. Dict.*

[3] Sir Christopher Hatton, Lord Chancellor of England, was born at Holdenby, Northamptonshire, and educated at St. Mary Hall, Oxford, from whence he proceeded to the Inner Temple. Instead, however, of following the law, he became a courtier, and attracted the Queen's notice by his graceful dancing in a mask. From this time he rose to several degrees of favor, and, in 1587, was made both Chancellor and Knight of the Garter. He died in 1591 of a broken heart, as some historians affirm, occasioned by the Queen's demanding a debt which he had it not in his power to pay. He wrote the fourth act in the tragedy of "Tancred and Sigismund;" and to him is ascribed "A treatise concerning Statutes or Acts of Parliament."—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

[4] 1 St. Tr. 1127, 1167; Lives of Chancellors, vol. ii. chaps. xliv., xlv.

[5] The Star Chamber, which was rebuilt by Henry VIII., took its name from the gilt stars upon its ceiling. It was the terrible Court in which the functions of Prosecutor and Judge were confounded, and where every

CHAP. V. A.D. 1587. Wray presides in the Star Chamber on the trial of Secretary Davison.

the scandalous mockery was exhibited which arose out of the feigned resentment of Elizabeth on account of the execution of Mary. He then, for some temporary convenience, held the office of Lord Privy Seal as well as of Chief Justice, and so had precedence over several peers of high rank who attended. He must have been well aware that Secretary Davison,[1] in sending off the warrant for the bloody deed to be done at Fotheringay,[2] acted with the full concurrence of his colleagues, and in compliance with the wishes of his royal mistress; but he conducted the proceeding with all solemnity, as if a public functionary had acted in disobedience of orders, and had thereby brought obloquy upon the sovereign and calamity upon the state.

His part in the mockery of that trial.

After the invectives of the Attorney General and the other counsel for the Crown, Davison mildly observed "that the warrant having passed the Great Seal by the Queen's express orders, it was to be executed as a matter of course, without further making her privy to the execution." Lord Chief Justice Wray exclaimed, "Mr. Davison, to call the warrant irrevo-

punishment except death could be inflicted—imprisonment, pillory, branding, whipping, etc. It was there that William, Bishop of Lincoln, was fined £5,000 for calling Laud "the great Leviathan," and that John Lilburn, after being fined £5,000, was sentenced to the pillory, and to be whipped from Fleet Street to Westminster.—*Hare's Walks in London*, vol. ii. p. 375.

[1] William Davison, an English statesman in the service of Queen Elizabeth. After having performed embassies to Holland and Scotland, he was appointed privy councillor, and one of the principal secretaries of state, about 1586. Hume says, "He was a man of parts, but easy to be imposed on, and who for that very reason had been made secretary." The Queen ordered him privately to draw a warrant for the execution of Mary Stuart, which she signed. After the execution (1587) she disowned the act, and threw the odium on Davison, who was confined in the Tower a number of years.—*Thomas' Biog. Dict.*

[2] The famous Castle of Fotheringay was the birthplace of Richard III., and the scene of the imprisonment, trial, and execution of Mary Queen of Scots. It was founded in the reign of the Conqueror, and pulled down by James I., soon after his accession to the English throne.—*Appl. Encyc*, vol. vii. p. 344.

cable you are deceived, for her Majesty might have revoked it at her pleasure." He then required all the councillors present to express their opinion, beginning with the junior, Sir Walter Mildmay,[1] who, after enlarging upon the enormity of the offence, proposed for punishment a fine of 10,000 marks and perpetual imprisonment. The other councillors, up to the Archbishop of Canterbury, having made similar speeches, and approved of the proposed sentence, Wray, Chief Justice, likewise spoke in aggravation, contending that the Queen's express authority for executing the warrant ought to have been obtained, and that the secretary was alone answerable for Mary's death. Thus he concluded:

His discreditable conclusion.

"Surely I think you meant well, and it was *bonum*, but not *bene*. Finally, I agree that the punishment shall be as it was first of all assessed. But further I must tell you, that, for so much as the fault is yours, this prosecution declares her Majesty's sincerity, and that she had no privity in your act, and that she was offended therewithal. Further, my Lords, I am directed to signify to you from her Majesty, that forasmuch as the Lords of the Council who concurred in that act were abused by Mr. Davison's relation in telling them that she was pleased, and what they did was for her safety, and they be sorrowful because they were abused by him, therefore her Majesty imputeth no fault to any, but only to him, and the rest she doth unburthen of all blame."[2]

This is certainly one of the most discreditable proceedings during the reign of Elizabeth, and reflects much disgrace on all concerned in it, except the veteran Secretary Davison himself, who boldly defended his

[1] Sir Walter Mildmay, an eminent English statesman and scholar, born in 1522, was distinguished by the favor of Henry VIII. and Edward VI., and held the office of Chancellor of the Exchequer under Elizabeth for more than twenty years. He was a liberal patron of learning, and founded Emanuel College, Cambridge. Died in 1589.—*Thomas' Biog. Dict.*

[2] 1 St. Tr. 1229–1250.

CHAP. V. innocence, and exposed the duplicity and fraud of his persecutors, although he thereby deprived himself of all hope of mercy.[1]

A.D. 1589. Trial of the Earl of Arundel.

Lord Chief Justice Wray's last appearance at a state trial was when the young Earl of Arundel, son of the Duke of Norfolk, had been reconciled to his own wife after having been once the lover of Elizabeth, and was therefore brought to trial on a frivolous charge of treason for having wished success to the Spanish Armada.[2] All the Judges attended as assessors; and the Chief Justice of the King's Bench, as their Coryphæus, gave the desired answers to the questions put to them, for the purpose of obtaining a conviction; but this caused such scandal, that Lord Burghley and Sir Christopher Hatton advised Elizabeth against staining her reputation with the blood of the son as well as of the father, and his life was spared, although he was detained in the Tower till he died, after an imprisonment of eleven years.[3]

Wray attempts to obtain his conviction on a frivolous charge of treason.

Wray's character.

Lord Chief Justice Wray, between the Crown and the subject, by no means showed the independence for which he was celebrated between subject and subject; yet his partiality and subserviency in state trials did not shock his contemporaries, and are rather to be considered the reproach of the age than of the individual. Till Lord Coke arose in the next generation, England can scarcely be said to have seen a magistrate of constancy, who was willing to surrender his place rather than his integrity. Wray, upon the whole, was very much respected, and he held his office

[1] See his Apologetical Discourse to Walsingham, 1 St. Tr. 1239. In truth, Elizabeth's only hesitation about sending off the warrant arose from a wish and a hope that it might be rendered unnecessary by a private assassination.

[2] The great naval armament sent by King Philip II. of Spain, in 1588, for the conquest of England.—*Appl. Encyc.*, vol. i. p. 719.

[3] 1 St. Tr. 1250.

CHAP. V.

with general approbation down to the time of his death. Sir George Croke, the reporter, says, "On the last day of Easter Term, 34 Eliz., died Sir Christopher Wray, Knt., Chief Justice of her Majesty's Court of Queen's Bench,—a most revered Judge, of profound and judicial knowledge, accompanied with a very ready and singular capacity and admirable patience."[1]

His death.

He left behind him a son, who, in 1612, was made a baronet by James I., and the title was inherited by his descendants till the year 1809, when, the male line failing, it became extinct. I congratulate my readers that we have done with the Wrays.

His descendants.

[1] Cro. Eliz. 280.

He performed his duties so much to Queen Elizabeth's satisfaction that she granted to him the profits of the coinage till he had built his noble house at Glentworth; and he retained her favor till his death, which occurred on May 7, 1592. He was buried in the chancel of Glentworth Church, under a magnificent monument, on which he is represented in his robes.—*Foss's Lives of the Judges of Eng.*

CHAPTER VI.

CHIEF JUSTICES FROM THE DEATH OF SIR CHRISTOPHER WRAY TILL THE APPOINTMENT OF SIR EDWARD COKE BY JAMES I.

CHAP. VI.

Sir John Popham.

THE career of our next hero is capable of being made amusing as well as instructive. Although at one time in the habit of taking purses on the highway,—instead of expiating his offences at Tyburn he lived to pass sentence of death upon highwaymen, and to be a terror to evil-doers all over the kingdom.

His birth.

JOHN POPHAM was born in the year 1531, at Wellington, in the county of Somerset, a place which is distinguished as the cradle of the Wellesleys, and which the great ornament of his race and of his country has rendered for ever famous by taking from it his title of Duke,[1] rather than from the scene of any of his glorious victories. He was of gentle blood, being a younger son of a family who, though simple squires and of Saxon origin, had for many generations been entitled to bear arms, and who had been settled on a small estate at Huntworth in the same county.

His early life.

While yet a child he was stolen by a band of gypsies, and remained some months in their society; whence some pretended to account for the irregular habits and little respect for the rules of property which afterwards marked one period of his life. His captors had disfigured him, and had burnt on his left arm a cabalistic mark which he carried with him to the grave. But his constitution, which had been sickly before, was strengthened by the wandering life he had

[1] Duke of Wellington.

CHAP. VI.

led with these lawless associates, and he grew up to be a man of extraordinary stature and activity of body. We have no account of his schooling before he was sent to Baliol College, Oxford. Here he was very studious and well-behaved, and he laid in a good stock of classical learning and of dogmatic divinity. But when removed to the Middle Temple, that he might qualify himself for the profession of the law, he got into bad company, and utterly neglected his juridical studies. He preferred theatres, gaming-houses, and other haunts of dissipation, to "readings" and "moots;" and once, when asked to accompany a friend to hear an important case argued by great lawyers in Westminster Hall, he declared that "he was going where he would see disputants whom he honored more—to a bear-baiting in Alsatia." Unfortunately, this was not, as in a subsequent age, in the case of young Holt, afterwards Lord Chief Justice, merely a temporary neglect of discipline—"*a sowing of his wild oats.*" The remonstrances of his family and his friends, and the scrapes he got into, had no permanent effect in reclaiming him; and, although he sometimes seemed resolved on reformation, and had fits of application, he was speedily again seduced by his profligate companions, and he engaged in courses still more culpable.

At Oxford, A.D. 1547.

A.D. 1551.

His profligacy when a student in the Temple.

It seems to stand on undoubted testimony, that at this period of his life, besides being given to drinking and gaming,—either to supply his profligate expenditure, or to show his spirit, he frequently sallied forth at night from a hostel in Southwark,[1] with a

He takes to the road.

[1] Southwark, the town on the south side of the Thames, "called by the Saxons," says Pennant, "Southverke, or the South Work." It is intersected by the great street called *the Borough High Street*, which was the highway between the metropolis and the southern counties, and by which the Canterbury pilgrimages passed out towards the shrine of St. Thomas à Becket. A memorial of these pilgrimages may be seen in a succession of ancient taverns, retaining their picturesque wooden galleries around

CHAP. VI.

band of desperate characters, and that, planting themselves in ambush on Shooters' Hill, or taking other positions favorable for attack and escape, they stopped travellers, and took from them not only their money, but any valuable commodities which they carried with them,—boasting that they were always civil and generous, and that, to avoid serious consequences, they went in such numbers as to render resistance impossible. We must remember that this calling was not then by any means so discreditable as it became afterwards; that a statute was made during Popham's youth by which, on a first conviction for robbery, a peer of the realm or lord of parliament was entitled to benefit of clergy "*though he cannot read;*"[1] and that the traditions were still fresh, of robberies having been committed on Gad's Hill[2] under the sanction of a Prince of Wales.[3] The extraordinary and almost incredible circumstance is, that Popham is supposed to have continued in these courses after he had been called to the bar, and when, being of mature age, he was married to a respectable woman. At last, a sudden change was produced by her unhappiness, and the birth of a child, for whom he felt attachment. We have the following account of his reformation from Aubrey:[4]

This calling not then so discreditable.

A.D. 1551—1560.

Popham reforms.

their courtyards, with the chambers opening from them, like the old inns in the French towns.—*Hare's Walks in London.*

[1] 1 Ed. VI. c. 12, s. 14.

[2] About 2½ m. to the N.W. of Strood, on the road to Gravesend, is *Gad's Hill* (Falstaff Inn), the scene of Falstaff's encounter with the "men in buckram" (Henry IV., Part I. ii. 4), and also mentioned by Chaucer. —*Baedeker's Gt. Brit.*, p. 20.

[3] If Popham's *raids* had been a little later, they might have been imputed to the First Part of Henry IV., which must have had at least as much effect as the Beggar's Opera in softening the horror excited by highway robbery.

[4] John Aubrey (*b.* 1626, *d.* 1697), English antiquarian and miscellaneous writer, one of the first members of the Royal Society, wrote the *Perambulation of Surrey*, and other curious works, and contributed to Anthony Wood's *Athenæ Oxonienses.*—*Cassell's Biog. Dict.*

CHAP. VI.

"For severall yeares he addicted himselfe but little to the studie of the lawes, but profligate company, and was wont to take a purse with them. His wife considered her and his condition, and at last prevailed with him to lead another life and to stick to the studie of the lawe, which, upon her importunity, he did, beeing then about thirtie yeares old. He spake to his wife to provide a very good entertainment for his camerades to take his leave of them, and after that day fell extremely hard to his studie, and profited exceedingly. He was a strong, stout man, and could endure to sit at it day and night; became eminent in his calling, had good practice, was called to be a Serjeant and a Judge."[1]

Fuller, always anxious to soften whatever appears discreditable to any of his "Worthies," says of Popham,—

Fuller's presentation of him.

"In his youthful days he was as stout and skilful a man at sword and buckler as any in that age, and wild enough in his recreations. But, oh! if *Quicksilver* could really be *fixed*, to what a treasure would it amount! Such is *wild youth* seriously reduced to *gravity*, as by this young man did appear. He applied himself to more profitable fencing—the study of the laws; therein attaining to such eminency that he became the Queen's Attorney, and afterwards Lord Chief Justice of England."[2]

We are not told, and it would be vain to conjecture, what means he employed to redeem the time, and to qualify himself for the profession to which he now earnestly devoted himself. This we certainly know, that he became a consummate lawyer, and was allowed to be so by Coke, who depreciated all contemporaries, and was accustomed to sneer at the "book learning" of Francis Bacon.

Popham's professional progress.

It might be supposed that Popham would get on particularly well in the Crown Court; but,—from the dread of encountering some of his old associates, or for some better reason,—till he was required, in the discharge of his official duty, to conduct public prose-

[1] Aubrey, iii. 492. [2] Vol. ii. 284.

CHAP. VI.

cutions, he confined himself entirely to civil business; and the department of practice for which he chiefly laid himself out was "special pleading," or the drawing in writing the allegations of the plaintiff and the defendant, till they ended in a *demurrer* referring a question of law to the judges, or in an *issue of fact* to be determined by a jury. To add to the gravity of his newly assumed character, he was eager to reach the dignity of the coif; and, after some opposition on account of the stories circulated against him, in 1571 he actually became *Sergeant Popham.* His feast was on a scale of extraordinary magnificence, and he furnished some very fine old Gascony wine, which the wags reported he had intercepted one night as it was coming from Southampton, destined for the cellar of an alderman of London.

A.D. 1571. He becomes Sergeant.

However, in spite of such jibes, he acquired the reputation of being very skilful in conducting real actions, which were exclusively tried in the Court of Common Pleas, where he now practised; and his business steadily increased. He was likewise concerned in some cases in the Court of Wards and Liveries against the Crown; and Elizabeth, who had a regular report made to her of all suits in which her interests were concerned, expressed a wish that he might be taken into her service.

Elizabeth's appreciation of his ability.

Accordingly, when Sir Thomas Bromley, who had been long her Solicitor General, was promoted to be Lord Chancellor, Popham succeeded him as Solicitor General. Now he was somewhat ashamed of the coif, of which he was once so proud, and, meaning henceforth to practise in the Court of Queen's Bench, he resorted to the unusual expedient of *unsergeanting* or *discoifing* himself; so he was once more "John Popham, Esquire."[1] He gave high satisfaction by the

June 26, 1579. He is made Solicitor General.

[1] "*Joh. Popham* arm. exoneratus de nomine, statu, et gradu Serv. ad

manner in which he conducted the Queen's business; and in the beginning of the year 1581 he was, on her recommendation, elected Speaker of the House of Commons. This appointment was substantially in the gift of the Government, and was very often bestowed on the Solicitor General for the time being, the Attorney General attending as an assessor in the House of Lords, and being considered disqualified to sit as a representative of the people.

Speaker of the House of Commons.

When the new Speaker demanded from the Queen liberty of speech for the Commons, and their other ancient privileges, she gave him an admonition "to see to it that they did not deal or intermeddle with any matters touching her person or estate, or church or government."[1]

Jan. 18, 1581. He demands liberty of speech for the Commons.

The very first motion made was by Paul Wentworth, the Puritan, for a public fast to be appointed by the House, and for a daily sermon, so that, beginning their proceedings with the service and worship of God, He might the better bless them in all their consultations and actions. After a long debate, the motion was carried by a majority of 115 to 100. The Queen was highly incensed at this, which she considered an encroachment on her prerogative as "Head of the Church," and rated Popham very roundly for presuming to put the motion from the chair. On a subsequent day he addressed the House, and said, "he was very sorry for the error that had happened, in resolving to have a public fast, and for her Majesty's great misliking of the proceeding. He advised them

He displeases the Queen in putting a motion for a fast and sermon.

legem." (*Pat.* 21 Eliz. p. 2.) Sergeant Copley, when made Solicitor General and Attorney General, remained a Sergeant; and when become Lord Lyndhurst and Lord Chancellor, he wore the coif, and called the Sergeants his "brothers."

[1] 1 Parl. Hist. 811. This election of Speaker did not take place at the commencement of a parliament, but on account of the death of the Speaker during the parliament—an event which does not seem to have happened before, and which caused much perplexity.

CHAP. VI.

to send a submission to her Majesty, and to bestow their time and endeavor thereafter, during the session, in matters proper and pertinent for this House to deal in." He then asked the question, "whether the Vice Chamberlain should carry their submission to her Majesty?" And it was agreed to unanimously. Mr. Vice Chamberlain, to the great comfort of the Speaker and of the House, "brought answer of her Majesty's acceptance of the submission,—expressing at the same time some anxiety that they should not misreport the cause of her misliking, which was not that she objected to fasting and prayer, but for the manner—in presuming to order a public fast without her privity, which was to intrude upon her authority ecclesiastical."[1]

He advises submission to her Majesty.

At the end of the session Mr. Speaker Popham presented to the Queen all the public bills passed, amounting to the unexampled number of fifteen; and in a long speech, in which he explained and praised them, he prayed the Queen graciously to assent to them, thus concluding—"I do further most humbly beseech your Highness, in the name and behalf of the Commons of your realm, that you will have a vigilant and provident care of the safety of your most royal person against the malicious attempts of some mighty foreign enemies abroad, and the traitorous practices of most unnatural disobedient subjects both abroad and at home, envying the blessed and most happy and quiet government of this realm under your Highness, upon the thread of whose life only, next under God, dependeth the life and whole state and stay of every your good and dutiful subjects."[2]

His address to the Queen at the end of the session.

This was Popham's last parliamentary effort, as he never again sat in the House of Commons, and in the House of Lords he was condemned to silence.

[1] 1 Parl. Hist. 813.

[2] 1 Parl. Hist. 820.

CHAP. VI.

Soon after the prorogation he succeeded Sir Gilbert Gerrard as Attorney General, and had Sir Thomas Egerton[1] (afterwards Lord Ellesmere) for his Solicitor. Difficult times came on, but these law officers always rose with the occasion, and brought the important state prosecutions in which they were engaged to a fortunate issue.

June 1. He becomes Attorney General.

The new Attorney General was called upon to take part in a solemnity which seems very strange to us. In that age, when parliament rarely met, and there were no newspapers in which ministers could give their explanation of any public occurrence, or defend themselves from any charge orally circulated against them, it was usual to have a grand assemblage in the Star Chamber, to which the nobility, the Lord Mayor and aldermen of London, and other notabilities, were invited, and then the different members of the government (without any opponent) made speeches in their own justification and in their own praise. Henry Percy, Earl of Northumberland, a Roman Catholic, much attached to the interests of Queen Mary, having been kept for several years a close prisoner in the Tower, had been shot through the head by three slugs, and was found dead in his bed on the night after his guard had been changed by the orders of Sir Christopher Hatton, the Vice Chamberlain. Notwithstanding a verdict by the coroner's jury of *felo de se*, a rumor was spread, and very generally credited, that

A.D. 1585.

Proceeding in the Star Chamber on the death of the Earl of Northumberland.

June 23, 1585.

The rumor of his assassination.

[1] Thomas Egerton, Lord Ellesmere, Lord Chancellor of England, born in Cheshire in 1540, was the son of Sir Richard Egerton. Having become eminent in his profession, he was chosen Solicitor General in 1581, and Attorney General in 1592. After holding several other high offices, he attained the dignity of Keeper of the Great Seal in 1596. He enjoyed a high degree of favor with Queen Elizabeth to the end of her reign. After the accession of James I., in 1603, he was created Baron of Ellesmere and Lord High Chancellor. He was made Viscount Brackley in 1616. In 1617 he resigned the Great Seal, and was succeeded by Lord Bacon. He was esteemed an excellent judge and a great orator. Died in 1617.—*Thomas' Biog. Dict.*

CHAP. VI.

he had been assassinated, because he was considered dangerous to the state, and there was no evidence upon which he could be brought to an open trial. A meeting was accordingly called in the Star Chamber, attended by all the great officers of state, from the Lord Chancellor to the Vice Chamberlain; and, says the report,—

"The audience was very great of knights, esquires, and men of other quality. The Chancellor declared that, lest, through the sinister means of such persons as be evil affected to the present estate of her Majesty's government, some bad and untrue conceits might be had, as well of the cause of the Earl's detainment as of the manner of his death, it was thought necessary to have the truth thereof made known in that presence. He therefore required her Majesty's learned counsel to deliver at large the particularities both of the treasons, and in what sort the Earl had murdered himself. Then began John Popham, Esq., her Majesty's Attorney General."

Popham refutes it by alleging his suicide.

Mr. Attorney, not bound to prove any of his allegations, and not fearing any reply, but having it all his own way, proceeds with a lengthened narrative, showing that it was out of the unexampled clemency of her Highness that the deceased had not long before been convicted as a traitor, and that, from the dread of a public trial and execution, he had died by his own hand.

Then spoke various Lords of the Council,—and the whole case was at last summed up by Sir Christopher Hatton, the suspected party, who, having bitterly inveighed against the deceased Earl, declared—

The case summed up by Hatton, the Vice Chamberlain.

"That God by his just judgment had for his sins and ingratitude taken from him his spirit of grace, and delivered him over to the enemy of his soul, who brought him to that most dreadful and horrible end whereunto he is come; from which God of his mercy defend all Christian people, and preserve the Queen's Majesty from the treasons of her subjects, that she may live in all happiness to see the ruin of her ene-

mies abroad and at home; and that she and we, her true and loving subjects, may be always thankful to God for all his blessings bestowed upon us by her, the only maintenance of his holy gospel among us."[1]

A.D. 1586.

Babington's conspiracy.

Popham conducted the trials of all those charged as being implicated in Babington's conspiracy, which were meant to prepare the public mind for the trial of the unhappy Mary herself. I will give a little specimen of these proceedings from *Tilney's case*. The charge against him was, that he had planned the murder of Queen Elizabeth in her coach. The chief evidence consisted of a confession of Abington, an avowed accomplice, in which he said that "Tilney was disposed to kill the Queen;" and that Babbington, on his own trial, said the day before, "Tilney would have had her Majesty set upon in her coach."

Tilney's case.

Tilney's defence and Popham's charge of high treason.

Tilney: "No! I said not so; only at the Three Tuns, in Newgate Market, I said 'it might be her Majesty might be set upon in her coach,' and I said no more. But that proves not I did consent." *Popham, A. G.:* "You have said enough, if we had no other evidence against you." *Tilney:* "How so?" *Popham, A. G.:* "Because you have confessed high treason; your words prove that you were devising on the manner of her death." *Tilney:* "I tell you there is no such matter intended in my words. If a servant which is faithful, knowing where his master's money is, do say, 'If I would be a thief I could rob my master, for in such a place his money is,' this proves not that he would rob his master albeit he used such words. And so, though I said 'she might be set upon in her coach,' it proveth not that I assented to the same; for I protest before God I never intended any treason in my life." *Anderson, C. J.* (the presiding Judge): "But if a servant, knowing where his master's money is, among thieves which are devising to take away the master's money,

[1] 1 St. Tr. 1111–1128. Yet these exhibitions do not seem to have had much effect, for although I believe this charge of assassination to be unfounded, Sir Walter Raleigh, in a letter soon after written to Sir Robert Cecil, assumes it as a fact known to both of them, that the Earl of Northumberland was murdered by the contrivance of Hatton.—*Murdin.* 811.

CHAP. VI.

do say, 'This way my master's money may be taken,' and be in view when it is taken, I say that he is accessory. And you, Tilney, being amongst traitors that were devising how to kill her Majesty, showed by what means her Majesty might be killed. This manifestly proves your assent. Therefore let the jury consider of the evidence."

Upon this summing up, a verdict of GUILTY was immediately pronounced, and the prisoner was executed.[1]

A.D. 1586.

Popham was present in the court at Fotheringay during the trial of the Queen of Scots, but did not interfere much in the proceeding, as the part of public prosecutor was acted in turn by Lord Chancellor Bromley, Lord Treasurer Burghley, and Vice Chamberlain Hatton, who were sitting as her judges.[2]

He prosecutes Secretary Davison for sending off the warrant for the execution of Queen Mary.

A.D. 1588.

When poor Secretary Davison (intended to be the scapegoat for the sins of all concerned in her death) was brought before the Star Chamber, Popham enlarged on the enormity of his offence in sending off the warrant for her execution without the Queen's express orders, although she had signed it, and it had passed the Great Seal by her authority and with her approbation.[3]

Case of Sir Richard Knightly.

The last case in which Popham seems to have been concerned at the bar gives us a lively idea of the perils to which public liberty was exposed in the end of the sixteenth century. Sir Richard Knightly, the representative of an ancient family in Northamptonshire, had the misfortune to be a Puritan, and had printed and published, in a country town near his residence, a pamphlet, explaining very temperately his religious notions upon the proper observance of the Sabbath, and other such subjects. This gave deep offence to the bishops; and the author was prosecuted in the Star Chamber for it. Popham denounced

[1] 1 St. Tr. 1127–1162. [2] St. Tr. 1161–1228. [3] St. Tr. 1229.

Popham's attitude towards proclamations and prosecutions.

it as a most seditious and libellous publication, "fit for a vice in a play, and no other," but founded his reasoning chiefly on proclamations issued by her Majesty declaring "that no pamphlet or treatise should be published till previously seen and allowed; and further, that no printing shall be used any where but in London, Oxford, and Cambridge." It was admitted that for mere breach of a royal proclamation an indictment could not be supported in a court of common law; but the crown lawyers asserted, that it was part of the royal prerogative to issue proclamations on any subject, for the public good, and that those proclamations might be enforced by prosecutions in the Star Chamber. Nobody in the Star Chamber ventured to controvert this doctrine; and, on the present occasion, the only justification or palliation offered by the defendant was, that he had been overpersuaded by his wife. *Popham, A. G.:* "Methinks he is worthy of the greater punishment for giving such a foolish answer as that he did it at his wife's desire." He escaped with a fine of 2,000*l.*[1]—Such cases should be borne in mind when we measure our gratitude to Sir Edward Coke, for stoutly denying the legality of proclamations to alter the law of the land, and for contending that disobedience to them could not lawfully be made the subject of a prosecution in the Star Chamber any more than in a court of common law. The proclamation and the prosecution conjoined were weapons to satisfy any tyrant, however rancorous his hatred of liberty, or however eagerly covetous of despotic power.

Sir Edward Coke's position on these questions.

Upon the death of Sir Christopher Wray, there was some hesitation about the nomination of his successor. Popham was an able man, and had done good service as Attorney General; but there was an awkwardness, after the stories that were circulated about

May 8, 1592.

[1] 1 St. Tr. 1263–1272.

CHAP. VI.

his early exploits, in placing him at the head of the administration of criminal justice. Egerton,[1] the Solicitor General, although of great learning and unexceptionable character, could not decently have been put over his head; Coke was already known to be an incarnation of the common law of England, but he could not be placed in such an exalted situation without having before served the Crown, or given any sure earnest of sound political principles; and Sir Edmund Anderson,[2] the Chief Justice of the Common Pleas, refused to give up his "pillow" for the thorns of the Queen's Bench. None of the *puisnies* were considered competent to preside on a trial for high treason, or to deliver a political harangue in the Star Chamber. The choice, therefore, fell upon Popham, who, on the 8th of June, 1592, received his writ as Chief Justice of England, was knighted by the Queen at Greenwich, and was sworn of the Privy Council along with Lord Keeper Puckering.

Popham is made Chief Justice of the King's Bench.

He held the office fifteen years, during the end of this and the beginning of the succeeding reign, and he was supposed to conduct himself in it very creditably. The reproach urged against him was, extreme severity to prisoners. He was notorious as a "hanging judge." Not only was he keen to convict in cases prosecuted by the Government, but in ordinary larcenies, and, above all, in highway robberies, there was little chance of an acquittal before him. After a verdict of guilty in capital cases, he uniformly let the law take its course: even in clergiable felonies he was very strict

His extreme severity.

[1] See Lives of the Lord Chancellors.

[2] Sir Edmund Anderson, born at Broughton about 1530. He was Chief Justice of the Court of Common Pleas from 1582 until his death, and was one of the commissioners who tried Mary Queen of Scots and Sir Walter Raleigh. He treated the Puritans with rigor, but his judicial conduct is said to have been generally moderate and correct. His "Reports of Cases argued and adjudged in the Common Bench" are esteemed good authority. Died in 1605.—*Thomas' Biog. Dict.*

about the "neck verse;" and those who were most excusable, on account of ignorance, he saw without remorse led off to the gallows, although if they had been taught to read they would have escaped with a nominal punishment. To such a degree had "damned custom" brazed his feelings. Some, indeed, who probably refine too much, have supposed that he was very desirous of showing to the public that he had no longer any sympathy with those who set the law at defiance, and that in this way he thought he made atonement to society for the evil example which formerly he had himself set.

His impartiality in actions between party and party.

On the trial of actions between party and party he is allowed by all to have been strictly impartial, and to have expounded the law clearly and soundly. There are many of his judgments in civil cases preserved, showing that he well deserved the reputation which he enjoyed, but they are all of such a technical character that they would be uninteresting, and indeed unintelligible, to the general reader. In speaking of him farther as a Judge, I must, therefore, confine myself to his appearances in the state trials which took place while he was Chief Justice to Elizabeth and James.

A.D. 1601. His gallant conduct in Essex's rebellion.

The most glorious day of his life was Sunday, the 8th of February, 1601, when he showed a courage, a prudence, and a generosity which ought for ever to render his name respectable. Elizabeth, in her palace at Whitehall, was informed that the young Earl of Essex[1]

[1] Robert Devereux, second Earl of Essex, born at Netherwood in 1567, was the eldest son of Walter, the first Earl. He was educated at Cambridge. In 1587 he served as Captain General of cavalry in the army commanded by his stepfather, the Earl of Leicester. On the death of the latter, in 1588, Essex, whose person and manners were very agreeable, and who was endowed with many virtues, became the special favorite of the Queen, and the rival of Raleigh. In 1590 he married a daughter of Sir Francis Walsingham, and widow of Sir Philip Sidney. He displayed courage and capacity in the victorious expedition against Cadiz in 1596, of

CHAP. VI.

had madly fortified his house[1] in the Strand,[2] and had planned an insurrection in the City of London. She immediately ordered Chief Justice Popham to accompany Ellesmere,[3] the Lord Keeper, and summon the rebels to surrender. They went unattended, except by their mace-bearers. Essex having complained of ill treatment from his enemies, the Chief Jus-

which he commanded the land forces. The next year he was named Earl Marshal of England. In 1598 he quarrelled with the Queen, and, receiving from her a box on the ear, he indulged his pride and resentment so far as to withdraw from court for several months. In 1599 he was unsuccessful in an expedition against the Irish rebels, and again incurred the displeasure of the Queen, who ordered him to be confined, intending to correct rather than ruin him. Having been examined before the Privy Council, he was suspended from office. Trusting to his general popularity, and led by his impetuous temper, he attempted to compel the Queen by force to dismiss his enemies. For this purpose he marched with about two hundred retainers into London, and vainly invoked the aid of the citizens; he was arrested, convicted of treason, and executed in 1601. Elizabeth signed the warrant for his execution very reluctantly, and was inconsolable for his loss. He is admitted to have been by nature noble and generous; but his vanity, ambition, and imprudence rendered these advantages of no avail.—*Thomas' Biog. Dict.*

[1] Essex Street occupies the site of Exeter House, which was built by Walter Stapleton, Bishop of Exeter. Here he was besieged by the people when he was holding London for Edward II., and, having fled to take sanctuary at St. Paul's, was beheaded, and brought back to be buried under a dust-heap by his own gateway. After the Reformation, Exeter House was inhabited by the Earl of Leicester, and then by Elizabeth's latest favorite, the Earl of Essex (whose Countess was the widow of Sir Philip Sidney), when the name was changed to Essex House. It was here that the handsome Earl tried to rouse the people against Sir R. Cecil, Sir Walter Raleigh, and other reigning court favorites whom he believed to have been the cause of his losing his ascendency over the Queen. Here he was blockaded, cannon being pointed at Essex House from the roofs of the neighboring houses and the tower of St. Clement Danes, and hence, having surrendered, he was taken away to the Tower, where he was beheaded.—*Hare's Walks in London*, book i. p. 49.

[2] The Strand was the highway from the royal palace at Westminster to the royal palace on the Fleet, and so became popular with the aristocracy. Gradually great houses had sprung up along its course, the earliest being Essex House, Durham House, and the Palace of the Bishops of Norwich, afterwards called York House; though even in Elizabeth's time the succession was rather one of country palaces than of town residences, for all the great houses looked into fields upon the north, and on the south had large and pleasant gardens sloping towards the river.—*Hare's Walks in London*, book i. p. 6.

[3] See Lives of the Lord Chancellors.

CHAP. VI.

tice said calmly, "The Queen will do impartial justice." He then, in the Queen's name, required the forces collected in the courtyard to lay down their arms and to depart, when a cry burst out of "Kill them! kill them!" The Earl rescued them from violence, but locked them up in a dungeon, while he himself sallied forth, in hopes of successfully raising the standard of rebellion in the City of London. After being kept in solitary confinement till the afternoon, Popham was offered his liberty on condition that the Lord Keeper should remain behind as a hostage; but the gallant Chief Justice indignantly refused this offer, and declared that he would share the fate of his friend. At length, upon news arriving of Essex's failure in the City, they were both liberated, and made good their retreat to Whitehall in a boat.

Popham's confinement at Essex House.

The trial of Essex coming on before the Lord High Steward and Court of Peers, Popham was both assessor and witness. First a written deposition, signed by him, was read, and then he was examined *vivâ voce*. He gave his evidence with temperance and caution, affording a striking contrast to the coarse vituperation of Coke, the Attorney General, and the ingenious sophistry of Bacon, who seemed to thirst for the blood of his benefactor.[1] Popham, though so severe against common felons, was touched by the misfortune of the high-born Essex, felt some gratitude for the tenderness he had experienced when in his power, and recommended a pardon, which would have been extended to him if the fatal ring[2] had duly reached the hands of Elizabeth.

Essex's trial.

Popham recommends a pardon.

[1] Camd. Eliz. vol. ii. 225, 231; 1 St. Tr. 1333–1360.

[2] The story of his giving a ring to the Countess of Nottingham, to be conveyed to the Queen, but which commission that lady, at the instigation of her husband, neglected to perform, though long regarded as fabulous, is now known to be true.—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

CHAP. VI.

Mar. 1602. Trial of Essex's accomplices.

When Sir Christopher Blunt[1] and several other commoners were tried for being concerned in this rebellion, Chief Justice Popham presided as Judge, and, at the same time, gave evidence as a witness, mixing the two characters in a manner that seems to us rather incongruous. He began with laying down the law:

Popham as Judge.

Lord C. J.: "Whenever the subject rebelleth or riseth in a forcible manner to overrule the royal will and power of the sovereign, the wisdom and foresight of the laws of this land maketh this construction of his actions, that he intended to deprive the sovereign both of crown and life. If many do conspire to execute treason against the prince in one manner, and some of them do execute it in another manner, yet their act, though different in the manner, is the act of all of them who conspire, by reason of the general malice of the intent."

His dialogue with witnesses and prisoners.

Afterwards he entered into a dialogue with the witnesses and with the prisoners respecting the occurrences he had witnessed at Essex House. For example: *L. C. J.:* "Sir Christopher, I should like to know why you stood at the great chamber door, with muskets charged and matches in your hands, which I well discerned through the keyhole?" He repeatedly put similar questions, and gave his own version of the different vicissitudes of the day till he was liberated. He then summed up to the jury, commenting on his own evidence, and, after the verdict of GUILTY, he thus addressed the prisoners:

His evidence as witness.

[1] Sir Christopher Blunt, or Blount, was educated abroad in the English college at Rheims under the direction of Doctor, afterwards Cardinal, Allen. On his return to England he appeared very much at court, and, though a Catholic, served the Queen in her wars. He was very intimate with the Earl of Essex, under whom he served in Spain and Ireland. His intimacy with this nobleman proved his ruin, for the Earl being called out of Ireland, to justify his conduct in that kingdom, Sir Christopher came over with him, and was one of the party when he marched through the streets of London in a tumultuous manner in order to surprise the Queen's Council. Being afterwards tried and condemned to die, he lost his head on Tower Hill, March 18, 1600, together with Sir Charles Danvers, who had been engaged in the same cause.—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

CHAP. VI.

"I am sorry to see any so ill affected to the state as to become plotters and practisers against it. And my grief is the more in this—men of worth, service, and learning are the actors in the conspiracy. Shall it be said in the world abroad that, after forty-three years' peace under so gracious and renowned a prince, we Englishmen are become weary of her government, while she is admired by all the world beside? Some of you are Christians; and where, I pray you, did you ever read or hear that it was lawful for the subject to command or constrain his sovereign? It is a thing against the law of God and of all nations. Although your example be pitiful, yet by this let all men know and learn how high all actions treasonable do touch, and what they tend to. Now attend to the care of your souls, to keep them from death, whereof sin is the cause; and sin is not removed but by repentance, which being truly and heartily performed, then follows what the prophet David spake of, 'Blessed are they to whom God imputeth no sin.'" His address to the prisoners.

Finally, he pronounced upon them the revolting sentence in high treason, and they were executed accordingly.[1]

On the death of Queen Elizabeth, Popham joined in acknowledging the title of the King of Scots[2] as lawful heir to the throne, and he was reappointed to his office of Chief Justice of the King's Bench when the new sovereign arrived in London. We are told that he still maintained his reputation for a strict enforcement of the criminal law, and did not suffer the sword of justice to rust in its scabbard. March 24, 1603. April 11. He is reappointed Chief Justice.

"In the beginning of the reign of King James, Popham's justice was exemplary on thieves and robbers. The land then swarmed with people which had been soldiers, who had never gotten (or quite forgotten) any other vocation. Hard

[1] 1 St. Tr. 1400–1452.

[2] James VI. of Scotland and I. of England was the son of Henry Stuart, Lord Darnley, by Mary, daughter of James V. He was born 1566, and the year following proclaimed King on the forced resignation of his mother. He succeeded Queen Elizabeth on the English throne 1603; and died March 27, 1625.—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

CHAP. VI.

it was for peace to feed all the idle mouths which a former war did breed: being too proud to beg, too lazy to labour, those infested the highways with their felonies; some presuming on their multitudes, as the robbers on the northern road, whose knot (otherwise not to be untyed) Sir John cut asunder with the sword of justice."[1]

November. Sir Walter Raleigh tried before Popham.

He presided at the trial of Sir Walter Raleigh[2] for being concerned in the plot to place the Lady Arabella Stuart[3] on the throne; but the greatest part of the disgrace which then fell on the administration of justice was truly imputed to Sir Edward Coke, the Attorney General, who will continue to be quoted to all generations for the brutality of character he exhibited in vituperating his gallant victim. The Chief Justice at first tried to restore good humor between the prisoner and the public prosecutor, by making an apology for the eagerness of both:

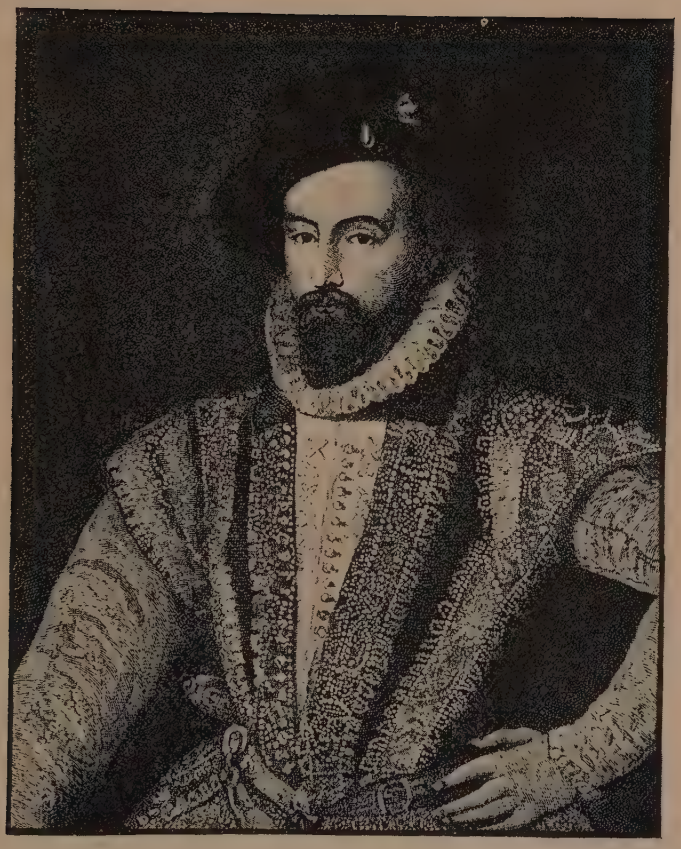
Popham, C. J.: "Sir Walter Raleigh, Mr. Attorney speaketh out of the zeal of his duty for the service of the King, and you for your life; be valiant on both sides."

Afterwards, when Coke behaved as if he had con-

[1] Aubrey, vol. iii. p. 490.

[2] Sir Walter Ralegh, or Raleigh (*b.* 1552, *d.* 1618), statesman, navigator, and author, born near Budleigh; studied at Oriel College, Oxford; fought in support of the Protestants in France (1569); distinguished himself against the rebels in Ireland 1580–1; rose rapidly in Elizabeth's favor; in 1585 despatched an expedition to America, which discovered Virginia, so named in honor of the Queen; took part in the repulse of the Spanish Armada (1588); in 1595 went to Guiana in search of gold, and sailed some distance up the Orinoco; held a command in the attack on Cadiz (1596). After the accession of James I. he was accused of complicity in the plot to raise Arabella Stuart to the throne, and imprisoned in the Tower for thirteen years (1603–16), during which he wrote his *History of the World.* In 1616 he was permitted to lead an expedition to Guiana against the Spaniards, but his pardon was made dependent on his success, and, as the attempt was a failure, he was executed on his return.—*Cassell's Biog. Dict.*

[3] Lady Arabella Stuart (1577–1615) was the daughter of the Earl of Lennox, brother of Lord Darnley; thus she was the first cousin of James I., and great-granddaughter of Margaret, daughter of Henry VII.—*Dict. of Eng. Hist.*



SIR WALTER RALEIGH.
PICTURE AT KNOLE.

sidered this an exhortation to insult the man whom the law still presumed to be innocent, Popham joined with the other judges in trying to repress him, till "Mr. Attorney sat down in a chafe, and would speak no more." Thereupon they were all afraid that the King would be displeased, and "they urged and entreated him to go on."

Popham's rulings.

The rulings of Chief Justice Popham at this trial would seem very strange in our day, but in his they caused no surprise or censure. In the first place, he decided—against an able argument from the prisoner, who conducted his own defence—that, although the charge was high treason, it was sufficiently supported by the uncorroborated evidence of a single witness; and, secondly, that there was no occasion for this witness to be produced in court, or sworn, and that a written confession by him, accusing himself and implicating the prisoner, was enough to satisfy all the requisitions of common and statute law on the subject. Raleigh still urged that Lord Cobham, his sole accuser, should be confronted with him:

Popham's refusal of Raleigh's request to be confronted with his accuser.

Popham, C. J.: "This thing cannot be granted, for then a number of treasons should flourish; the accuser may be drawn in practice whilst he is in person." *Raleigh:* "The common trial in England is by jury and witnesses." *Popham, C. J.:* "If three conspire a treason, and they all confess it, here is never a witness, and yet they are condemned." *Raleigh:* "I know not how you conceive the law." *Popham, C. J.:* "Nay, we do not conceive the law, but we know the law." *Raleigh:* "The wisdom of the law of God is absolute and perfect. *Hoc fac et vives*, etc. Indeed, where the witness is not to be had conveniently, I agree with you: but here he may; he is alive, and under this roof. Susannah had been condemned if Daniel had not cried out, 'Will you condemn an innocent Israelite without examination or knowledge of the truth?' Remember it is absolutely the commandment of God: 'If a false witness rise up, you shall cause him to be brought before the judges; if he be found false, he shall have

CHAP. VI.

the punishment the accused should have had.' It is very easy for my Lord to accuse me, and it may be a means to excuse himself." *Popham, C. J.:* "There must not such gap be opened for the destruction of the King as there would be if we should grant this. You plead hard for yourself, but the laws plead as hard for the King." *Raleigh:* "The King desires nothing but the knowledge of the truth, and would have no advantage taken by severity of the law. If ever we had a gracious King, now we have; I hope, as he is, so are his ministers. If there be a trial in an action for a matter but of five marks value, a witness must be produced and sworn. Good my Lord, let my accuser come face to face, and see if he will call God to witness for the truth of what he has alleged against me." *Popham, C. J.:* "You have no law for it."

Practice of putting questions to the prisoner in criminal trials.

In examining the mode in which criminal trials were then conducted, it is likewise curious to observe that the practice of interrogating the accused, which our neighbors the French still follow and praise, prevailed in England. Many questions were put to Sir Walter Raleigh on this occasion, in the hope of entrapping him. On account of his great acuteness, they were rather of service to him; but they show how unequally this mode of striving to get at truth must operate, and how easily it may be abused. The verdict of GUILTY being recorded, Lord Chief Justice Popham said,—

Popham's address to Raleigh after the verdict.

"I thought I should never have seen this day, Sir Walter, to have stood in this place to give sentence of death against you; because I thought it impossible that one of so great parts should have fallen so grievously. God hath bestowed on you many benefits. You had been a man fit and able to have served the King in good place. It is best for a man not to seek to climb too high, lest he fall; nor yet to creep too low, lest he be trodden on. It was the poesy of the wisest and greatest councillor in our time in England, '*In medio spatio mediocria firma locantur.*'[1] You have been taken for a wise

[1] ["The safest stations lie in a middle course."]—*Poesy*, or motto, of Lord Keeper Bacon.

man, and so have shown wit enough this day. Two vices have lodged chiefly in you; one is an eager ambition, the other corrupt covetousness. Your conceit of not confessing anything is very inhuman and wicked. My Lord of Essex, that noble Earl that is gone, who, if he had not been carried away by others, had lived in honor to this day among us, confessed his offences, and obtained mercy of the Lord; for I am verily persuaded in my heart he died a worthy servant of God. This world is the time of confessing, that we may be absolved at the day of judgment. You have no just matter of complaint that you had not your accuser come face to face; for such an one is easily brought to retract when he seeth there is no hope of his own life. It is dangerous that any traitors should have access to or conference with one another; when they see themselves must die, they will think it best to have their fellow live, that he may commit the like treason again, and so in some sort seek revenge. Your case being thus, let it not grieve you if I speak a little out of zeal and love to your good. You have been taxed by the world with the defence of the most heathenish and blasphemous opinions, which I list not to repeat, because Christian ears cannot endure to hear them, nor the authors and maintainers of them be suffered to live in any Christian commonwealth. You shall do well before you go out of the world to give satisfaction therein, and not to die with these imputations upon you. Let not any devil persuade you to think there is no eternity in heaven; for, if you think thus, you shall find eternity in hell fire."

Sentence of death was then pronounced. But, notwithstanding Raleigh's unpopularity from the part he had taken against the Earl of Essex, the hard treatment he had experienced on his trial excited such general sympathy in his favor, that his life was spared for the present; and the sad task was reserved to another Chief Justice, after the lapse of many years, to award that the sentence should be carried into execution.[1]

The execution of the death sentence stayed.

Guy Fawkes,[2] and his associates implicated in the

[1] 2 St. Tr. 1–62.

[2] Guy or Guido Fawkes, one of the chief conspirators in the Gunpowder Plot in the reign of James I., was a Catholic, and a native of Yorkshire. In 1604, Robert Catesby, Thomas Percy, Guy Fawkes, and others con-

CHAP. VI.

Jan. 27, 1606. The Gunpowder Plot.

Gunpowder Plot, were tried before Popham, but there was such clear evidence against them, that no question of law arose during the trial, and we are merely told that "the Lord Chief Justice of England,—after a grave and prudent relation and defence of the laws made by Queen Elizabeth against recusants, priests, and receivers of priests, together with the several occasions, progresses, and reasons of the same, and having plainly demonstrated and proved that they were all necessary, *mild, equal, and moderate*, and to be justified to all the world,—pronounced judgment."[1]

March 28, 1606. Trial of Garnet, Superior of the Jesuits.

Popham's last appearance in a case of public interest was upon the trial of Garnet,[2] the Superior of the Jesuits. Against him the evidence was very slender, and the Chief Justice was obliged to eke it out by unwary answers to dextrously-framed interrogatories. He succeeded so far as to make the prisoner confess that he was aware of the plot from communications made to him in the confessional; so that, in point of

spired to blow up, with gunpowder, the House of Parliament and kill the King, with the Lords and Commons, their motive being a fanatical zeal against the Protestants. They hired a vault under the House of Lords, placed in it thirty-six barrels of gunpowder, and arranged that Fawkes should explode it on the 5th of November, 1605. Before that time arrived, Lord Mounteagle, a Catholic peer, received an anonymous letter advising him to absent himself from Parliament and intimating that a great catastrophe was impending over that body. This excited the suspicion of the King and others, who searched the cellars in the vicinity and found Fawkes with matches and a dark lantern about midnight, November 4. He was tried and executed in January, 1606.—*Thomas' Biog. Dict.*

[1] 2 St. Tr. 194.

[2] Henry Garnet, a Jesuit, born in Nottinghamshire, 1555. From Winchester School he removed to New College, Oxford; but having decided on professing the Catholic religion he went to Spain, and next to Rome, where he joined the Society of Jesus. He became professor of philosophy and Hebrew in the Italian college, where also he occasionally assisted Clavius in lecturing on mathematics. In 1586 he returned to England in company with Father Robert Southwell, and became Superior of his order in that country. After residing there several years without being molested, he became acquainted—but only in the confessional—with the design of the Gunpowder Plot conspirators. For this he was tried, and executed May 3, 1606.—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

law, he was guilty of misprision of treason, by not giving information of what he had so learned: but Garnet still firmly denied ever having taken any part in the devising of the plot, or having in any manner encouraged it. At last, he said very passionately,— CHAP VI.

"My Lord, I would to God I had never known of the Powder Treason; but, as He is my judge, I would have stopped it if I could." *Popham, C. J.:* "Garnet, you are Superior of the Jesuits; and if you forbid, must not the rest obey? Was not Greenwell with you half an hour at Sir Everard Digby's[1] house when you heard of the discovery of your treason? And did you not there confer and debate the matter together? Did you not stir him up to go to the rebels and encourage them? Yet you seek to color all this: but that is a mere shift in you. Catesby[2] was never far from you, and, by many apparent proofs and evident presumptions, you were in every particular of this action, and directed and commanded the actors; nay, I think verily you were the chief that moved it." *Garnet:* "No, my Lord, I did not." The report adds, "Then it was exceedingly well urged by my Lord Chief Justice how he writ his letters for Winter, Fawkes, and Catesby, principal actors in this matchless treason, and how he kept the two bulls to prejudice the King, and to do other mischief in the realm; and how he afterwards burnt them when he saw the King peaceably come in, there being no hope to do any good at that time." Dialogue during the trial.

This was only an interlocutory dialogue during the trial, and no proof had been given of the facts to

[1] Sir Everard Digby was born 1581. He became a convert to the Catholic Church; but, notwithstanding this, he was made a knight at the accession of James I. He was drawn into the Gunpowder Plot, towards which he contributed 1,500*l.*; and being taken in arms when the treason was detected, he was executed Jan. 30, 1605-6.—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

[2] Robert Catesby, an English Roman Catholic and conspirator, who originated the Gunpowder Plot of 1605. He is called "a gentleman of good parts" by Hume, who says he "first thought of a most extraordinary method of revenge, and opened his intention to Percy." When Fawkes was arrested, Catesby and his accomplices hurried down to Warwickshire, where they resolved to make a desperate stand. Catesby was killed in the act of resisting the officers who came to arrest him, in November, 1605.—*Thomas' Biog. Dict.*

CHAP. VI

which the Judge, who was supposed to be counsel for the prisoner, had referred. His summing-up to the jury is not reported; and we are only told that, the verdict of GUILTY being found, "Then the Lord Chief Justice, making a pithy preamble of all the apparent proofs and presumptions of his guiltiness, gave judgment that he should be drawn, hanged, and quartered."[1] There was a strong temptation to all who desired Court favor to show extraordinary zeal on this occasion, for the fate of Garnet had excited deep interest all over Europe,—and the King himself, a large number of the nobility, and many members of the House of Commons, were present at the trial.

The verdict.

The deep interest excited by the fate of Garnet.

Death of Popham.

Popham, who had hitherto retained wonderful vigor, both of body and mind, was soon after struck by a mortal disease, and on the 1st of June, 1607, he expired, in the seventy-second year of his age. According to the directions left in his will, he was buried at Wellington, the place of his nativity.

I believe that no charge could justly be made against his purity as a judge; yet, from the recollection of his early history, some suspicion always hung about him, and stories, probably quite groundless, were circulated to his disadvantage. Of these, we have a specimen in the manner in which he was said to have become the owner of Littlecote Hall, which in a subsequent age was the headquarters of the Prince of Orange,[2] and which Macaulay describes as "a manor-house, renowned down to our own times, not more on account of its venerable architecture and furniture, than on account of a horrible and mysterious crime which was perpetrated there in the days of the

[1] 2 St. Tr. 217-358.

[2] The Prince of Orange, on his progress from Salisbury to London, after the conference with King James's commissioners at Hungerford, Dec. 8, 1688, retired to Littlecote, where the following day, Sunday, Dec. 9, the commissioners dined.—*Murray's Wiltshire*, p. 64.

Tudors."[1] The earliest narrative that I find of this atrocity, and of Lord Chief Justice Popham's connection with it, is by Aubrey:

Legend respecting the manner in which he acquired the manor of Littlecote.

"Sir Richard Dayrell, of Littlecot, in com. Wilts, having got his lady's waiting woman with child, when her travell came sent a servant with a horse for a midwife, whom he was to bring hoodwinked. She was brought, and layd the woman; but as soon as the child was borne, she saw the knight take the child and murther it, and burn it in the fire in the chamber. She having done her businesse was extraordinarily rewarded for her paines, and went blindfold away. This horrid action did much run in her mind, and she had a desire to discover it, but knew not where 'twas. She considered with herself the time she was riding, and how many miles she might have rode at that rate in that time, and that it must be some great person's house, for the roome was twelve foot high; and she should know the chamber if she sawe it. She went to a justice of peace, and search was made. The very

[1] History of England, ii. 542. In the notes to the 5th canto of ROKEBY there is an interesting account of the appearance which the place now presents, and which is probably exactly the same which it presented when it was occupied by Lord Chief Justice Popham: "Littlecote House stands in a low and lonely situation. It is an irregular building of great antiquity, and was probably erected about the time of the termination of feudal warfare, when defence came no longer to be an object in a country mansion. Many circumstances, however, in the interior of the house, seem appropriate to feudal times. The hall is very spacious, floored with stones, and lighted by large transom windows. Its walls are hung with old military accoutrements that have long been left a prey to rust. At one end of the hall is a range of coats of mail and helmets, and there is on every side abundance of old-fashioned pistols and guns, many of them with matchlocks. Immediately below the cornice hangs a row of leathern jerkins, made in the form of a shirt, supposed to have been worn as armor by the vassals. A large oak table, reaching nearly from one end of the room to the other, might have feasted the whole neighborhood, and an appendage to one end of it made it answer at other times for the old game of shuffle-board. The rest of the furniture is in a suitable style, *particularly an armchair of cumbrous workmanship, constructed of wood, with a high back and triangular seat, said to have been used by Judge Popham in the reign of Elizabeth.* In one of the bedchambers, which you pass in going to the long gallery hung with portraits in the Spanish dresses of the 16th century, is a bedstead with blue furniture, which time has now made dingy and threadbare, and in the bottom of one of the bed curtains you are shown a place where a small piece has been cut out and sewn in again, serving to identify the same with the horrible story belonging to it."

CHAP. VI.

chamber found. The knight was brought to his tryall; and, to be short, this Judge had this noble house, parke, and manor, and (I thinke) more, for a bribe to save his life. Sir John Popham gave sentence according to lawe, but being a great person and a favourite he procured a *noli*[1] *prosequi*."[2]

[1] "In Law these words denote that a plaintiff or attorney for the public withdraws a suit."— *Webster's Dict.* See American and English Encyclopædia of Law, vol. 16.

[2] Aubrey, iii. 493. Subsequent writers have no better ground to proceed upon, and it would be unfair to load the memory of a judge with the obloquy of so great a crime upon such unsatisfactory testimony. Walter Scott publishes the following version of the story, "exactly as told in the country": "It was on a dark night in the month of November, that an old midwife sat musing by her cottage fireside, when on a sudden she was startled by a loud knocking at the door. On opening it she found a horseman, who told her that her assistance was required immediately by a person of rank, and that she should be handsomely rewarded, but that there were reasons for keeping the affair a strict secret, and therefore she must submit to be blindfolded, and to be conducted in that condition to the bedchamber of the lady. With some hesitation the midwife consented; the horseman bound her eyes, and placed her on a pillion behind him. After proceeding in silence for many miles, through rough and dirty lanes, they stopped, and the midwife was led into a house, which, from the length of her walk through the apartments, as well as the sounds about her, she discovered to be the seat of wealth and power. When the bandage was removed from her eyes, she found herself in a bedchamber, in which were the lady on whose account she had been sent for, and a man of a haughty and ferocious aspect. The lady was delivered of a fine boy. Immediately, the man commanded the midwife to give him the child, and, catching it from her, he hurried across the room and threw it on the back of the fire that was blazing in the chimney. The child, however, was strong, and by its struggles rolled itself off upon the hearth, when the ruffian again seized it with fury, and, in spite of the intercession of the midwife, and the more piteous entreaties of the mother, thrust it under the grate, and, raking the live coals upon it, soon put an end to its life. The midwife, after spending some time in affording all the relief in her power to the wretched mother, was told that she must be gone. Her former conductor appeared, who again bound her eyes, and conveyed her behind him to her own home; he then paid her handsomely and departed. The midwife was strongly agitated by the horrors of the preceding night, and she immediately made a deposition of the fact before a magistrate. Two circumstances afforded hopes of detecting the house in which the crime had been committed: one was, that the midwife, as she sat by the bedside, had, with a view to discover the place, cut out a piece of the bed curtain and sewn it in again; the other was, that, as she descended the staircase, she had counted the steps. Some suspicion fell upon one Darrell, at that time the proprietor of Littlecote House and the domain around it. The house was examined and identified by the midwife, and Darrell was tried at Salisbury for the murder. *By corrupting the judge he escaped the*

CHAP. VI

Popham's portrait represented him as "a hudge, heavy, ugly man;" and I am afraid he would not appear to great advantage in a sketch of his moral qualities, which, lest I should do him injustice, I shall not attempt. In fairness, however, I ought to mention that he was much commended in his own time for the number of thieves and robbers he convicted and executed; and it was observed that, "if he was the death of a few scores of such gentry, he preserved the lives and livelihoods of more thousands of travellers, who owed their safety to this Judge's severity."[1]

For what he was commended.

His Reports.

Popham is to be reckoned among the English Judges who were authors, having compiled a volume of Reports of his decisions while he was Chief Justice of the King's Bench, beginning in the 34th & 35th of Elizabeth. Being originally in French, an English translation of them was published in the year 1682, but they are wretchedly ill done, and they are not considered of authority. We should have been much

sentence of the law, but broke his neck by a fall from his horse in hunting, in a few months after. The place where this happened is still known by the name of 'Darrell's stile,' and is dreaded by the peasant whom the shades of evening have overtaken on his way."

Walter Scott founds a beautiful ballad on this legend, but—instead of a midwife, skilled in the obstetric art, to assist the lady—introduces a more poetical character, "a friar of orders gray," to shrive her, and he sacrifices the mother instead of the child,—without saying a word of the trial before Popham. I copy the last three stanzas:

"The shrift is done, the friar is gone
Blindfolded as he came:
Next morning all in Littlecote Hall
Were weeping for their dame.

"Wild Darrell is an altered man;
The village crones can tell,
He looks pale as clay, and strives to pray,
If he hears the convent bell.

"If prince or peer cross Darrell's way,
He'll beard him in his pride—
If he meet a friar of orders gray,
He droops and turns aside."

[1] Aubrey, iii. 498.

CHAP. VI.

better pleased if he had given us an account of his exploits when he was chief of a band of freebooters.

His fortune.

He left behind him the greatest estate that ever had been amassed by any lawyer—some said as much as 10,000*l.* a year; but as it was not supposed to be all honestly come by, and he was reported even to have begun to save money when "the road did him justice," there was a prophecy that it would not prosper, and that "what was got over the Devil's back would be spent under his belly." Accordingly, we have the following account of his son John: "He was the greatest house-keeper in England; would have at Littlecote four or five or more lords at a time. His wife, who had been worth to him 6,000*l.*, was as vaine as he, and sayd 'that she had brought such an estate, and she scorned but she would live as high as he did;' and in her husband's absence would have all the woemen of the countrey thither, and feaste them, and make them drunke, as she would be herselfe. They both dyed by excesse and by luxury; and by cosenage of their servants, when he dyed, there was a hundred thousand pounds in debt. This was his epitaph,—

His descendants.

His epitaph.

"Here lies he who not long since
Kept a table like a prince,
Till Death came and tooke awaye,
Then ask't the old man *What's to pay?*"[1]

The family retained a remnant of the Chief Justice's possessions at Littlecote for two or three generations, and then became extinct.

Sir Thomas Fleming, the rival of Bacon.

The next Chief Justice of England affords a striking proof that though dulness be often considered an aptitude for high office, the elevation which it procures will not confer lasting fame. The greatest part of my readers never before read or heard of the name

[1] Aubrey, iii. 494.

of THOMAS FLEMING; yet, starting in the profession of the law with FRANCIS BACON, he was not only preferred to him by attorneys, but by prime ministers, and he had the highest professional honors showered upon him while the immortal philosopher, orator, and fine writer continued to languish at the bar without any advancement, notwithstanding all his merits and all his intrigues. But Fleming had superior good fortune, and enjoyed temporary consequence, because he was a *mere lawyer*,—because he harbored no ideas or aspirations beyond the routine of Westminster Hall,—because he did not mortify the vanity of the witty, or alarm the jealousy of the ambitious.

A mere lawyer.

He was the younger son of a gentleman of small estate in the Isle of Wight. I do not find any account of his early education, and very little interest can now be felt respecting it, although we catch so eagerly at any trait of the boyhood of his rival, whom he despised.[1] Soon after he was called to the bar, by unwearied drudgery he got into considerable practice; and it was remarked that he always tried how much labor he could bestow upon every case intrusted to him, while his more lively competitors tried with how little labor they could creditably perform their duty.[2]

His laboriousness.

A.D. 1594. He is made Solicitor General in preference to Lord Bacon.

In the end of the year 1594 he was called to the degree of Sergeant, along with eight others, and was thought to be the most deeply versed in the law of real actions of the whole batch. It happened that,

[1] He probably had not an academical education, as on the 7th of August, 1613, it was ordered by the convocation of the University of Oxford "that Sir Thomas Flemming, Lord Chief Justice of England, be created M. of A."—2 *Wood's Ath. Ox.* 355.

[2] He appears, however, to have been long unknown beyond the precincts of Westminster Hall. In Fleetewood's Diary, cited in Wright's Queen Elizabeth, ii. 418, there is the following entry under date 10th August, 1592: "This day Mr. Recorder surrendered his office; the lot is now to be cast between Mr. Serjeant Druce and *one Mr. Flemmynge of Lincoln's Inn*."

CHAP. VI.

soon after, there was a vacancy in the office of Solicitor General, on the promotion of Sir Edward Coke to be Attorney General. Bacon[1] moved heaven and earth that he himself might succeed to it. He wrote to his uncle, Lord Treasurer Burleigh, saying, "I hope you will think I am no unlikely piece of wood to shape you a true servant of." He wrote to the Queen Elizabeth, saying, "I affect myself to a place of my profession, such as I do see divers younger in proceeding to myself, and men of no great note, do without blame aspire unto; but if your Majesty like others better, I shall, with the Lacedimonian, be glad that there is such choice of abler men than myself." He accompanied this letter with a valuable jewel, to show off her beauty. He did what he thought would be still more serviceable, and, indeed, conclusive; he prevailed upon the young Earl of Essex, then in the highest favor with the aged Queen, earnestly to press his suit. But the appointment was left with the Lord Treasurer, and he decided immediately against his nephew, who was reported to be no lawyer, from giving up his time to profane learning,—who had lately made an indiscreet, although very eloquent, speech in the House of Commons,—and who, if promoted, might be a dangerous rival to his cousin, Robert Cecil, then entering public life, and destined by his sire to be prime minister. The cunning old fox then inquired who would be a competent person to do the Queen's business in her courts, and would give no uneasiness elsewhere; and he was told by several black-letter[2] Judges whom he consulted, that "Sergeant Fleming was the man for him." After the office had been kept vacant by these intrigues above a year, Sergeant

Bacon's efforts to obtain the appointment.

But the Lord Treasurer decides against him.

[1] See Lives of the Lord Chancellors.

[2] *Black-letter* was a term applied to the old English or modern Gothic letter, in which the early English manuscripts were written, and the first English books were printed.—*Webster's Dict.*

GEORGE CROKE.

After an Old Print.

CHAP. VI.

A.D. 1595. Bacon's anguish at Fleming's appointment.

Fleming was actually appointed. Bacon's anguish was exasperated by comparing himself with the new Solicitor; and, in writing to Essex, after enumerating his own pretensions, he says, "when I add hereunto the obscureness and many exceptions to my competitor, I cannot but conclude with myself that no man ever had a more exquisite disgrace." He resolved at first to shut himself up for the rest of his days in a cloister at Cambridge. A soothing message from the Queen induced him to remain at the bar; but he had the mortification to see the man whom he utterly despised much higher in the law than himself, during the remainder of this, and a considerable part of the succeeding, reign.

Fleming, immediately upon his promotion, gave up his sergeantship, and practised in the Court of Queen's Bench.[1] He was found very useful in doing the official business, and gave entire satisfaction to his employers.

Fleming not elected to the Speakership.

At the calling of a new parliament, in the autumn of 1601, he was returned to the House of Commons for a Cornish borough; and, according to the usual practice at that time, he ought, as Solicitor General, to have been elected Speaker; but his manner was too "lawyer-like and ungenteel" for the chair, and Sergeant Croke, who was more presentable, was substituted for him.

He breaks down in the House of Commons, Nov. 20, 1601.

He opened his mouth in the House only once, and then he broke down. This was in the great debate on the grievance of monopolies. He undertook to defend the system of granting to individuals the exclusive right of dealing in particular commodities; but when he had described the manner in which patents passed through the different offices before the Great Seal is

[1] *Tho. Fleming* a statu et gradu servientis ad legem exoneratus. T. R. apud *Westm.* 5 Nov. Pat. 37 Eliz. p. 9.—*Dugd. Chron. Ser.* 99.

CHAP. VI.

put to them, he lost his recollection, and resumed his seat.

A.D. 1602.

Bacon, now member for Middlesex, to show what a valuable Solicitor General the Government had lost, made a very gallant speech, in which he maintained that "the Queen, as she is our sovereign, hath both an enlarging and a restraining power: for, by her prerogative she may, 1st, set at liberty things restrained by statute law or otherwise; and, 2dly, by her prerogative she may restrain things which be at liberty." He concluded by expressing the utmost horror of introducing any bill to meddle with the powers of the Crown upon the subject, and protesting that "the only lawful course was to leave it to her Majesty of her own free will to correct any hardships, if any had arisen in the exercise of her just rights as the arbitress of trade and commerce in the realm."

This pleased her exceedingly, and even softened her ministers, insomuch that a promise was given to promote Fleming as soon as possible, and to appoint Bacon in his place. In those days there never existed the remotest notion of dismissing an Attorney or Solicitor General, any more than a Judge; for, though they all alike held *during pleasure*, till the accession of the house of Stuart the tenure of all of them was practically secure. An attempt was made to induce Fleming to accept the appointment of Queen's Sergeant, which would have given him precedence over the Attorney General; but this failed, for he would thereby have been considered as put upon the shelf, instead of being on the highway to promotion.

He refuses to resign the office of Solicitor General in favor of Bacon.

April 2, 1603.

Elizabeth died, leaving Bacon with no higher rank than that of Queen's Counsel; and, on the accession of James I., Fleming was reappointed Solicitor General.

The event justified his firmness in resisting the at-

CHAP. VI.

tempt to shelve him, for in the following year, on the death of Sir William Peryam, he was appointed Chief Baron of the Exchequer. While he held this office, he sat along with Lord Chief Justice Popham on the trial of Guy Fawkes and the Gunpowder conspirators; but he followed the useful advice for subordinate judges on such an occasion—"to look wise, and to say nothing."

He is made Chief Baron of the Exchequer by James I.

His most memorable judgment as Chief Baron was in what is called "The Great Case of Impositions." This was, in truth, fully as important as Hampden's Case of Ship-money, but did not acquire such celebrity in history, because it was long acquiesced in, to the destruction of public liberty, whereas the other immediately produced the civil war. After an act of parliament had passed at the commencement of James's reign, by which an import duty of *2s. 6d. per cwt.* was imposed upon currants, he by his own authority laid on an additional duty of *7s. 6d.*, making *10s. per cwt.* Bates, a Levant merchant, who had imported a cargo of currants from Venice, very readily paid the parliamentary duty of *2s. 6d.* upon it, but refused to pay more; thereupon the Attorney General filed an information in the Court of Exchequer, to compel him to pay the additional duty of *7s. 6d.*; so the question arose, whether he was by law compellable to do so? After arguments at the bar which lasted many days,—

"The Great Case of Impositions." A.D. 1604.

The plaintiff's grievance stated.

Fleming, C. B., said: "The defendant's plea in this case is without precedent or example, for he alleges that the imposition which the King has laid is 'indebitè, injustè et contrà leges Angliæ imposita, and, therefore, he refused to pay it.' *The King*, as is commonly said in our books, *cannot do wrong;* and if the King seize any land without cause, I ought to sue to him in humble manner (*humillime supplicavit*, etc.), and not in terms of opposition. The matter of the plea first regards the prerogative, and to derogate from that is a part most undutiful in any subject. Next it concerns the transport of

Fleming's fallacious reasoning.

CHAP. VI.

Fleming's fallacious reasoning, continued.

commodities into and out of the realm, the due regulation of which is left to the King for the public good. The imposition is properly upon currants and not upon the defendant, for upon him no imposition shall be but by parliament. The things are currants, a foreign commodity. The King may restrain the person of a subject in leaving or coming into the realm, and, *à fortiori*,[1] may impose conditions on the importation or exportation of his goods. To the King is committed the government of the realm, and Bracton says, 'that for his discharge of his office God hath given him the power to govern.' This power is double—ordinary, and absolute. The ordinary is for the profit of particular subjects—the determination of civil justice; this is nominated by civilians *jus privatum*,[2] and it cannot be changed without parliament. The absolute power of the King is applied for the general benefit of the people; it is most properly named *policy*, and it varieth with the time, according to the wisdom of the King, for the common good. If this imposition is matter of state, it is to be ruled by the rules of *policy*, and the King hath done well, instead of 'unduly, unjustly, and contrary to the laws of England.' All commerce and dealings with foreigners, like war and peace and public treaties, are regulated and determined by the absolute power of the King. No importation or exportation can be but at the King's ports. They are his gates, which he may open or close when and on what conditions he pleases. He guards them with bulwarks and fortresses, and he protects ships coming hither from pirates at sea; and if his subjects are wronged by foreign princes, he sees that they are righted. Ought he not, then, by the customs he imposes, to enable himself to perform these duties? The impost to the merchant is nothing, for those who wish for his commodities must buy them subject to the charge; and, in most cases, it shall be paid by the foreign grower and not by the English consumer. As to the argument that the currants are *victual*, they are rather a delicacy, and are no more necessary than wine, on which the King lays what customs seemeth him good. For the amount of the imposition it is not unreasonable, seeing that it is only four times as much as it was before. The wisdom and providence of the King must not be disputed by the subject; by intendment they cannot be severed

[1] "With stronger reason." [2] "Civil law" or "justice."

from his person. And to argue *a posse ad actum*,[1] because by his power he may do ill, is no argument to be used in this place. If it be objected that no reason is assigned for the rise, I answer it is not reasonable that the King should express the cause and consideration of his actions; these are *arcana regis*,[2] and it is for the benefit of every subject that the King's treasure should be increased."

He then at enormous length went over all the authorities and acts of parliament, contending that they all prove the King's power to lay what taxes he pleases on goods imported, and he concluded by giving judgment for the Crown.[3]

He gives judgment for the Crown.

Historians take no notice of this decision, although it might have influenced the destinies of the country much more than many of the battles and sieges with which they fill their pages. Had our foreign commerce then approached its present magnitude, parliaments would never more have met in England,—duties on tea, sugar, timber, tobacco, and corn, imposed by royal proclamation, being sufficient to fill the exchequer,—and the experiment of ship-money would never have been necessary. The Chief Baron most certainly misquotes, misrepresents, and mystifies exceedingly, but, however fallacious his reasoning, the judgment ought not to be passed over in silence by those who pretend to narrate our annals, for it was pronounced by a court of competent jurisdiction, and it was acted upon for years as settling the law and constitution of the country.

The great importance of this decision.

King James declared that Chief Baron Fleming was a judge to his heart's content. He had been somewhat afraid when he came to England that he might hear such unpalatable doctrines as had excited his indignation in Buchanan's treatise "De jure regni apud Scotis," and he expressed great joy in the solemn

King James declares Fleming a judge to his heart's content.

[1] "From power to the deed." [2] "The secrets of the King."

[3] 2 St. Tr. 371–394.

CHAP. VI.

recognition that he was an absolute sovereign. Our indignation should be diverted from him and his unfortunate son, to the base sycophants, legal and ecclesiastical, who misled them.

Fleming appointed Chief Justice of the King's Bench. June 25, 1607.

On the death of Popham, no one was thought so fit to succeed him as Fleming, of whom it was always said that "*though slow, he was sure;*" and he became Chief Justice of England the very same day on which Francis Bacon mounted the first step of the political ladder, receiving the comparatively humble appointment of Solicitor General.[1]

Lord Chief Justice Fleming remained at the head of the common law rather more than six years. During that time, the only case of general interest which arose in Westminster Hall was that of the POSTNATI. As might be expected, to please the King he joined cordially in what I consider the illegal decision, that persons born in Scotland after the accession of James to the throne of England were entitled to all the privileges of natural-born subjects in England, although it was allowed that Scotland was an entirely separate and independent kingdom. Luckily, the question is never likely again to arise since the severance of the crown of Hanover from that of Great Britain; but if it should, I do not think that Calvin's case could by any means be considered a conclusive authority, being founded upon such reasoning as that "if our King conquer a Christian country, its laws remain till duly altered; whereas if he conquer an infidel country, the laws are *ipso facto*[2] extinct, and he may massacre all the inhabitants."[3]

His judgment in the case of the Postnati.

His decision not conclusive authority.

Lord Chief Justice Fleming took the lead in the prosecution of the Countess of Shrewsbury, before the Privy Council, on the charge of having refused to be

[1] Dugd. Chron. Ser. 102. [2] "In fact" or "by the fact."
[3] 2 St. Tr. 559-768.

CHAP. IV.

Prosecution of the Countess of Shrewsbury.

examined respecting the part she had acted in bringing about a clandestine marriage in the Tower of London, between the Lady Arabella Stuart, the King's cousin, and Sir William Somerset, afterwards Duke of Somerset. He laid it down for law, that "it was a high misdemeanor to marry, or to connive at the marriage of, any relation of the King without his consent, and that the Countess's refusal to be examined was 'a contempt of the King, his crown and dignity, which, if it were to go unpunished, might lead to many dangerous enterprises against the state.' He therefore gave it as his opinion, that she should be fined 10,000*l.*, and confined during the King's pleasure."[1]

Fleming eclipsed by the Chief Justice of the Common Pleas.

While this poor creature presided in the King's Bench, he was no doubt told by his officers and dependants that he was the greatest Chief Justice that had appeared there since the days of Gascoigne and Fortescue; but he was considered a very small man by all the rest of the world, and he was completely eclipsed by Sir Edward Coke, who at the same time was Chief Justice of the Common Pleas, and who, to a much more vigorous intellect and deeper learning, added respect for constitutional liberty and resolution at every hazard to maintain judicial independence. From the growing resistance in the nation to the absolute maxims of government professed by the King and sanctioned by almost all his Judges, there was a general desire that the only one who stood up for law against prerogative should be placed in a position which might give greater weight to his efforts on the popular side; but of this there seemed no prospect, for the subservient Fleming was still a young man, and likely to continue many years the tool of the Government.

In the midst of these gloomy anticipations, on the

[1] 2 St. Tr. 765–778.

CHAP. VI.

Death of Chief Justice Fleming. A.D. 1613.

15th day of October, 1613, the joyful news was spread of his sudden death. I do not know, and I have taken no pains to ascertain, where he was buried, or whether he left any descendants. In private life he is said to have been virtuous and amiable, and the discredit of his incompetency in high office ought to be imputed to those who placed him there, instead of allowing him to prose on as a drowsy Sergeant at the bar of the Common Pleas, the position for which nature had intended him.[1] He dwindled the more rapidly into insignificance from the splendor of his immediate successor.

[1] I have since learned (but it is not worth while to alter the text) that he was buried at Stoneham in Hampshire ; that his will, dated 21st July, 1610, was proved 30th October, 1613 ; that his eldest son intermarried with a daughter of Sir Henry Cromwell, and that their descendants remained seated at Stoneham for some generations. The Chief Justice appears to have had a residence in the Isle of Wight. The name of "Sir Thomas Fleming, L. C. J. of England," appears in the list of the members of a *Bowling-Green Club* established in the island, who dined together twice a week. (Worsley's Isle of Wight, p. 223.)

CHAPTER VII.

LIFE OF LORD CHIEF JUSTICE SIR EDWARD COKE, FROM HIS BIRTH TILL HE WAS MADE CHIEF JUSTICE OF THE COURT OF COMMON PLEAS.

CHAP. VII.

Merits of Sir Edward Coke.

WE now come to him who was pronounced by his contemporaries, and is still considered, the greatest oracle of our municipal jurisprudence,—who afforded a bright example of judicial independence,—and to whom we are indebted for one of the main pillars of our free constitution. Unfortunately, his mind was never opened to the contemplations of philosophy; he had no genuine taste for elegant literature; and his disposition was selfish, overbearing, and arrogant.

Why justice has not been done them.

From his odious defects, justice has hardly been done to his merits. Shocked by his narrow-minded reasoning, disgusted by his utter contempt for method and for style in his compositions, and sympathizing with the individuals whom he insulted, we are apt to forget that "without Sir Edward Coke the law by this time had been like a ship without ballast;"[1] that when all the other Judges basely succumbed to the mandate of a sovereign who wished to introduce despotism under the forms of juridical procedure, he did his duty at the sacrifice of his office; and that, in spite of the blandishments, the craft, and the violence of the Court of Charles I., he framed and he carried the PETITION OF RIGHT,[2] which contained an ample recognition of

The framer of the Petition of Right.

[1] Words of Lord Bacon.

[2] The Petition of Right (1628) asserted: 1. No freeman should be obliged to give any gift, loan, benevolence, or tax, without common consent by act of parliament; 2. No freeman should be imprisoned contrary

CHAP. VII.

the liberties of Englishmen—which bore living witness against the lawless tyranny of the approaching government without parliaments—which was appealed to with such success when parliaments were resumed, and which, at the Revolution in 1688, was made the basis of the happy settlement then permanently established. It shall be my object in this memoir fairly to delineate his career and to estimate his character.

His family.

SIR EDWARD COKE, like most of my Chief Justices, was of a good family and respectable connections. The early Chancellors, being taken from the Church, were not unfrequently of low origin; but to start in the profession of the law required a long and expensive education, which only the higher gentry could afford for their sons. The Cokes had been settled for many generations in the county of Norfolk. As the name does not correspond very aptly with the notion of their having come over with the Conqueror, it has

His name.

been derived from the British word "Cock," or "Coke," a CHIEF; but, like "Butler," "Taylor," and other names now ennobled, it much more probably took its origin from the occupation of the founder of the race at the period when surnames were first adopted in England. Even in the reigns of Elizabeth and James I., Sir Edward's name was frequently spelt Cook. Lady Hatton, his second wife, who would not assume it, adopted this spelling in writing to him, and according to this spelling it has invariably been pronounced.[1] Camden has traced the pedigree of the family to William Coke of Doddington, in Norfolk, in the reign of King John. They had risen to consider-

to the laws of the land; 3. That soldiers and sailors should not be billeted in private houses; 4. That commissions to punish soldiers and sailors by martial law should be revoked and no more issued.—*Low and Pulling's Dict. of Eng. Hist.*

[1] It is amusing to observe the efforts made to disguise the names of trades in proper names, by changing *i* into *y*, by adding a final *e*, and by doubling consonants

able distinction under Edward III., when Sir Thomas Coke was made Seneschal of Gascoigne. From him, in the right male line, was descended Robert Coke, the father of Sir Edward. This representative of the family, although possessed of good patrimonial property, was bred to the law in Lincoln's Inn, and practised at the bar till his death, having reached the dignity of a bencher. He married Winifred Knightley, daughter and co-heiress of William Knightley, of Margrave Knightley, in Norfolk. With her he had an estate at Mileham, in the same county, on which he constantly resided, unless in term time and during the circuits. CHAP. VII.

Here, on the 1st of February, 1551–2, was born Edward, their only son. He came into the world unexpectedly, at the parlor fireside, before his mother could be carried up to her bed; and, from the extraordinary energy which he then displayed, high expectations were entertained of his future greatness.[1] This infantine exploit he was fond of narrating in his old age. His birth.

His mother taught him to read, and he ascribed to her tuition the habit of steady application which stuck to him through life. In his tenth year he was sent to the free grammar school at Norwich. He had been here but a short time when he had the misfortune to lose his father, who died in Lincoln's Inn, and was buried in the church of St. Andrew, Holborn.[2] His At school.

[1] "Prædicabat miri quidpiam ejus Genitura; Matrem ita subito juxta focum intercipiens et in thalamum cui suberat non moveretur. Locum ipsum ipse mihimet demonstravit."—*Spelm. Icenia sive Norfolciæ*, p. 150.

[2] Sir Edward, when Attorney General, caused a monument to be erected there to his memory, with an inscription beginning thus:

"Monumentum Roberti Coke de Mileham, in Comitatu Norfolciæ Armig. Illustriss. Hospitii Lincolniensis quondam socii Primarii: Qui ex Winefridâ uxore sua, Gul. Knightley filiâ, hos suscepit liberos: Edwardum Coke, filium, Majestatis Regiæ Attornatum General, etc.

"Obiit in Hospitio prædicto 15 die Nov. A.D. 1561, Eliz. 4 Etat. suæ 48."

CHAP. VII.

mother married again; but his education was most successfully continued by Mr. Walter Hawe, the head master of his school, under whom he continued seven years, and made considerable proficiency in classical learning. He was more remarkable, however, for memory than imagination, and he had as much delight in cramming the rules of prosody in doggerel verse as in perusing the finest passages of Virgil.

A.D. 1567. At the University.

He had reached his sixteenth year before he went to the University—a late age, according to the custom of that time; but he afterwards considered it a great advantage that he never "*preproperously*" entered on study or business. On the 25th of October, 1567, he was admitted a pensioner of Trinity College, Cambridge. We learn nothing from himself or others of the course of study which he pursued. Whitgift,[1] afterwards Archbishop of Canterbury, is said to have been his tutor, and he was no doubt well drilled in the dialectics of Aristotle; but he never displays the slightest tincture of science, and, unlike Bacon, who came to the same college a few years after him, and, while still a boy, meditated the reformation of philos-

He is compared with Bacon.

[1] John Whitgift, Archbishop of Canterbury, was born in or about 1533, at Great Grimsby, Lincolnshire. He was educated at Pembroke Hall, Cambridge, where John Bradford was his tutor. In 1555 he was chosen fellow of Peterhouse, and passed through the reign of Mary without molestation. In 1560 he became chaplain to Dr. Coxe, Bishop of Ely, who gave him the rectory of Teversham, Cambridgeshire. In 1563 he was appointed Lady Margaret's professor of divinity; and in 1567 he became master of Pembroke Hall. Soon after this he was made regius professor of divinity, and promoted to the mastership of Trinity College. In 1571 he was advanced to the deanery of Lincoln; and about this time he published an "Answer to the Admonition to the Parliament," which involved him in a controversy with Cartwright. In 1577 he was made Bishop of Worcester and Vice President of the Marches of Wales. On the death of Archbishop Grindal, in 1583, he was raised to the primacy. His firmness irritated the Nonconformists, and the archbishop was ridiculed in a number of pamphlets published under the name of "Martin Marprelate." In 1595 he began the foundation of his hospital at Croydon; and the same year he saved that of Harbledown, in Kent, from being alienated. W. died at Lambeth, Feb. 29, 1603-4.—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

CHAP. VII.

ophy, he seems never to have carried his thoughts beyond existing institutions or modes of thinking, and to have labored only to comprehend and to remember what he was taught. He had a much better opinion than Bacon of the academical discipline which then prevailed, and in after life he always spoke with gratitude and reverence of his ALMA MATER. Yet he left Cambridge without taking a degree. A.D. 157[illegible].

It might have been expected that he would now have resided in his country mansion,—amusing himself with hunting, hawking, and acting as a Justice of the Peace. But the family estates were charged with his mother's jointure and portions for his seven sisters; and, as he was early imbued with ambition and a grasping love of riches, he resolved to follow the profession of the law, in which his father was prospering when prematurely cut off. He therefore transferred himself to London,—not, like other young men of fortune, to finish his education at an Inn of Court, frequenting fencing-schools and theatres,—but with the dogged determination to obtain practice as a barrister, that he might add to his paternal acres, and rise to be a great judge.

A student of law.

He began his legal studies at Clifford's Inn, an "Inn of Chancery," where, for a year, he was initiated in the doctrine of writs and procedure; and on the 24th of April, 1572, he was entered a student of the Inner Temple, where he was to become familiar with the profoundest mysteries of jurisprudence. He now steadily persevered in a laborious course, of which, in our degenerate age, we can scarcely form a conception. Every morning he rose at three,—in the winter season lighting his own fire. He read Bracton, Littleton, the Year-Books, and the folio Abridgments of the Law, till the courts met at eight. He then went by water to Westminster, and heard cases argued till twelve, when pleas

At an Inn of Chancery.

A.D. 1572.

His laborious course at the Inner Temple.

CHAP. VII.

ceased for dinner. After a short repast in the Inner Temple Hall, he attended "readings" or lectures in the afternoon, and then resumed his private studies till five, or supper-time. This meal being ended, the *moots* took place, when difficult questions of law were proposed and discussed,—if the weather was fine, in the garden by the riverside; if it rained, in the covered walks near the Temple Church.[1] Finally, he shut himself up in his chamber, and worked at his common-place book, in which he inserted, under the proper heads, all the legal information he had collected during the day. When nine o'clock struck he retired to bed, that he might have an equal portion of sleep before and after midnight. The Globe[2] and other theatres were rising into repute, but he never would appear at any of them; nor would he indulge in such unprofitable reading as the poems of Lord Surrey or Spenser. When Shakspeare and Ben Jonson came into such fashion, that even "sad apprentices of the law" occasionally assisted in masks, and wrote prologues, he most steadily eschewed all such amusements; and it is supposed that in the whole course of his life he never saw a play acted, or read a play, or was in company with a player.

He eschews plays.

He first evinced his forensic powers when deputed

[1] Temple Church is situated in the rear of Fleet Street, London, one of the four circular churches built in England after the Templars' return from the Crusades, containing many effigies of feudal warriors. In the Temple "Round," as the church was called, lawyers conferred with their clients. —*Familiar Allusions.*

[2] On *Bankside*, the district between the Bishop of Winchester's park and the spot called Paris Garden, were several little amphitheatres for bear-baiting and bull-baiting, with other popular places of amusement. Most important of these was the Globe Theatre, built in the reign of Elizabeth, where James I. granted a patent to Shakspeare and his associates to play plays, "as within theire then usuall house, called the Globe, in the countie of Surry, as elsewhere." The theatre was burnt during a performance of *Henry VIII.* in 1613, and was rebuilt in the following year.—*Hare's Walks in London*, vol. i. p. 459.

CHAP. VII.

by the students to make a representation to the Benchers of the Inner Temple respecting the bad quality of their *commons* in the hall. After laboriously studying the facts and the law of the case, he clearly proved that the cook had broken his engagement, and was liable to be dismissed. This, according to the phraseology of the day, was called "*the Cook's Case*," and he was said "to have argued it with so much quickness of penetration and solidity of judgment, that he gave entire satisfaction to the students, and was much admired by the Bench."[1]

"The Cook's Case."

A.D. 1578. He is called to the bar.

At this time the rules of the Inns of Court required that a student should have been seven years on the books of his society before he could be called to the bar,[2] but our hero's proficiency in his legal studies was so wonderful, that the Benchers of the Inner Temple resolved to make an exception in his favor, and on the 20th of April, 1578, called him to the bar when he was only of six years' standing.

His deep skill in special pleading.

His progress in his profession was almost as rapid as that of Erskine,[3] 200 years afterwards; but, instead

[1] See Lloyd's Worthies, ii. 189.

[2] Formerly the period had been eight years: Dugd. Or. Jur. 159. Now (I think not wisely) it is reduced to three.

[3] Lord Erskine, born in Edinburgh in January, 1750, was the youngest son of Henry David, Earl of Buchan. He received his education at the high schools of Edinburgh and of St. Andrew's. As his father could not afford to defray the expense of preparing him for a learned profession, he entered the navy in 1764 as midshipman. After the lapse of four years, being disappointed in his hope of promotion, he purchased an ensign's commission in the army. In 1770 he married the daughter of Daniel Moore, M.P., with whom he lived in uninterrupted harmony. The same year his regiment was ordered to Minorca, where he spent two years profitably in the systematic study of English literature. Returning home in 1772, he passed several months in London. Rendered restless by the consciousness of grand dormant powers and faculties, he happened one day, in 1774, to enter court, in which Lord Mansfield, the presiding judge, invited him to sit by his side. Thinking that he could make a better speech than any that he heard in that trial, he resolved to study law. In 1775 he was admitted a student of Lincoln's Inn, and in 1776 was matriculated at Cambridge, as the degree of A.M. would shorten the term required to qualify him for the bar,—to which he was called in 1778.

CHAP. VII.

His first brief.

A.D. 1579.

of being the result of popular eloquence, it arose from a display of deep skill in the art of special pleading. He himself has reported with much glee the case in which he held his first brief. Lord Cromwell, son of the famous Cromwell, Earl of Essex, the grand ecclesiastical reformer, had become leader of the Puritans, and wished to abolish all liturgies. He accordingly introduced into his parish church (Norlingham, in Norfolk), where he expected to meet with no opposition, two unlicensed preachers of the Genevese school, who denounced the Book of Common Prayer as impious and superstitious. The Reverend Mr. Denny, the vicar, remonstrating, Lord Cromwell said to him, "Thou art a false varlet, and I like not of thee." Upon which the vicar retorted, "It is no marvel that you like not of me, for you like of men who maintain sedition against the Queen's proceedings." For these words Lord Cromwell brought an action of SCAN.

The first cause in which he was engaged was that of Captain Baillie, tried for a libel on the Earl of Sandwich, a member of the cabinet. The impression made on the audience was such that before he left the court a large number of retainers were presented to him by the attorneys who flocked around him. He had risen at one bound to the highest rank in his profession. In 1781 he made a great and successful plea in defence of Lord George Gordon, indicted for treason, in which logic and passion were combined with consummate art. In 1783, by the influence of the Whig leaders, Erskine obtained a seat in the House of Commons, where his success was not equal to the high expectations that had been raised. In the election of 1784 he lost his seat. In 1789, in the trial of Stockdale, he vindicated the freedom of the press by another triumph of eloquence. In 1790 he was again returned to Parliament for Portsmouth, and continued to support the principles of Fox, even in the crisis of the French Revolution, by which the Whigs were divided. In 1794 Erskine appeared as the champion of public liberty in the state trials, when the ministry attempted to put down the friends of reform by the law of "constructive treason." He spoke seven hours in defence of Hardy, who was acquitted, amidst the rapturous applause of the popular party. Next came the case of John Horne Tooke, which had a similar result. In 1802 he was made chancellor of the Duchy of Cornwall. On the formation of the Grenville ministry, in January, 1806, he became Lord Chancellor and was raised to the peerage as Baron Erskine of Restormel Castle. In consequence of a change in the ministry, he retired from office in 1807. Died in November, 1823.—*Thomas' Biog. Dict.*

MAG. against the vicar; and the *éclat* with which young Edward Coke had just been called to the bar having reached his own county, he was retained as counsel for the defendant. He drew a very ingenious plea of justification, but on demurrer it was held to be insufficient. He then moved in arrest of judgment by reason of a misrecital in the declaration of the statute *De Scandalis Magnatum*,[1] on which the action was founded; and, after a very learned argument, he obtained the judgment of the Court in his favor.[2] CHAP. VII.

Soon after, he was appointed, by the Benchers of the Inner Temple, Reader of Lyon's Inn, an Inn of Chancery under their rule. Here he lectured to students of law and attorneys, with much applause, and "so spread forth his fame, that crowds of clients sued to him for his counsel."[3] A.D. 1580.

He filled this office three years, and before the end of that period he had placed himself at the very head of his profession, by his argument in the most celebrated case that has ever occurred respecting the law of real property in England,—a case now read with far more interest by true conveyancers, not only than MACBETH or COMUS, but than "the Judgment on Ship-money" or "the Trial of the Seven Bishops." Edward Shelley, being seised in tail general, had two sons, Henry and Richard. Henry died, leaving a widow *enceinte*. Edward suffered a recovery to the use of himself for life, remainder to the use of the heirs male of his body and the heirs male of such heirs male, and died before his daughter-in-law was delivered. Richard, the younger son, as the only heir male *in esse*, entered. The widow then gave birth to a son; and the great question was, whether he had a right to A.D. 1583. He is counsel in "Shelley's Case."

[1] In Law, a defamatory speech or writing made or published to the injury of a person of dignity.—*Webster's Dict.*

[2] The Lord Cromwell's Case, 4 Rep. 12b.

[3] Lloyd's State Worthies.

CHAP. VII.

As to taking by purchase and by descent.

the estate rather than Richard his uncle? It was an acknowledged rule, that the title of one who takes by *purchase* cannot be divested by the birth of a child after his interest has vested in possession; but that the estate of one who takes by *descent*, may. The point, therefore, was, "whether Richard, under the uses of the recovery, took by purchase or by descent?" The case excited so much interest at the time, that, by the special order of Queen Elizabeth, it was adjourned from the Court of Queen's Bench, where it arose, into the Exchequer Chamber, before the Lord Chancellor and the twelve Judges. Coke was counsel for the nephew, and succeeded in establishing the celebrated rule, that "Where the ancestor takes an estate of freehold, and in the same gift or conveyance an estate is limited, either mediately or immediately, to his heirs either in fee or in tail, '*heirs*' is a word of *limitation*, so that the ancestor has in him an estate of inheritance, and the heir takes by *descent*."[1]

The celebrated rule as to estates of freehold limited to heirs.

Coke's great success and professional profits.

Coke was thenceforth, while he remained at the bar, employed in every case of importance which came on in Westminster Hall, and he was in the receipt of an immense income, which gave him a greater power of buying land than is enjoyed even by an eminent railway counsel at the present day. He began to add manor to manor, till at length it is said the Crown was alarmed lest his possessions should be too great for a subject. According to a tradition in the family,—in consequence of a representation from the Government, which in those times often interfered in the private concerns of individuals, that he was monopolizing injuriously all land which came into the market in the county of Norfolk, he asked and obtained leave

[1] This rule has ever since been rigorously adhered to, except by the Court of King's Bench in Perrin *v.* Blake; and that decision was reversed in the Exchequer Chamber.—4 *Burr.* 2579; *Bl. Rep.* 672; *Dougl.* 329.

CHAP. VII.

to purchase "one acre more," whereupon he became proprietor of the great "CASTLE ACRE" estate, of itself equal to all his former domains. "Castle Acre" estate.

When he had been four years at the bar, he made a most advantageous marriage,[1] being the preferred suitor of Bridget Paston, daughter and co-heiress of John Paston, Esq., a young lady who had not only beauty, learning, and high connection,[2] but who brought him, first and last (what he did not value less), a fortune of 30,000*l.* Although he was dreadfully punished when he entered the state of wedlock a second time, he lived in entire harmony with his first wife, who died, to his inexpressible grief, leaving him ten children. A.D. 1582. His first marriage.

His first professional honors were sure proof of the general estimation in which he was held, as they sprang not from intrigue or court favor, but from the spontaneous wish of great municipal communities to avail themselves of his services. In 1585 he was elected Recorder of Coventry; in 1586, of Norwich; and 1592, of London, the citizens of the metropolis being unanimous in their choice of him, and having conferred a retiring pension of 100*l.* a year to make way for him. At the same time, he was READER (or Law Professor) in the Inner Temple, by appointment of the Benchers; and he appears in this capacity to have given high satisfaction. In his note-book, still extant, he states that, having composed seven lectures on the *Statute of Uses*,[3] he had delivered five of them A.D. 1585—1592. He is appointed Recorder of Coventry, etc. His lectures as Reader on the Statute of Uses.

[1] This event was supposed to have happened much later, but the following entry has been discovered in the parish register of Cookly, in Norfolk: "1582. Edward Cooke, Esq., and Bridget Paston, the daughter of John Paston, Esq., were married the 13th of August, the year aforesaid."—*Johnson*, i. 66.

[2] She was of an ancient family in Norfolk, and nearly connected with the noble families of Rutland, Shrewsbury, Westmoreland, and Abergavenny.

[3] An English statute of 1536 (27 Hen. VIII., c. 10) against uses and

CHAP. VII.

to a large and learned audience, when the plague broke out, and that, having then left London for his house at Huntingfield in Suffolk,—to do him honor, nine Benchers of the Temple and forty other Templars accompanied him on his journey as far as Romford.

He retained the office of Recorder of London only for a few months, then resigning it on becoming a law officer of the Crown.

A.D. 1592. He is made Solicitor General.

Burghley, always desirous to enlist in the public service those best qualified for it, had for some time been well aware of the extraordinary learning and ability of Mr. Edward Coke, and had been in the habit of consulting him on questions of difficulty affecting the rights of the Crown. A grand move in the law took place in the month of May, 1592, on the death of Sir Christopher Hatton, when Sir John Puckering being made Lord Keeper, Sir John Popham Chief Justice of England, and Sir Thomas Egerton Attorney General,—Coke, in his 41st year, became Solicitor General to the Queen. But he never seems, like his great rival, to have enjoyed Elizabeth's personal favor. His manners were not prepossessing, and out of his profession he knew little; while Francis Bacon was a polished courtier, and had taken "all knowledge for his province."

Not in enjoyment of Elizabeth's personal favor.

Not being sooner appointed a law officer of the Crown, Coke had escaped the disgrace of being concerned against the Queen of Scots, and the scandalous

against devising lands by will (a practice which tended to defeat feudal dues), and intended to give the legal estate or absolute ownership to those who are entitled to the beneficial enjoyment of land. The principal clause enacted that thereafter whoever should have a use, confidence, or trust in any hereditaments should be deemed and adjudged in lawful seizin, estate, and possession of the same estate that he had in use—that is, that he, instead of the nominal grantee or trustee, should become the full legal owner. This principle has been adopted by provisions, known by the same title, in the legislation of most of the United States.—*Century Dict.*

CHAP. VII.

attempt of prerogative lawyers—of which Elizabeth herself was ashamed—to convert the peevish speeches against her of that worthy old soldier, Sir John Perrot,[1] into overt acts of high treason. This last trial was still pending when the new Solicitor General was sworn in, but he was not required to appear in it;[2] and the world remained ignorant of the qualities he was to exhibit as public prosecutor, till the arraignment of the unfortunate Earl of Essex.

He is elected Speaker of the House of Commons. Feb. 19, 1593.

He was in the meanwhile to appear in a capacity which politicians in our time would think rather inconsistent with his functions as a servant of the Crown. From the expenses of the Spanish war, the Queen was driven, after an interval of several years, to call a new parliament; and the freeholders of Norfolk, proud of their countryman, now evidently destined to fill the highest offices in the law, returned him as their representative, the election being, as he states in a note-book still extant, "unanimous, free, and spontaneous, without any solicitation, or canvassing, on my part."

The Commons, when ordered to choose a Speaker, fixed upon the new Solicitor General, it being thought that his great legal knowledge would supply the defect of parliamentary experience. When presented at the bar for the royal approbation, he thus began his address to Elizabeth:

[1] Sir John Perrot was born in Pembrokeshire about 1527. He was one of the Knights of the Bath at the coronation of Edward VI.; but at the beginning of the reign of Mary he was sent to prison for harboring the Protestants. Elizabeth sent him, in 1572, to Ireland, as president of Munster, where he suppressed a dangerous rebellion. He was afterwards appointed admiral of a fleet to protect Ireland against the Spaniards. In 1583 he was made Lord Deputy of that kingdom, where his conduct gave such offence that he was recalled, tried for high treason, and sentenced to death. The Queen, however, respited him; but he died in the Tower 1592.—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

[2] 1 St. Tr. 1315.

CHAP. VII.

His "disqualifying" speech to the Queen.

"As in the heavens a star is but *opacum corpus* until it hath received light from the sun, so stand I *corpus opacum*, a mute body, until your Highness's bright-shining wisdom hath looked upon me, and allowed me." He goes on to "disqualify" himself at great length, deploring the unlucky choice of the Commons: "Amongst them," says he, "are many grave, many learned, many deep wise men, and those of ripe judgments; but I am untimely fruit, not yet ripe, but a bud scarcely blossomed. So as I fear me your Majesty will say '*neglecta frugi eleguntur folia*, amongst so many fair fruit you have plucked a shaken leaf.'"

The Lord Keeper, after taking instructions from the Queen, said,—

Its favorable reception.

"Mr. Solicitor: Her Grace's most excellent Majesty hath willed me to signify unto you that she hath ever well conceived of you since she first heard of you, which will appear when her Highness elected you from others to serve herself. But by this your modest, wise, and well-composed speech you give her Majesty further occasion to conceive of you above whatever she thought was in you. By endeavoring to deject and abase yourself and your desert, you have discovered and made known your worthiness and sufficiency to discharge the place you are called to. And whereas you account yourself *corpus opacum*, her Majesty, by the influence of her virtue and wisdom, doth enlighten you; and not only alloweth and approveth you, but much thanketh the Lower House, and commendeth their discretion in making so good a choice and electing so fit a man. Wherefore now, Mr. Speaker, proceed in your office, and go forward to your commendation as you have begun."

Mr. Speaker then made a florid oration on the Queen's supremacy, proving from history that this prerogative had always belonged to the sovereigns of England; and concluded by praying for liberty of speech, and the other privileges of the Commons. The Lord Keeper answered by the Queen's command:

"Liberty of speech is granted you, but you must know

Sir Edward Coke.

what privilege you have; not to speak every one what he listeth, or what cometh in his brain to utter, but your privilege is *ay* or *no*. Wherefore, Mr. Speaker, her Majesty's pleasure is, that if you perceive any idle heads which will meddle with reforming the Church and transforming the commonwealth, and do exhibit any bills to such purpose, you receive them not until they be viewed and considered by those who it is fitter should consider of such things and can better judge of them."

His prayer for liberty of speech answered.

Feb. 27.

In spite of this caution, a member of the name of Morris produced a bill in the House of Commons, "for reforming abuses in the ecclesiastical courts, and to protect the clergy from the illegal oaths they were called upon to take by the bishops." Thereupon, Mr. Speaker Coke said, "In favor and free love above my merits or desert you have elected me, which should bind me to do all my best service, and to be faithful towards you. This bill is long, and if you put me presently to open it I cannot so readily understand it as I should. Wherefore, if it please you to give me leave to consider it, I protest I will be faithful, and keep it with all secrecy." The House agreed to this proposal, and adjourned, it being now near midday.

His conduct as Speaker.

How he succeeds in quashing a bill displeasing to the Queen.

Mr. Speaker immediately posted off to court, pretending afterwards that he had been sent for by the Queen, and next morning declared from the chair that, although no man's eye but his own had seen the bill, her Majesty had desired him to say "she wondered that any should attempt a thing which she had expressly forbidden;" wherefore, with this she was highly displeased. "And," added he, "upon my allegiance I am commanded, if any such bill is exhibited, not to read it." Thus the bill was quashed; and Morris, the mover of it, being committed to the custody of Sir John Fortescue, the Chancellor of the Exchequer, was kept in durance for some weeks after parliament was dissolved.

CHAP. VII.

One morning during the session, Coke, the Speaker, not appearing at the sitting of the House, great alarm arose; but in the mean time the clerk was directed to proceed to read the litany and prayers. A message was then received from the Speaker, that he was

His illness.

"extremely pained in his stomach, insomuch that he could not without great peril adventure into the air, but that he trusted in God to attend them next day." "All the members, being very sorry for Mr. Speaker's sickness, rested well satisfied; and so the House did rise, and every man departed away."[1]

The dissolution took place on the 16th of April, when, the Queen being seated on the throne, the Speaker, in presenting the bill of supply for her assent,

His address to the Queen on the dissolution of parliament.

delivered an elaborate harangue on the dignity and antiquity of parliaments, which he concluded with the following ingenious comparison between the state and a beehive:

"*Sic enim parvis componere magna solebam.*[2] The little bees have but one governor, whom they all serve; he is their king; he is placed in the midst of their habitation, *ut in tutissima turri.* They forage abroad, working honey from every flower to bring to their king. '*Ignavum fucos pecus à præsepibus arcent.*'[3] The drones they drive away out of their hives, '*non habentes aculeos.*'[4] And whoso assails their king, in him '*immittunt aculeos, et tamen rex ipse est sine aculeo.*'[5] Your Majesty is that princely governor and noble Queen whom we all serve. Being protected under the shadow of your wings, we live. Under your happy government we live upon honey, we suck upon every sweet flower; but where the bee sucketh honey, there also the spider draweth poison. But such drones we will expel the hive. We will serve your Majesty, and with-

[1] Sir Simon d'Ewes: Journal, 470.

[2] "For thus I was wont to connect the great with the little."

[3] "[The bees] drive from their hive the drones, a lazy race."

[4] "Not possessing stings."

[5] "They introduce their stings, for the King himself is without a sting."

stand any enemy that shall assault you. Our lands, our goods, our lives, are prostrate at your feet to be commanded." [1] CHAP. VII.

Who would suppose that this was the same individual who framed and carried the Petition of Right! He was not again a representative of the people for above twenty years, being, before another parliament met, in the office of Attorney General, then supposed to be a disqualification for sitting in the Lower House; and afterwards being successively Chief Justice of the Common Pleas and of the King's Bench. For his services in the chair he received a gratuity of 100*l.*; and he again devoted himself to his professional avocations, which had been considerably interrupted, although by no means discontinued, while he acted as Speaker.

His gratuity as Speaker.

Things went on very smoothly till the month of April in the following year, when, on the appointment of Sir Thomas Egerton as Master of the Rolls, the office of Attorney General became vacant. Mr. Solicitor thought that, as a matter of course, he was to succeed to it; but there sprang up a rival, with whom he was in continual conflict during the remainder of this and the whole of the succeeding reign,—on whom, for deep injuries, he took deadly revenge,—but who, with posterity, has infinitely eclipsed his fame. Francis Bacon, nine years his junior in age, and eight years in standing at the bar, with much less technical learning, had, by literary attainments, and by the unprecedented powers of debate which he had displayed in the late parliament, created for himself a splendid reputation, and, without any steadiness of principle, had by his delightful manners gained the zealous support of many private friends. Among these, the most powerful was the young Earl of Essex, now the favored lover of the

A.D. 1594.

Rivalry between Coke and Bacon for the office of Attorney General.

[1] 1 Parl. Hist. 858–893.

CHAP. VII.

aged Queen. He strongly represented, both to Elizabeth and her minister, the propriety of making Bacon at once the first law officer of the Crown, but was asked for "one precedent of so raw a youth being promoted to so great a place."[1] Coke was, very properly, appointed Attorney General; and, out of jealousy, meanly discouraged the proposal to make Bacon Solicitor General—an appointment which would have been unobjectionable. Amidst these intrigues, the office of Solicitor General remained vacant a year and a half, and it was at last conferred on Sir Thomas Fleming, characterized, as we have seen, by that mediocrity of talent and acquirement which has often the best chance of advancement.

Coke is preferred. His jealousy of Bacon.

His part in the House of Lords.

In the two parliaments which afterwards met under Elizabeth,[2] Coke had only to sit on the Judges' woolsack in the House of Lords, and to give his advice, when asked, for the guidance of their Lordships on matters of law. But he was called upon to act a prominent part in the prosecution of state offenders. Towards the end of Elizabeth's reign, many individuals were committed on real or imaginary charges of being concerned in plots against the government or the person of the sovereign; and, for the convenience of inflicting torture upon them to force a confession, their place of confinement was usually the Tower of London. Thither did Mr. Attorney repair to examine them while under the rack; and whole volumes of examinations in these cases, written with his own hand, which are still preserved at the State Paper Office, sufficiently attest his zeal, assiduity, and hard-heartedness in the service. Although afterwards, in his old age, writing the "Third Institute," he laid down, in the most peremptory manner, that torture was contrary to the law of England, and showed how the

He examines state prisoners and superintends the infliction of torture.

[1] Naris's Life of Burghley, iii. 436.

[2] 1597 and 1601.

"rack or brake in the Tower was first introduced there in the reign of Henry VI. by the Duke of Exeter, and so ever after called *the Duke of Exeter's daughter*"[1]—like his predecessor Egerton, and his successor Bacon, he thought that the Crown was not bound by this law; and, a warrant for administering torture being granted by the Council, he unscrupulously attended to see the proper degree of pain inflicted. I do not know that this practice reflects serious discredit on his memory. He is not accused of having been guilty, on these occasions, of any wanton inhumanity.

Extenuating circumstances.

A.D. 1600. His brutal behavior on the trial of the Earl of Essex.

But he incurred never-dying disgrace by the manner in which he insulted his victims when they were placed at the bar of a criminal court. The first revolting instance of this propensity was on the trial of Robert, Earl of Essex, before the Lord High Steward and Court of Peers, for the insurrection in the City, with a view to get possession of the Queen's person and to rid her of evil counsellors. The offence, no doubt, amounted in point of law to treason; but the young and chivalrous culprit really felt loyalty and affection for his aged mistress, and, without the most distant notion of pretending to the crown, only wished to bring about a change of administration, in the fashion still followed in Continental states. Yet, after Yelverton,[2] the Queen's ancient Sergeant, had opened the case at full length, and with becoming moderation,

[1] 3 Inst. 35.

[2] Sir Henry Yelverton was born at Islington, 1566. He was educated at Oxford, whence he removed to Gray's Inn. In 1613 he was made Solicitor General and received the honor of knighthood. Three years afterwards he was appointed Attorney General; but having given some offence to the Duke of Buckingham, he was deprived of the office, fined, and imprisoned. He afterwards recovered the favor of the Duke, and was made one of the judges of the King's Bench, from which court he removed to the Common Pleas. Died Jan. 24, 1630. His "Reports of Special Cases" were published in French 1661, and in English 1734.—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

CHAP. VII.

Coke, the Attorney General, immediately followed him, giving a most inflamed and exaggerated statement of the facts, and thus concluding: "But now, in God's most just judgment, he of his earldom shall be 'ROBERT THE LAST,' that of the kingdom thought to be 'ROBERT THE FIRST.'" His natural arrogance I am afraid was heightened on this occasion by the recollection that Essex, stimulated by an enthusiastic admiration of his rival, had striven hard to prevent his promotion to the office which he now filled. The high-minded, though misguided, youth exclaimed, with a calm and lofty air, "He playeth the orator, and abuses your Lordships' ears with slanders; but they are but fashions of orators in corrupt states."

Bacon's infamy in this trial.

This was a humiliating day for our "*order*," as Bacon covered himself with still blacker infamy by volunteering to be counsel against his friend and benefactor, and by resorting to every mean art for the purpose of bringing him to the scaffold.[1]

Coke in private life.

We must now take a glance at Coke in private life. He had no town house. During term time, and when occasionally obliged to be in London in vacation for official business, he slept in his chambers in the Temple. From the time of his marriage his home was at Huntingfield Hall, in the county of Suffolk, an estate he had acquired with his wife. On the 27th of June, 1598, he had the misfortune to lose her, she being then only in her thirty-fourth year. In his memorandum-book, kept for his own exclusive use, is to be found under this date the following entry:

Death of his first wife. A.D. 1598.

"Most beloved and most excellent wife, she well and happily lived, and, as a true handmaid of the Lord, fell asleep in the Lord and now lives and reigns in Heaven."

On the 24th of July she was buried in Huntingfield

[1] 1 St. Tr. 1333–1384.

church, the delay being necessary for the pomp with which her obsequies were celebrated. CHAP. VII.

From ambition and love of wealth, probably, rather than from "thrift,"—

> . . . "the funeral bak'd meats
> Did coldly furnish forth the marriage tables." [1]

His courtship of Lady Hatton.

There was then at court a beautiful young widow, only twenty years of age, left with an immense fortune and without children, highly connected, and celebrated for wit as well as for birth, riches, and beauty.[2] This was the Lady Hatton, daughter of Thomas Cecil, eldest son of Lord Burghley, afterwards Earl of Exeter. She had been married to the nephew and heir of Lord Chancellor Hatton. Her first husband dying in 1597, as soon as she was visible she was addressed by her cousin Francis Bacon, then a briefless barrister, but with brilliant professional prospects, although he had "missed the Solicitor's place." Whether she thought him too "contemplative," I know not, but she gave him no encouragement; and his suit was not at all favored by her relations, the Cecils, who were jealous of his superior abilities, and wished to keep him down, that there might be no political rival to Robert,[3] the

Her qualities and family.

Bacon's pressing suit for her hand.

[1] Hamlet, Act i. sc. 2.

[2] When Ben Jonson's "Masque of Beauty" was played before the King at Theobald's and at Whitehall, in 1607, she was one of the fifteen court beauties who, with the Queen, performed in the show.—*Nichol's Progresses*, vol. ii. pp. 174, 175.

[3] Robert Cecil, Earl of Salisbury, an able statesman, born about 1550, was educated at St. John's College, Cambridge, and introduced by his father, the celebrated Lord Burghley, into political life. He was first secretary to Lord Derby, ambassador in France, and in 1596 under-secretary to Sir Francis Walsingham, after whose death he succeeded to the place of principal Secretary of State. He was chancellor of Lancaster 1597, and succeeded his father as Prime Minister. The influence which he possessed under Elizabeth was retained in the next reign; and James was so pleased with him, that he created him Earl of Salisbury in 1605. On the death of Dorset he succeeded to the office of High Treasurer, and applied his talents to restore the finances of the kingdom to a more improving state. He died May 24, 1612. His opposition to Essex, who at last ended his life on the block, is exposed to reprehension; but his enmity to

CHAP. VII.

Treasurer's younger son, now filling the office of Secretary of State, afterwards Earl of Salisbury, and Prime Minister to James I. Bacon employed the powerful intercession of the Earl of Essex, who, prior to sailing on his expedition to the coast of Spain, wrote pressing letters in support of his suit to the lady herself, and to her father and her mother, saying that "if he had a daughter of his own he would rather match her with the accomplished lawyer than with men of far greater titles."

The affair was in this state when Coke became a widower. He immediately cast a longing eye on the widow's great possessions; but probably he would not have been roused to the indecorous and seemingly hopeless attempt of asking her in marriage, had it not been from the apprehension that, if Francis Bacon should succeed, a political and professional rival would be heartily taken up by the whole family of the Cecils, and that he himself, thus left without support, would probably soon be sacrificed. He resolved to declare himself her suitor, in spite of all objections and difficulties.

Coke resolves to make Bacon's suit a failure.

Aug. 4.

Soon afterwards died the great Lord Treasurer Burghley; and Coke, attending the funeral, opened his scheme to her father, and her uncle Sir Robert. They, looking to his great wealth and high position, and always afraid of the influence which Bacon might acquire in the House of Commons, said they would not oppose it.

His plan meets with the favor of her family.

We are left entirely in the dark as to the means he employed to win the consent of the lady. He certainly could not have gained, and never did gain, her affections; and the probability is that she succumbed to the importunities of her relations.

Raleigh, continued with increasing asperity, renders his character on that subject peculiarly odious and criminal.—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

Still she resolutely refused to be paraded in the face of the church as the bride of the old wrinkled Attorney General, who was bordering on fifty—an age that appeared to her to approach that of Methuselah; and she would only consent to a clandestine marriage by a priest in a private house, in the presence of two or three witnesses. But here a great difficulty presented itself, for Archbishop Whitgift had just thundered from Lambeth[1] an anathema against irregular marriages. In a pastoral letter addressed to all the bishops of his province, after reciting "that many complaints had reached him of ministers, who neither regarded her Majesty's pleasure nor were careful of their credit, marrying couples in private houses, at unreasonable hours, and without proclamation of banns, as if ordinances were to be contemned, and ministers were to be left at large to break all good order," his Grace expressly prohibited all such offences and scandals for the future, and forbade, under the severest penalties, the celebration of any marriage except during canonical hours, in some cathedral or parish church, with the license of the ordinary, or after proclamation of banns on three Sundays or holidays.[2]

She consents only to a clandestine marriage.

Whitgift's anathema against such marriages.

[1] Lambeth has been for more than 700 years the residence of the Archbishops of Canterbury, though the site of the present palace was only obtained by Archbishop Baldwin in 1197, when he exchanged some lands in Kent for it with Glanville, Bishop of Rochester, to whose see it had been granted by the Countess Goda, sister of the Confessor. The former proprietorship of the Bishops of Rochester is still commemorated in *Rochester Row, Lambeth*, on the site of a house which was retained when the exchange was made, for their use when they came to attend Parliament. The *Palace* is full of beauty in itself and intensely interesting from its associations. It is approached by a noble *Gateway* of red brick with stone dressings, built by Cardinal Moreton in 1490. It is here that the poor of Lambeth have received "the Archbishops' Dole" for hundreds of years. In ancient times a farthing loaf was given twice a week to 4,000 people. Adjoining the Porter's Lodge is a room evidently once used as a prison.—*Hare's Walks in London*, vol. ii. p. 410.

[2] Strype's Life of Whitgift, p. 522.

CHAP. VII.

It was an awkward thing for the first law officer of the Crown, celebrated for his juridical knowledge, and always professing a profound reverence for ecclesiastical authority, to set at defiance the spiritual head of the Church, and to run the risk of the "greater excommunication," whereby he would not only be debarred from the sacraments and from all intercourse with the faithful, but would forfeit his property, and be liable to perpetual imprisonment. However, he determined to run all risks rather than lose the prize within his reach; and on the 24th of November, 1598, in the evening, in a private house, without license or banns, was he married to the Lady Hatton, in the presence of her father, who gave her away.

Coke determines to run the risk of breaking a canon of the Church.

Coke probably hoped that this transgression would be overlooked; for Whitgift had been his tutor at college, and, on his being made Attorney General, had kindly sent him a Greek Testament, with a message "that he had studied the common law long enough, and that he should thereafter study the law of God." But this pious primate now showed that he was no respecter of persons, for he immediately ordered a suit to be instituted in his court against Coke, the bride, the Lord Burleigh, and Henry Bathwell the rector of Okeover, the priest who had performed the ceremony. A libel was exhibited against them, concluding for the "greater excommunication" as the appropriate punishment.

He is prosecuted in the Ecclesiastical Court.

Mr. Attorney made a most humble submission; and, in consequence, there was passed a dispensation under the archiepiscopal seal, which is registered in the archives of Lambeth Palace, absolving all the defendants from the penalties which they had incurred, and alleging their "ignorance of the ecclesiastical law" as an excuse for their misconduct, and for the mercy extended to them.

His submission.

CHAP. VII.

His quarrels with his second wife.

The discrepancy of their tastes and manners.

However, the union turned out as might have been foreseen,—a most unhappy one. There was not only a sad disparity of years, but an utter discrepancy of tastes and of manners between the husband and wife. He was a mere lawyer, devoted to his briefs, and hating all gayety and expense. She delighted above all things in hawking, in balls, and in masks: though strictly virtuous, she was fond of admiration, and, instead of conversing with grave judges and apprentices of the law, she liked to be surrounded by young gallants who had served under Sir Philip Sidney and the Earl of Essex, and could repeat the verses of Spenser and Lord Surrey. She would never even take her second husband's name, for in doing so she must have been contented with the homely appellation of "Mrs. Coke," or "*Cook*" as she wrote it,—for it was not till the following reign that he reached the dignity of knighthood.

Within a year after their marriage they had a daughter, about whom we shall have much to relate: but after her birth they lived little together, although they had the prudence to appear to the world to be on decent terms till this heiress was marriageable,—when their quarrels disturbed the public peace—were discussed in the Star Chamber—and agitated the Court of James I. as much as any question of foreign war which arose during the whole course of his reign.

Accession of James I.

In the last illness of Queen Elizabeth, Coke did not, like some of her other courtiers, open a communication with her successor; but he always maintained the right of the Scottish line, notwithstanding the will of Henry VIII.,[1] which gave a preference to the issue of the Duchess of Suffolk, and he assisted Sir Robert

[1] At Henry's death it was found that he had named as next in the succession to Elizabeth the daughter of his younger sister Mary by her marriage with Charles Brandon, Duke of Suffolk.—*Green's Hist. of Eng. People*, vol. ii. p. 216.

CHAP. VII.

Cecil in the measures taken to secure the succession of the true heir.

A.D. 1603.

Coke prepared the dry lawyer-like proclamation of the new monarch, which was adopted in preference to the rhetorical one offered by Bacon, declaring "that no man's virtue should be left idle, unemployed, or unrewarded." The Attorney General was included in the warrant under the sign manual for continuing in office the ministers of the Crown, and on the 22d of April his patent was renewed under the Great Seal. He did not show the same impatience as his rival to gain the King's personal notice, and he was not introduced into the royal presence for several weeks. At last, at a grand banquet, given in the palace at Greenwich to the principal persons of the kingdom, James, with many civil speeches, conferred upon him the honor of knighthood, along with Lee the Lord Mayor of London, and Crook the Recorder. To his credit it should be remembered, that he at no time strove to gain the favor of the great,—that he never mixed in court intrigues,—and that he was contented to recommend himself to promotion by what he considered to be the faithful discharge of his official duties.

Coke is reappointed Attorney General.

May 23. He is knighted.

His good qualities.

Nov. 17. His insulting language to Sir Walter Raleigh.

His first appearance as public prosecutor in the new reign was on the trial, before a special commission at Winchester, of Sir Walter Raleigh, charged with high treason by entering into a plot to put the Lady Arabella Stuart on the throne; and here, I am sorry to say that, by his brutal conduct to the accused, he brought permanent disgrace upon himself and upon the English bar. He must have been aware that, notwithstanding the mysterious and suspicious circumstances which surrounded this affair, he had no sufficient case against the prisoner, even by written depositions and according to the loose notions of evidence then subsisting; yet he addressed the jury, in his open-

ing, as if he were scandalously ill-used by any defence being attempted. While he was detailing the charge, which he knew could not be established, of an intention to destroy the King and his children,—at last the object of his calumny interposed, and the following dialogue passed between them:

Dialogue between Coke and Raleigh.

Raleigh: "You tell me news I never heard of." *Attorney General:* "Oh, sir, do I? I will prove you the notoriest traitor that ever held up his hand at the bar of any court." *R.:* "Your words cannot condemn me; my innocency is my defence. Prove one of these things wherewith you have charged me, and I will confess the whole indictment, and that I am the horriblest traitor that ever lived, and worthy to be crucified with a thousand thousand torments." *A. G.:* "Nay, I will prove all: thou art a monster: thou hast an English face, but a Spanish heart." *R.:* "Let me answer for myself." *A. G.:* "Thou shalt not." *R.:* "It concerneth my life." *A. G.:* "Oh! do I touch you?"

Coke's proofless narrative.

The proofless narrative having proceeded, Raleigh again broke out with the exclamation, "You tell me *news*, Mr. Attorney!" and thus the altercation was renewed:

A. G.: "Oh, sir, I am the more large because I know with whom I deal; for we have to deal to-day with a *man of wit*. I will teach you before I have done." *R.:* "I will wash my hands of the indictment, and die a true man to the King." *A. G.:* "You are the absolutest traitor that ever was." *R.:* "Your phrases will not prove it." *A. G.* (*in a tone of assumed calmness and tenderness*): "You, my masters of the jury, respect not the wickedness and hatred of the man; respect his cause: if he be guilty, I know you will have care of it, for the preservation of the King, the continuance of the Gospel authorized, and the good of us all." *R.:* "I do not hear yet that you have offered one word of proof against *me*. If my Lord Cobham be a traitor, what is that to me?" *A. G.:* "All that he did was by thy instigation, thou viper; for I *thou* thee, thou traitor."[1]

[1] Sir Toby, in giving directions to Sir Andrew for his challenge to Viola, is supposed to allude to this scene:

"If thou *thou'st* him some thrice, it shall not be amiss; and as many

CHAP. VII.

The depositions being read, which did not by any means make out the prisoner's complicity in the plot, he observed,—

"You try me by the Spanish Inquisition if you proceed only by circumstances, without two witnesses." *A. G.:* "This is a treasonable speech." *R.:* "I appeal to God and the King in this point, whether Cobham's accusation is sufficient to condemn me?" *A. G.:* "The King's safety and your clearing cannot agree. I protest before God I never knew a clearer treason. Go to, I will lay thee upon thy back for the confidentest traitor that ever came at a bar."

Effect of his insulting language on those present.

At last, all present were so much shocked that the Earl of Salisbury, himself one of the Commissioners, rebuked the Attorney General, saying, "Be not so impatient, good Mr. Attorney; give him leave to speak." *A. G.:* "If I may not be patiently heard, you will encourage traitors and discourage us. I am the King's sworn servant, and must speak." The reporter relates that "here Mr. Attorney sat down in a chafe, and would speak no more until the Commissioners urged and entreated him. After much ado he went on, and made a long repetition of all the evidence, thus again addressing Sir Walter: 'Thou art the most vile and execrable traitor that ever lived. I want words sufficient to express thy viprous treasons.'"

The verdict and its effect.

Of course there was a verdict of *guilty;* but public feeling was so outraged, that the sentence could not then be carried into execution. He languished many years in prison, and, after his unfortunate expedition to Guiana, the atrocity was perpetrated of ordering him to be hanged, drawn, and quartered on this illegal judgment.

Sir Edward Coke's arrogance to the whole bar, and to all who approached him, now became almost insufferable. His demeanor was particularly offensive to

lies as will lie in thy sheet of paper. Let there be gall enough in thy ink."—*Twelfth Night,* Act iii. sc. 2.

his rival, who, although without office, excited his jealousy by the splendid literary fame which he had acquired, and by the great favor which he enjoyed at Court. Bacon, as yet, was only King's counsel, all his intrigues for promotion having proved abortive. He has left us a very graphic account of one of his encounters with the tyrant of Westminster Hall near the close of the preceding reign. Having to make a motion in the Court of Exchequer, which, it seems, he knew would be disagreeable to Coke, he says,— CHAP. VII. Logomachy between Coke and Bacon.

"This I did in as gentle and reasonable terms as might be. Mr. Attorney kindled at it, and said, 'Mr. Bacon, if you have any tooth against me, pluck it out; for it will do you more hurt than all the teeth in your head will do you good.' I answered coldly in these very words, 'Mr. Attorney, I respect you; I fear you not; and the less you speak of your own greatness, the more I will think of it.' He replied, 'I think scorn to stand upon terms of greatness towards you, who are less than little—less than the least,' and other such strange light terms he gave me, with that insulting which cannot be expressed. Herewith stirred, yet I said no more but this, 'Mr. Attorney, do not depress me so far; for I have been your better, and may be again when it please the Queen.' With this he spake, neither I nor himself could tell what, *as if he had been born Attorney General;* and, in the end, bade me 'not meddle with the Queen's business, but with mine own, and that I was unsworn,' etc. I told him, 'sworn or unsworn was all one to an honest man, and that I ever set my service first and myself second, and wished to God that he would do the like.' Then he said 'it were good to clap a *cap. utlagatum* upon my back.' To which I only said 'he could not, and that he was at a fault, for that he hunted on an old scent.'[1] He gave me a number of disgraceful words besides; which I answered with silence, and showing that I was not moved with them."[2] Bacon's account of Coke's reception of a motion made by him.

The enmity between them being still further exas-

[1] This is supposed to allude to process of outlawry against Bacon at the suit of a usurer.

[2] Bacon's Works, ed. 1819, vol. vi. p. 46.

CHAP. VII.

perated by subsequent conflicts, Bacon at length wrote the following letter of seeming defiance, but couched in terms which it was thought might soften Sir Edward, or, at any rate, induce him to think it for his advantage to come to a reconciliation:

Bacon's letter of remonstrance to Coke.

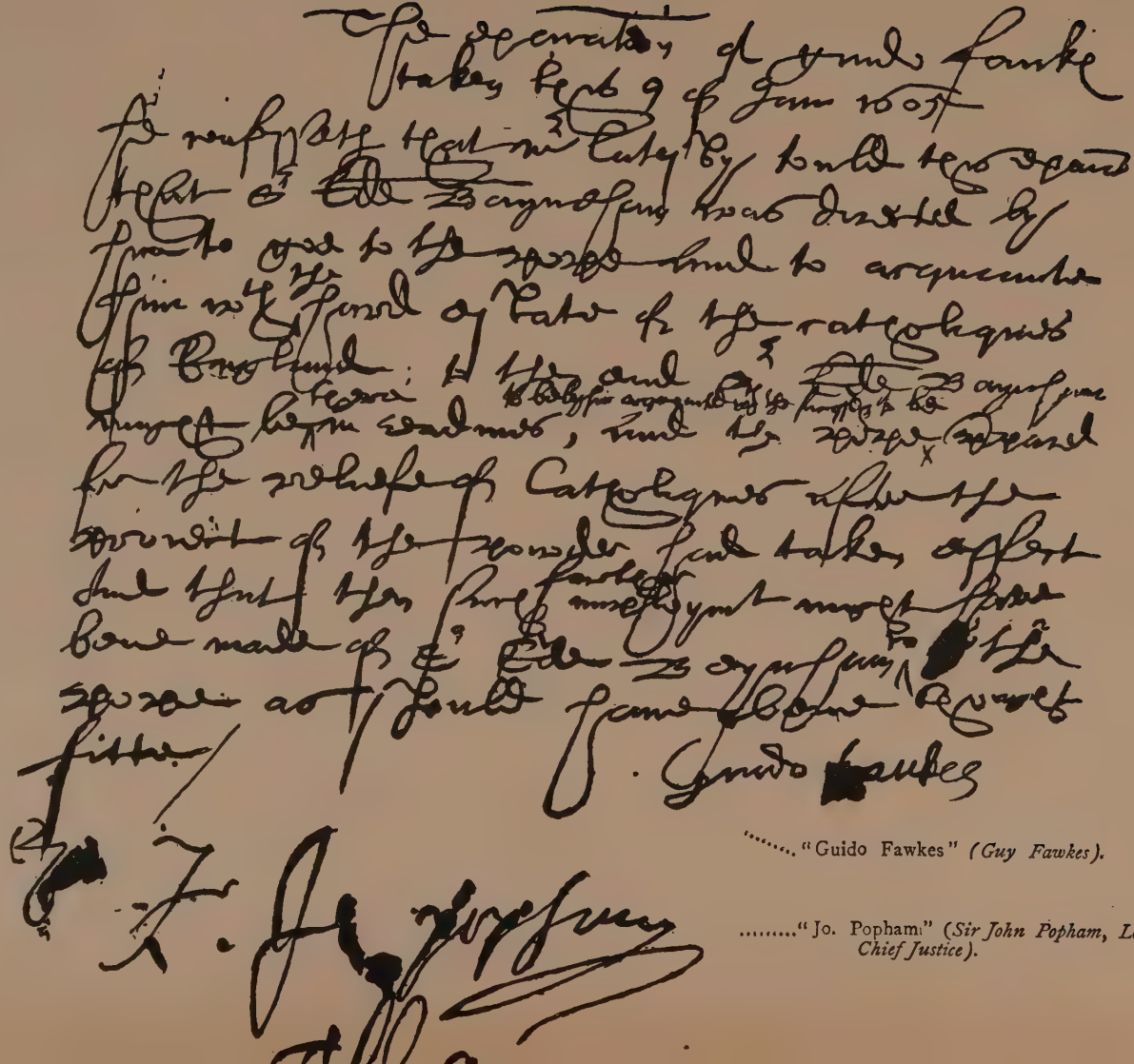
"Mr. Attorney,

"I thought it best, once for all, to let you know in plainness what I find of you, and what you shall find of me. You take to yourself a liberty to disgrace and disable my law, my experience, my discretion: what it pleaseth you, I pray, think of me: I am one that knows both mine own wants and other men's; and it may be, perchance, that mine mend, and others' stand at a stay. And surely I may not endure in public place to be wronged without repelling the same, to my best advantage to right myself. You are great, and therefore have the more enviers, which would be glad to have you paid at another's cost. Since the time I missed the Solicitor's place (the rather I think by your means), I cannot expect that you and I shall ever serve as Attorney and Solicitor together; but either to serve with another on your remove, or to step into some other course, so as I am more free than I ever was from any occasion of unworthy conforming myself to you more than general good manners or your particular good usage shall provoke; and if you had not been short-sighted in your own fortune (as I think), you might have had more use of me. But that side is passed. I write not this to show my friends what a brave letter I have written to Mr. Attorney. I have none of those humors; but that I have written it to a good end, that is, to the more decent carriage of my master's service, and to our particular better understanding one of another. This letter, if it should be answered by you in deed and not in word, I suppose it will not be worse for us both, else it is but a few lines lost, which for a much smaller matter I would have adventured. So this being to yourself, I for my part rest," etc.[1]

Coke inflexible.

But Coke was inflexible, and, as long as he remained at the bar—encouraging only men who might be useful, without being formidable, to him—would bear "no brother near his throne."

[1] Bacon's Works, iv. 570.



"Guido Fawkes" *(Guy Fawkes).*

"Jo. Popham" *(Sir John Popham, Lord Chief Justice).*

Note to Examination of Guy Fawkes' under Torture.

(*From London Graphic, Nov.* 4, 1893.)

This facsimile of the examination of the chief actor in the Gunpowder Plot affords a curious example of mistake in dating documents which are written at the commencement of a new year. The date written by the clerk in the second line of this terrible examination is "9th Jan. 1605," whereas the true date was January 9, 1606.

James I. wrote the instructions for the torture and examination of Guy Fawkes Here is a verbatim copy of the accompanying facsimile :

"The exaiation of guido fauke taken this 9 of Jan: 1605. He confesseth that Mr. Catesby tould this exaiat that Sr Edē Bayneham was directed by him to goe to the Pope and to acquainte him wth the hard estate of the catholiques of England to the end Sr Edē Baynham might be there in redines, and the pope to be by him acquainted wth the successer to be p'pared for the reliefe of Catholiques after the project of the powder had taken effect and that then such further imploymt might have bene made of Sr Edē Beynham to the pope as should have bene thought fitte.

"Guido Fawkes.

"Ex p.
"Jo. Popham
"Edw. Coke
"W. Waad"

Dr. Samuel Rawson Gardner, in his "History of England," says with reference to this examination of Guy Fawkes, "The signature which he affixed to his examination is written in a trembling, broken hand, as by a man who had lost all command over his limbs." The torture applied to Guy Fawkes was very severe, and for a long while he persisted that he knew nothing about the Gunpowder Plot, and that his name was Johnson. Finally, the torture broke his resolution and courage, and he signed the document now produced, and which, in modern English, reads :

"The examination of Mr. Guido Fawkes taken this 9th of January, 1605.

"He confesseth that Mr. Catesby told this examinant, that Sir Edmund Bayneham was directed by him to go to the Pope and to acquaint him with the hard estate of the Catholics of England, to the end Sir Edmund Bayneham might be there in readiness, and the Pope to be by him acquainted with the successor to be prepared for the relief of Catholics, after the project of the powder had taken effect, and that then such further employment might have been made of Sir Edmund Beyneham to the Pope as should have been thought fit. Guido Fawkes.

"Examinatur per
"Jo. Popham
"Edw. Coke
"W. Waad"

CHAP. VII.

The breaking out of the Gunpowder treason enhanced, if possible, his importance and his superciliousness. The unravelling of the plot was entirely intrusted to him. He personally examined, many times, Guy Fawkes and the other prisoners apprehended when the plot was discovered, but it is believed that they were not in general subjected to the rack, as they did not deny their design to blow into the air the King and all his Court, with all the members of both Houses of Parliament.[1]

Nov. 5, 1605. He conducts the prosecution of Guy Fawkes.

When the trial came on, Coke opened the case to the jury at enormous length, dividing his discourse after the manner of the age: "The considerations concerning the powder treason," said he, "are in number eight: that is to say, 1. The persons by whom; 2. The persons against whom; 3. The time when; 4. The place where; 5. The means; 6. The end; 7. The secret contriving; and, lastly, the admirable discovery thereof." Under the first head, after recapitulating all the plots, real or imaginary, to overturn the Protestant government, which the Roman Catholics were supposed to have entered into since the Reformation, he boasted much of the clemency of Queen Elizabeth, averring that "in all her Majesty's time, by the space of forty-four years and upwards, there were executed in all not thirty priests, nor above five receivers and harborers of them." Perhaps his style of oratory

Jan. 27, 1606. His opening discourse to the jury.

[1] Guy, however, was made to "kiss the Duke of Exeter's daughter," for he long refused to say more than that "his object was to destroy the parliament as the sole means of putting an end to religious persecution." A Scottish nobleman having asked him "for what end he had collected so many barrels of gunpowder," he replied, "To blow the Scottish beggars back to their native mountains!!!" Two fac-similes of his signature are to be seen in Jardine's Criminal Trials: the first in a good bold hand, before torture; the second after torture, exhibiting the word "Guido" in an almost illegible scrawl, and two ill-formed strokes in place of his surname,—apparently having been unable to hold the pen any longer.—Jardine's Crim. Tr., p. 17.

CHAP. VII.

may best be judged of by the conclusion of his commentary upon the seventh head:

His style of oratory.

"S. P. Q. R. was sometimes taken for these words, *Senatus populusque Romanus*, the senate and people of Rome; but now they may truly be expressed thus, *Stultus populus quærit Romam*, a foolish people that runneth to Rome. And here I may aptly narrate the apologue or tale of the cat and the mice. The cat having a long time preyed upon the mice, the poor creatures at last, for their safety, contained themselves within their holes; but the cat, finding his prey to cease, as being known to the mice that he was indeed their enemy and a cat, deviseth this course following, viz., changeth his hue, getting on a religious habit, shaveth his crown, walks gravely by their holes, and yet perceiving that the mice kept their holes, and looking out suspected the worst, he formally and father-like said unto them, '*Quod fueram non sum, frater, caput aspice tonsum!* Oh, brother! I am not as you take me for, no more a cat; see my habit and shaven crown!' Hereupon some of the more credulous and bold among them were again, by this deceit, snatched up; and therefore, when afterwards he came as before to entice them forth, they would come out no more, but answered, '*Cor tibi restat idem, vix tibi præsto fidem.* Talk what you can, we will never believe you; you have still a cat's heart within you. You do not watch and *pray*, but you watch to *prey*.' And so have the Jesuits, yea, and priests too; for they are all joined in the tails like Samson's foxes. Ephraim against Manasses, and Manasses against Ephraim; and both against Judah."

He carries courtly flattery to a profane extent.

When Coke came to the last head, he showed the extent to which courtly flattery was in that age profanely carried. On the receipt of the mysterious letter to Lord Mounteagle, saying, "thoughe theare be not the apparence of ani stir, yet i saye they shall receyve a terribel blowe this parleament, and yet they shall not seie who hurts them," the Council before whom it was laid, without consulting the King, immediately suspected the true nature of the plot, and took measures to guard against it. The Earl of Salisbury, in his circular giving the first account

of it, said, "We conceived that it could not by any other way be like to be attempted than with powder, while the King was sitting in that assembly: of which the Lord Chamberlain conceived more probability because there was a great vault under the said chamber. We all thought fit to forbear to impart it to the King until some three or four days before the session."[1] Yet Coke now undertook to show "how the King was divinely illuminated by Almighty God, the only ruler of princes, like an angel of God, to direct and point out as it were to the very place—to cause a search to be made there, out of those dark words of the letter concerning a *terrible blow*."

His cruelty to Sir Everard Digby.

The prisoners were undoubtedly all guilty, and there was abundant evidence against them; but we must deplore the manner in which Coke indulged in his habit of insulting his victims. When Sir Everard Digby, interrupting him, said "that he did not justify the fact, but confessed that he deserved the vilest death and the most severe punishment that might be, but that he was an humble petitioner for mercy and some moderation of justice," Coke replied, with a cold-blooded cruelty which casts an eternal stain upon his memory, "that he must not look to the King to be honored in the manner of his death, having so far abandoned all religion and humanity in his action; but that he was rather to admire the great moderation and mercy of the King in that, for so exorbitant a crime, no new torture answerable thereto was devised to be inflicted on him. And for his wife and children: whereas he said that for the Catholic cause he was content to neglect the ruin of himself, his wife, his estate, and all, he should have his desire, as it is in the Psalms: Let his wife be a widow, and his

[1] Winwood, ii. 171.

CHAP. VII.

children vagabonds; let his posterity be destroyed, and in the next generation let his name be quite put out."

The kindness of the Lords.

I am glad for the honor of humanity to add, from the report, "Upon the rising of the court, Sir Everard Digby, bowing himself towards the Lords, said, 'If I may but hear any of your Lordships say you forgive me, I shall go more cheerfully to the gallows.' Whereunto the Lords said, 'God forgive you, and we do.'"[1]

Trial of Garnet the Jesuit. March 28, 1606.

There was still greater interest excited by the case of Garnet, the Superior of the Jesuits, who was suspected of having devised the plot—who had certainly concealed it when he knew it—but against whom there was hardly any legal evidence. His trial came on at the Guildhall of the City of London, King James being present, with all the most eminent men of the time. Coke tried to outdo his exertions against the conspirators who had taken an active part in preparing the grand explosion. When he had detailed many things which took place in the reign of Elizabeth, he turned away from the jury and addressed the King, showing how his Majesty was entitled to the crown of England as the true heir of Edward the Confessor as well as of William the Conqueror, and how he was descended from the sovereign who had united the white and the red roses. "But," exclaimed the orator, "a more famous union is, by the goodness of the Almighty, perfected in his Majesty's person of divers lions—two famous, ancient, and renowned kingdoms, not only without blood or any opposition, but with such an universal acclamation and applause of all sorts and degrees, as it were with one voice, as never was seen or read of. And therefore, most excellent King,—for to him I will now speak,—

Coke's address to the King.

[1] 2 St. Tr. 159–195.

"Cum triplici fulvum conjunge leone leonem,
Ut varias atavus junxerat ante rosas:
Majus opus varios sine pugnâ unire leones,
Sanguine quam varias consociasse rosas." [1]

He again asserted that a miracle had been worked to save and to direct the King: "God put it into his Majesty's heart to prorogue the parliament; and, further, to open and enlighten his understanding out of a mystical and dark letter, like an angel of God, to point to the cellar and command that it be searched; so that it was discovered thus miraculously but even a few hours before the design should have been executed." Thus he described the prisoner: "He was a *corrector* of the common-law print with Mr. Tottle the printer, and now he is to be *corrected* by the law. He hath many gifts and endowments of nature—by art learned—a good linguist—and by profession a Jesuit and a Superior. Indeed, he is *superior* to all his predecessors in devilish treason—a doctor of Jesuits; that is, a doctor of six *D's*,—as *D*issimulation, *D*eposing of princes, *D*isposing of kingdoms, *D*aunting and *D*eterring of subjects, and *D*estruction." Then he wittily and tastefully concluded: "*Qui cum Jesu itis, non itis cum Jesuitis*,[2] for they encourage themselves in mischief, and commune among themselves secretly how they may lay snares, and say that no man shall see them. But God shall suddenly shoot at them with a swift arrow, that they shall be wounded; insomuch that whoso seeth it shall say 'this hath God done,' for they shall perceive that it is his work." [3]

His description of the prisoner.

The prisoner was found *guilty;* but, giving credit to all the depositions and confessions, they did not prove upon him a higher offence than *misprision of*

The latter found guilty.

[1] "Join with the threefold lion the tawny lion, as thy ancestor had formerly united various roses; it is a greater work to unite different lions without a battle than to join together different roses with blood."

[2] "Ye who walk with Jesus, do not walk with the Jesuits."

[3] 2 St. Tr. 217–358.

CHAP. VII.

treason, in not revealing what had been communicated to him in confession: and execution was delayed for two months, till, after much equivocation, he was induced by various contrivances to admit that the plot had been mentioned to him on other occasions, although he averred to the last that, instead of consenting to it, he had attempted to dissuade Fawkes and the other conspirators from persisting in it.

Review of Coke's life as Attorney General.

This was the last prosecution in which Coke appeared before the public as Attorney General. He had filled the office above twelve years—the most discreditable portion of his career. While a law officer of the Crown, he showed a readiness to obtain convictions for any offences, and against any individuals, at the pleasure of his employers; and he became hardened against all the dictates of justice, of pity, of remorse, and of decency. He gave the highest satisfaction first to Burleigh, and then to his son and successor, Robert Cecil, become Earl of Salisbury, and all legal dignities which fell were within his reach; but, fond of riches rather than of ease, he not only despised puisneships, but he readily consented to Anderson and Gawdy being successively appointed to the office of Chief Justice of the Common Pleas, at that time the most lucrative, and considered the most desirable, in Westminster Hall next to that of Lord Chancellor. The Attorney General was supposed to hold by as secure a tenure as a Judge; and his fees, particularly from the Court of Wards and Liveries, were enormous,[1] so that he was often unwilling to be "forked up to the bench," which, with a sad defalcation of income, offered him little increase of dignity; for, till the elevation of Jeffreys in the reign of James II., no common-law judge had been made a peer.

[1] The salary of Attorney General was only 81*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.*, but his official emoluments amounted to 7,000*l.* a year. Coke's private practice, besides, must have been very profitable to him.

CHAP. VII.

He is made Chief Justice of the Common Pleas. June 30, 1606.[1]

But, at last, Coke felt fatigued, if not satiated, with amassing money at the bar, and, on the death of Gawdy, he resigned his office of Attorney General and became Chief Justice of the Court of Common Pleas. As a preliminary, he took upon himself the degree of Sergeant-at-law; and he gave rings with the motto, "Lex est tutissima cassis."[2] Mr. Coventry,[3] afterwards Lord Keeper, whom he had much patronized, acted as his PONY.[4]

[1] Dugd. Or. Jur. p. 102.

[2] "Law is the safest helmet."

[3] Thomas Coventry, Baron Coventry, Lord Keeper of the Great Seal, was the son of Thomas Coventry, one of the justices of the Common Pleas, and born at Croome d'Abitot, in Worcestershire, in 1578. He was educated at Baliol College, Oxford, from whence he removed to the Inner Temple, where, in 1616, he was chosen autumnal Reader; and the same year was appointed Recorder of London. In 1617 he was made Solicitor General; in 1621 Attorney General; in 1625 Lord Keeper; and in 1628 created a peer by the title of Lord Coventry, Baron of Aylesborough. He died at Durham House, in the Strand, Jan. 14, 1639–40.—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

[4] I have been favored, by a learned and witty friend of mine, with the following "Note on the Sergeant's *Pony*.—When the utter barrister is advanced 'ad gradum servientis ad legem,' he gives, as the reporters of all the courts never omit to record, a ring with a motto; a poesy, sometimes more or less applicable to the donor or to the occasion,—sometimes to neither. These rings are presented to persons high in station (that for the sovereign is received by the hands of the Lord Chancellor), and to all the dignitaries of the law, by a barrister whom the Sergeant selects for that honorable service, and who is called his 'Pony.' Why? Simply because the offering he brings is the *honorarium*, compounding, or composition, which is paid by the learned graduate upon his degree of Sergeant-at-law. IGNORAMUS (Act ii. sc. 7) enters with money in a bag. *Ignor.* 'Hic est *legem pone*. Hic sunt sexcentæ coronæ pro meo caro corde Rosabelia.' Upon which passage says the learned commentator Hawkins: 'Legem pone. This appears to have been a cant term for ready money.' Dr. Heylin, in his 'Voyage of France,' p. 292, speaking of the University of Orleans, 'In the bestowing of their degrees here they are very liberal, and deny no man that is able to pay his fees. *Legem ponere* is with them more powerful than legem dicere; and he that hath but his gold ready, shall have a sooner despatch than the best scholar upon the ticket.' In the translation of Rabelais by Ozell, c. xii. book 4, the phrase 'En payant' is rendered 'the Legem Pone.' 'They were all at our service for the Legem Pone.' And finally, Tusser, in his Good Husbandly Lessons worthy to be followed by such as will thrive, prefixed to his Four Hundred Points of Good Husbandry, recommends punctuality in payment of debts by the following distich:

CHAP. VII.

Account of his becoming Sergeant and Chief Justice.

"He was sworn in Chancery as Sergeant," says Judge Croke, the reporter, "and afterwards went presently into the Treasury of the Common Bench, and there by Popham, Chief Justice, his party robes were put on, and he forthwith, the same day, was brought to the bar as Sergeant, and presently after, his writ read and count pleaded, he was created Chief Justice, and sat the same day, and afterwards rose and put off his party robes and put on his robes as a Judge, and the second day after he went to Westminster, with all the Society of the Inner Temple attending upon him."[1]

The ceremony of riding from Sergeants' Inn to Westminster in the party-colored robes of a Sergeant was dispensed with in his case by special favor; but when Sir Henry Yelverton, on his promotion soon after, requested the like privilege, "the Judges resolved that the precedent of Sir Edward Coke ought not to be followed."[2]

'Use *Legem Pone* to pay at thy day,
But use not "Oremus" for often delay.'

In the language, therefore, of a Sergeant's poesy, 'Ex æquo et bono,' I should say that, regard being had to the valuable consideration of which he is the bearer, his *pony's* derivation savors more of the *bonus* than the *equus*."

[1] Cro. Jac. 125. [2] Cro. Jac. vol. iii. introd. p. 7.

CHAPTER VIII.

CONTINUATION OF THE LIFE OF SIR EDWARD COKE TILL HE WAS DISMISSED FROM THE OFFICE OF CHIEF JUSTICE OF THE COURT OF KING'S BENCH.

CHAP. VIII.

A.D. 1606.

His meritorious conduct as a Judge.

Coke, while Attorney General, was liable to the severest censure; he unscrupulously stretched the prerogative of the Crown, showing himself for the time utterly regardless of public liberty; he perverted the criminal law to the oppression of many individuals; and the arrogance of his demeanor to all mankind is unparalleled. But he made a noble amends. The whole of his subsequent career is entitled to the highest admiration. Although holding his judicial office at the pleasure of a King and of ministers disposed to render Courts of Justice the instruments of their tyranny and caprice, he conducted himself with as much lofty independence as any who have ornamented the bench since the time when a judge can only be removed from his office for misconduct, on the joint address of the two Houses of Parliament. Not only was his purity unsuspected in an age when the prevalence of corruption is supposed by some to palliate the repeated instances of bribe-taking proved upon Bacon, but he presented the rare spectacle of a magistrate contemning the threats of power,—without ever being seduced by the love of popular applause to pronounce decisions which could not be supported by precedent and principle. His manners even became much more bland; he listened with patience to tedious arguments; he was courteous when it was necessary to interpose, and, in passing sentence on those who

His purity and high principle.

Change in his manners.

CHAP. VIII.

were convicted, he showed more tenderness for them than he had been accustomed to do for those whom he prosecuted while they were still presumed to be innocent.

A.D. 1606—1613.

He remained Chief Justice of the Common Pleas above seven years; and, considering his profound learning and unwearied diligence, we may, without disparagement to any of his successors, affirm that the duties of the office have never since been performed so satisfactorily.

Part taken by him in the case of the POSTNATI.

The only case in which he was supposed by any one to have improperly attended to the wishes of the Government was that of the POSTNATI. He concurred with the majority in holding that all persons born in Scotland after the accession of James I. to the throne of England were entitled to the privileges of native-born English subjects. Wilson, in allusion to it, denounces Coke as "metal fit for any stamp royal."[1] I think, myself, that the decision was erroneous; the only plausible analogy to support it—that persons born in Normandy and Aquitaine were not considered aliens—being explained away by the consideration that those provinces had been reconquered from France, and were considered as held of the crown of England. But our Chief Justice was not much acquainted with international law, and he was satisfied with the doctrine of "remitter" as laid down by Littleton,—applying it to the case of Edward III. and Henry V. recovering the French provinces which had belonged by right or birth to William the Conqueror and Henry II., and which were therefore to be considered, when again annexed to England, as taken by *descent*, and not by *conquest*,—or, as he called it, by *purchase*. His opinion, unconsciously to himself, may have been influenced by the efforts he had made while

[1] Life and Reign of King James, p. 41.

CHAP. VIII.

Attorney General to please the King in bringing about a union with Scotland; but the warm praise which he bestows upon the decision, in reporting it, should remove all doubt as to his sincerity on this occasion, and the inflexibility which led to his downfall should relieve his memory from the scandal of seeking royal favor after being sworn to administer the law as a Judge.

His sincerity on this occasion.

A plan was now going forward systematically to carry into effect the notion which James entertained, that he was entitled to rule in England as an absolute sovereign. One of the engines chiefly relied upon for success was the Court of HIGH COMMISSION. This had been established, at the accession of Queen Elizabeth,[1] for cases purely of an ecclesiastical nature, and had been so used during the whole of her reign; but, as it was governed by no fixed rules, and as it decided without appeal, an attempt was now made to subject all persons, lay and spiritual, to its jurisdiction, and to give it cognizance of temporal rights and offences. The Court having proceeded hitherto only by *citation*,[2] a new attempt was made to send a pursuivant at once into the house of any person complained against, to arrest him, and to imprison him. This matter being discussed in the Court of Common Pleas, Lord Chief Justice Coke, supported by his brethren, determined that the High Commission had no such power; that the practice was contrary to MAGNA CHARTA; and that, if the pursuivant should be killed in the attempt, the party resisting him would not be guilty of murder.[3] The authority of the Court of Common Pleas to check the usurpations of the High Commission by granting prohibitions was contested, but Coke successfully

He opposes the Court of High Commission.

Account of this Court.

[1] Stat. 1 Eliz. c. 1.

[2] Citation is an official call or notice, given to a person to appear in a court and answer to a demand.—*Webster's Dict.*

[3] 12 Rep. 49.

CHAP. VIII.

supported it, and in various instances fearlessly stopped proceedings before this tribunal which the King was known to favor.[1]

A.D. 1611.

At last the ingenious device was resorted to of including Coke himself among the Judges of the High Commission, in the hope that he would then no longer oppose it. But he resolutely refused to sit as a member of the Court; whereupon "the Lord Treasurer said that the principal feather was plucked from the High Commissioners.[2] This Court, however, when Coke was removed from the bench, renewed and extended its usurpations, and made itself so odious to the whole nation, that it was entirely swept away by one of the first acts of the Long Parliament.[3]

Coke refuses to sit as a member of it.

He resists the claim of the King to sit and try causes.

A.D. 1612.

The High Commission[4] being silenced for a time, Archbishop Bancroft[5] suggested the notable expedient of "the King judging whatever cause he pleased in his own person, free from all risk of prohibition or appeal." Accordingly, on a Sunday, the King summoned all the Judges before him and his Council, at Whitehall, to know what they could say against this proposal. The Archbishop thus began:

[1] Langdale's case, 12 Rep. 50, 58; Sir William Chancey's case, ib. 82.

[2] 12 Rep. 88.

[3] The Long Parliament, called by Charles I., met November 3, 1640; it was forcibly dissolved by Cromwell, April 20, 1653.—*Haydn's Dict. of Dates.*

[4] An illegal attempt to revive it by James II. was one of the causes of the Revolution.

[5] Richard Bancroft, born at Farnworth, Lincolnshire, Sept. 1544. After being severely trained in grammatical learning he was sent to Christ's College, Cambridge, at the charge of his great uncle Hugh Curwen, Archbishop of Dublin. He was made treasurer of St. Paul's 1585–6, and in 1586 rector of Cottingham, Northamptonshire. About the same time he became one of the commissioners for causes ecclesiastical, and there were few cases of importance brought before that tribunal wherein he did not take a principal part. Towards the Puritans he evinced uniform hostility. He detected the printers and publishers of the Marprelate tracts, and instructed the Queen's counsel, when they were brought for punishment before the Star Chamber. It was by his advice, too, that answers to these publications, written in a similar scoffing and

CHAP. VIII.

"The Judges are but the delegates of your Majesty, and administer the law in your name. What may be done by the agent may be done by the principal; therefore your Majesty may take what causes you may be pleased to determine from the determination of the Judges, and determine them yourself. This is clear in divinity; such authority, doubtless, belongs to the King by the Word of God in the Scriptures."

The Archbishop upholds the King's claim by the Word of God.

Coke, C. J. (*all the other Judges assenting*): "By the law of England, the King in his own person cannot adjudge any case, either criminal, as treason, felony, etc., or betwixt party and party concerning his inheritance or goods; but these matters ought to be determined in some court of justice. The form of giving judgment is *ideo consideratum est per curiam*;[1] so the Court gives the judgment. Richard III. and Henry VII. sat in the Star Chamber, but this was to consult with the justices upon certain questions proposed to them, and not *in judicio*.[2] So in the King's Bench he may sit, but the Court gives the judgment. *Ergo*, the King cannot take any cause out of any of his courts, and give judgment upon it himself. No king since the Conquest has assumed to himself to give any judgment in any cause whatsoever which concerned the administration of justice within this realm. So the King cannot arrest any man, as laid down in the Year-Book 1 H. VII. 7, 4, '*for the party cannot have remedy against the King.*' So if the King give any judgment, what remedy can the party have?[3] We greatly marvelled that the most reverend prelate durst assert that such absolute power and authority belongs to the

Coke proves the unlawfulness of the claim.

satirical vein, were set forth. These to a great extent had the effect of causing a temporary reaction of public feeling against the Puritans. About 1592 he became chaplain to Archbishop Whitgift, and soon afterwards took an active part in the proceedings against Barrow, Cartwright, Penry, Udall, and others. On April 21, 1597, he was elected Bishop of London. It is said that the differences which prevailed between the secular priests and the Jesuits at the close of Elizabeth's reign were fomented by Bancroft, who supplied the seculars with arguments against their opponents. In the conference with the Puritans at Hampton Court in Jan., 1603–4, he bore a very prominent part. On Oct. 6, 1604, King James I. nominated him to the archbishopric of Canterbury, which he held till his decease. Died Nov. 2, 1610.—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

[1] "Therefore determined by the Court."

[2] "In judgment."

[3] So Markham, C. J., told Edward IV. that "the King cannot arrest a man for suspicion of treason or felony, as others his lieges may."

CHAP. VIII.

King by the Word of God, which requires that the laws even in heathen countries be obeyed. Now it is provided by Magna Charta, and other statutes duly passed and assented to by the Crown, 'Quod tam majores quam minores justitiam habeant et recipiant in CURIA Domini Regis.'[1] By 43 Ed. III. c. 3 no man shall be put to answer without presentment before the justices, or by due process according to the ancient law of the land; and any thing done to the contrary shall be void. From a roll of parliament in the Tower of London, 17 Richard II., it appears that a controversy of land between the parties having been heard by the King, and sentence having been given, it was reversed for this,—that the matter belonged to the common law."

The King's answer.

King James: "My Lords, I always thought, and by my saul I have often heard the boast, that your English law was founded upon reason. If that be so, why have not I and others reason as well as you the Judges?"

Coke proves the King to be under the law.

Coke, C. J.: "True it is, please your Majesty, that God has endowed your Majesty with excellent science as well as great gifts of nature; but your Majesty will allow me to say, with all reverence, that you are not learned in the laws of this your realm of England, and I crave leave to remind your Majesty that causes which concern the life or inheritance, or goods or fortunes, of your subjects are not to be decided by natural reason, but by the artificial reason and judgment of law, which law is an art which requires long study and experience before that a man can attain to the cognizance of it. The law is the golden met-wand and measure to try the causes of your Majesty's subjects, and it is by the law that your Majesty is protected in safety and peace."

King James (in a great rage): "Then I am to be *under* the law—which it is treason to affirm."

Coke, C. J.: "Thus wrote Bracton, 'Rex non debet esse sub homine, sed sub DEO ET LEGE.'"[2]

This conference made a great sensation on the public mind. We have this account of it in a contemporary letter:

[1] "That all persons shall have and receive justice in the Court of their Lord the King."

[2] ["The King ought not to be under man, but under God and the Law."]—12 Coke, 63.

"On Sunday, before the King's going to Newmarket, * * * my Lord Coke and all the Judges of the common law were before his Majesty, to answer some complaints of the civil lawyers for the general granting of prohibitions. I heard that the Lord Coke, amongst other offensive speech, should say to his Majesty that his Highness was defended by his laws; at which saying, and with other speech then used by the Lord Coke, his Majesty was very much offended, and told him that he spake foolishly, and said that he was not defended by his laws, but by God; and so gave the Lord Coke, in other words, a very sharp reprehension both for that and other things, and withal told him that Sir Thomas Compton, the Judge of the Admiralty Court, was as good a Judge."[1]

A contemporary account of this conference.

James is said, nevertheless, to have tried his hand as a Judge, but to have been so much perplexed when he had heard both sides, that he abandoned the trade in despair, saying, "I could get on very well hearing one side only, but when both sides have been heard, by my saul I know not which is right." The terror of Coke, however, was the true reason for abandoning the scheme, for,—if it had not thus been boldly denounced as illegal,—by the aid of sycophants it would have proceeded, and much injustice would have been perpetrated.

The King abandons his scheme.

Coke likewise, for a time, gave a serious check to arbitrary proceedings in the Courts of the Lord President of Wales and of the Lord President of the North.[2] Having been summoned, with his brother Judges, before the King and the Council, on a complaint of the prohibitions he had granted against these proceedings, he justified fully all that he had done, and thus concluded: "We do hope that whereas the Judges of this realm have been more often called before your Lordships than in former times they have been (which is much observed, and gives much em-

Coke checks the arbitrary proceedings of other courts.

[1] Lodge's Illustrations, iii. 564.

[2] The Council of the North was a tribunal which exercised special powers north of the Humber.—*Thompson's Hist. of Eng.*, p. 288.

CHAP. VIII.

boldening to the vulgar), after this day we shall not be so often upon such complaints hereafter called before you." [1] On this occasion he had a lucky escape, for, he says, "the King was well satisfied with these reasons and causes of our proceedings, who, of his grace, gave me his royal hand, and I departed from thence in his favor." [2]

The King well satisfied.

Coke denies the power of the Crown to alter the law by "proclamation."

But Coke incurred the deepest displeasure of his Majesty by declaring against a *pretension* — called a "prerogative" — which might soon entirely have superseded parliament. It had been usual for the Crown, from ancient times, to issue proclamations to enforce the law; and sometimes they had introduced new regulations of police, which, being of small importance, and for the public benefit, were readily acquiesced in. James, from his accession, began to issue proclamations whenever he thought that the existing law required amendment. At last, on the 7th of July, 1610, the Commons, roused by these extraordinary attempts to supersede their functions, presented an address to the Crown, in which they say—

Address of the Commons to the Crown on this matter.

"It is apparent both that proclamations have been of late years much more frequent than before, and that they are extended not only to the liberty, but also to the goods, inheritances, and livelihood of men; some of them tending to alter points of the law, and make them new; other some made shortly after a session of parliament, for matter directly rejected in the same session; others appointing punishments to be inflicted before lawful trial and conviction; some containing penalties in form of penal statutes; some referring the punishment of offenders to courts of arbitrary discretion, which have laid heavy and grievous censures upon the delinquents; some, as the proclamation for starch, accompanied with letters commanding inquiry to be made against transgressors at the quarter-sessions; and some vouching former proclamations, to countenance and warrant the latter."

[1] 12 Coke, 50. [2] 13 Co. 33.

CHAP. VIII.

On Bacon, now Solicitor General, and in high favor at Court, was imposed the delicate task of presenting this address, which he tried to soften by saying— How presented by Bacon.

"We are persuaded that the attribute which was given by one of the wisest writers to two of the best emperors, 'divus Nerva and divus Trajanus,' so saith Tacitus, 'res olim insociabiles miscuerunt, imperium et libertatem,' may be truly applied to your Majesty. For never was there such a conservator of regality in a crown, nor ever such a protector of lawful freedom in a subject. Let not the sound of grievances, excellent sovereign, though it be sad, seem harsh to your princely ears. It is but *gemitus columbæ*, the mourning of a dove, with that patience and humility of heart which appertaineth to loving and loyal subjects."

James, however, thinking that this complaint resembled more the *roaring of a lion*, was much alarmed; and, really believing, from the flatterers who surrounded him, that he possessed rightfully the power which he assumed, he ordered all the Judges to be summoned and consulted "whether it did not by law belong to him." Coke says: The King asks the opinion of the Judges.

"I did humbly desire that I might have conference with my brethren the Judges about the answer to the King. To which the Lord Chancellor said that every precedent had at first a commencement, and that he would advise the Judges to maintain the power and prerogative of the King, and in cases in which there is no authority or precedent to leave it to the King to order in it according to his wisdom, and for the good of his subjects, or otherwise the King would be no more than the Duke of Venice." *Coke, C. J.:* "True it is that every precedent hath a commencement; but where authority and precedent is wanting, there is need of great consideration before that any thing of novelty shall be established, and to provide that this be not against the law of the land; for the King cannot, without parliament, change any part of the common law, nor create any offence by his proclamation which was not an offence before. But I only

CHAP. VIII.

desire to have a time of consideration and conference; for *deliberandum est diu quod statuendum est semel.*"[1]

After much solicitation, time was at last given, and the consulted Judges all concurred in an answer drawn by Coke—

The answer drawn by Coke.

"That the King by his proclamation cannot create any offence which was not an offence before, for then he may alter the law of the land by his proclamation in a high point; for if he may create an offence where none is, upon that ensues fine and imprisonment. Also the law of England is divided intothree parts: common law, statute law, and custom; but the King's proclamation is none of them. Also, *malum, aut est malum in se, aut prohibitum;*[2] that which is against common law is *malum in se; malum prohibitum* is such an offence as is prohibited by act of parliament. Also it was resolved, that the King hath no prerogative but that which the law of the land allows him. But the King, for prevention of offences, may admonish his subjects by proclamation that they keep the laws, and do not offend them, upon punishment to be inflicted by the law."[3]

Coke, in reporting these resolutions of the Judges, adds on his own authority, "The King, by his proclamation or otherwise, cannot change any part of the common law, or statute law, or the customs of the realm. Also, the King cannot create any offence, by his prohibition or proclamation, which was not an offence before, for that were to change the law, and to make an offence which was not; for *ubi non est lex, ibi non est transgressio;*[4] ergo, that which cannot be punished without proclamation cannot be punished with it."[5] Yet Hume, in commenting on the issuing of proclamations by James I., has the audacity to say, "The legality of this exertion was established

Hume's comment on the issuing of proclamations.

[1] "Time must be given for deliberation when a question is to be decided for all time."

[2] "Evil is either evil in itself or prohibited evil."

[3] 12 Rep. 74.

[4] "Where there is no law, there is no transgression."

[5] 12 Coke, 75.

CHAP. VIII.

by uniform and undisputed practice, and was even acknowledged by lawyers, who made, however, this difference between laws and proclamations, that the authority of the former was perpetual, that of the latter expired with the sovereign who emitted them."[1]

Oct. 25, 1613. Coke against his will is made Chief Justice of the King's Bench.

Coke met with a very sensible mortification, in being promoted to be Chief Justice of the King's Bench, on the death of Chief Justice Fleming. This office, although of higher rank, was then considered less desirable than the chiefship of the Common Pleas, for the profits of the former were much less, with increased peril of giving offence to the Government, and so being dismissed. Coke's seeming promotion was owing to the spite and craft of his rival. Bacon was impatient for the Attorney General's place, filled by Hobart, who was not willing to change it for the chiefship of the King's Bench, but would for that of the Common Pleas. Bacon thereupon sent to the King "reasons why it should be exceedingly much for his Majesty's service to remove the Lord Coke from the place he now holdeth, to be Chief Justice of England, and the Attorney to succeed him, and the Solicitor the Attorney." Among the reasons urged for this arrangement were these:

Reasons for this urged by Bacon.

"First, it will strengthen the King's causes greatly among the Judges, for both my Lord Coke will think himself near a privy councillor's place, and thereupon turn obsequious, and the Attorney General, a new man and a grave person in a Judge's place, will come in well to the other, and hold

[6] Vol. i. p. 52. We ought not hastily to accuse him of wilful misrepresentation or suppression, for he was utterly unacquainted with English juridical writers. Gibbon entered on a laborious study of the Roman civil law, to fit him to write his DECLINE AND FALL; but Hume never had the slightest insight into our jurisprudence, and his work, however admirable as a literary composition, is a very defective performance as a history. Of the supposed distinction between a *statute* and a *proclamation*,—that the former was of perpetual obligation till repealed, and that the latter lost its force on a demise of the crown,—I do not find a trace in any of our books.

CHAP. VIII.

him hard to it, not without emulation between them who shall please the King best. Besides the removal of my Lord Coke to a place of less profit, though it be with his will, yet will it be thought abroad a kind of discipline to him for opposing himself in the King's causes, the example whereof will contain others in more awe."

The King consented; Coke was obliged to agree to the translation, under a hint that he might be turned off entirely; and Bacon, now Attorney General, in his Apophthegms thus exults in his own roguery: "After a few days the Lord Coke, meeting with the King's Attorney, said to him, 'Mr. Attorney, this is all your doing; it is you that have made this stir!' Mr. Attorney answered, 'Ah, my Lord, your Lordship all this while hath grown in breadth, you must needs now grow in height, or else you would be a monster.'"

Bacon's exultation.

There cannot be a doubt that Coke's elevation was meant as a punishment, and that Bacon, the contriver of it, already contemplated his ruin; but, to save appearances, he was treated with outward respect, and in a few days afterwards he was sworn of the Privy Council.

Coke is sworn of the Privy Council. A.D. 1613—1616.

He took his seat in the Court of King's Bench in Michaelmas Term, 1613, and presided there three years with distinguished ability and integrity. He reconciled himself to the loss of profit by the high rank he now enjoyed, and he took particular delight in styling himself "Chief Justice of England," a title which his predecessors had sometimes assumed, although, since the office of Grand Justiciar had ceased to exist, they had usually been only called "Chief Justice of the Court of King's Bench."

He gives a qualified support to "Benevolences."

Hopes were entertained that he really was becoming "obsequious." A "BENEVOLENCE" being demanded to supply the pressing necessities of the Crown, he munificently gave 2,000*l.* as his own contri-

bution, while very small sums could be squeezed out of his brother Judges;—the legality of the Benevolence being questioned in the Star Chamber, after some hesitation he pronounced an opinion that it was not illegal. Mr. Attorney General Bacon thereupon wrote to the King,—"My Lord Chief Justice delivered the law for the Benevolence strongly; I would he had done it timely." But the ground he took was, that "a Benevolence was a free-will offering—not a tax;" and Bacon added, "It will appear most evidently what care was taken that that which was then done might not have the effect, no, nor the show, no, nor so much as the shadow of a tax."[1] Coke thus proved that he would not play a factious part for the sake of popularity, and that he was disposed to support the proceedings of the Government as far as his conscience would permit.

His ground for this.

But Bacon, the Attorney General—now in possession of the King's ear—with a view to strengthen his favor at Court, and to insure his acquisition of the Great Seal, about which he cared more than the completion of his NOVUM ORGANUM, originated proceedings contrary to the plainest dictates of law, justice, and humanity. One of the worst of these was the prosecution for high treason of Peacham, an aged and pious clergyman, against whom the only case was, that upon breaking into his house, and searching his papers, there was found a MS. sermon—which he had never preached—inculcating the doctrine, that, under certain circumstances, subjects may resist a sovereign who attempts to subvert their liberties. In the vain hope of making him accuse himself, he was placed upon the rack in the presence of the law officers of the Crown, and "examined before torture, in torture,

A.D. 1615. His laudable conduct in Peacham's Case.

[1] 2 St. Tr. 904; 12 Rep. 119.

CHAP. VIII.

between torture, and after torture."[1] To obtain a conviction seemed hopeless without a previous opinion obtained irregularly from the Judges. Thus Mr. Attorney reported progress to King James, as to his endeavors:

Bacon's report to the King concerning Peacham's Case.

"For Peacham's case I have, since my last letter, been with Lord Coke twice; once before Mr. Secretary's going down to your Majesty, and once since, which was yesterday; at the former of which times I delivered him Peacham's papers, and at this latter the precedents, which I had with care gathered and selected. . . . He fell upon the same allegation which he had begun at the council-table, 'that judges were not to give opinions by fractions, but entirely according to the vote, whereupon they should settle upon conference, and that this *auricular taking of opinions*, single and apart, was new and dangerous;' and other words more vehement than I repeat."

At this interview, Coke finally refused to give any opinion, and desired the precedents to be left with him. Soon after, Bacon again wrote to the King, "Myself yesterday took the Lord Coke aside, after the rest were gone, and told him all the rest were ready, and I was now to require his Lordship's opinion, according to my commission. He said I should have it, and repeated that twice or thrice, and said he would tell it me within a very short time, though he were not at that instant ready." In three days Bacon wrote finally to the King,—"I send your Majesty enclosed my Lord Coke's *answers;* I will not call them *rescripts*, much less *oracles*. They are of his own hand. I thought it my duty, as soon as I received them, instantly to send them to your Majesty, and forbear for the present to speak farther of them."

The verdict and sentence.

Peacham was nevertheless brought to trial, and found guilty of treason; but such indignation was excited by this judicial outrage, that the sentence of

[1] Letter to the King, signed by Bacon.

the law was not carried into execution, and a lingering death was inflicted upon him in prison by disease. No part of the national disgrace could be cast upon the upright and resolute Chief Justice of the King's Bench.[1]

Coke exerts himself to bring to justice the murderers of Sir Thomas Overbury.

He likewise escaped all censure in the affair of the murder of Sir Thomas Overbury.[2] He had not been accessory to the infamous sentence by which, to please the caprice of the King, the young Countess of Essex, after carrying on an illicit intercourse with a paramour, obtained a divorce from her husband on the pretext that she still remained a virgin.[3] At her second marriage to the Earl of Somerset,[4] he made her a wedding present; but, in thus assisting to give *éclat* to the ceremony, he followed the example of all courtiers, and of the Lord Mayor and citizens of London. Two years after, when the rumor broke out that before this ill-starred union she and her new husband had instigated the murder of the man who had tried to prevent it, he put forth all his energy to get at truth; although the King, from personal liking or

A.D. 1616.

[1] See 5 Bacon's Works, 353; Cro. Car. 125.

[2] Sir Thomas Overbury, born at Compton-Scorfen, Warwickshire, in 1581. By his talents and learning he acquired influence with Carr, who became the favorite of James I. and was created Earl of Somerset. For advising against the marriage of Carr with the infamous Countess of Essex, Overbury was committed to the Tower (1613). After a confinement of several months, he was poisoned by order of Somerset and his wife, who were convicted of the crime but pardoned.—*Thomas' Biog. Dict.*

[3] 2 St. Tr. 786.

[4] Robert Carr, Earl of Somerset, was page to James VI. of Scotland, before his accession to the English throne, and was at his coronation made a Knight of the Bath. He was created Viscount Rochester 1611, and Earl of Somerset 1613; being advanced in the following year to the office of Lord Chamberlain. On the death of the Earl of Salisbury he became Prime Minister, and dispenser of the King's favors. In the plenitude of his power he grew insolent, and visibly declined in the King's favor, especially upon the Duke of Buckingham's appearance at Court. In 1616 he was condemned for being accessory to the murder of Sir Thomas Overbury, a crime in which he was involved with his Countess; but they both received the King's pardon. Died July, 1645.—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

CHAP. VIII.

some mysterious reason, wished to screen the most guilty parties from punishment.

In former times, the Chief Justice and the Puisne Judges of the Court of King's Bench often acted as police magistrates, taking preliminary examinations, and issuing warrants for the apprehension of criminals. In this case Coke took not less than 300 examinations, writing down the words of the witnesses and of the parties accused with his own hand. "The Lord Chief Justice's name thus occurring," observed Bacon, "I cannot pass by it, and yet I have not skill to flatter. But this I will say of him, that never man's person and his place were better met in business than my Lord Coke and my Lord Chief Justice in the case of Overbury."

He takes not less than 300 preliminary examinations.

Nevertheless, we should consider some of his proceedings very strange if they were imitated by a Chief Justice of the present age. Having granted the warrant, he actually went to Royston, where the Earl of Somerset was with the King, that he might himself superintend the arrest. Along with the other judges who were to preside at the trial, he marshalled the evidence, and concerted in what order it should be laid before the jury.[1] When charging the grand jury, he told them that "of all felonies, murder is the most horrible; of all murders, poisoning is the most detestable; and of all poisonings, the lingering poison,"—adding that "poisoning was a popish trick." When Mrs. Turner, one of the subordinate agents, was on

He superintends the arrest of the Earl of Somerset, and marshals the evidence.

[1] There is extant a very curious letter of Mr. Attorney General Bacon to the King, about getting up the case: "If your Majesty vouchsafe to direct it yourself, that is the best; if not, I humbly pray you to require my Lord Chancellor that he, together with my Lord Chief Justice, will confer with myself and my fellows that shall be used for the marshalling and bounding of the evidence, that we may have the help of his opinion as well as that of my Lord Chief Justice; whose great travels as I much commend, yet that same plerophoria or over-confidence doth always subject things to a great deal of chance."—22d of January, 1615–16.

her trial, he said "she had the seven deadly sins; for she was a whore, a bawd, a sorcerer, a witch, a papist, a felon, and a murderer." Sir John Hollis and others having, at the execution of Weston, who had been employed to administer the poison, made some observations on the manner in which his trial had been conducted by Lord Chief Justice Coke,—the same Chief Justice Coke, sitting in the Star Chamber, passed sentence upon them, ordering that, besides being subjected to fine and imprisonment, they should make an humble apology to himself at the bar of the Court of King's Bench. He then blurted out this witty parody,—

He passes sentence on Sir John Hollis.

"Et quæ tanta fuit *Tyburn* tibi causa videndi?"[1]

adding that "he himself never had attended executions after reading the lines in Ovid—

"Et lupus et vulpes instant morientibus,
Et quæcunque minor nobilitate fera est."[2]

At the arraignment of the Countess of Somerset, although she pleaded *guilty*, and Coke attended only as assessor to the Lord High Steward's Court,[3] he said that "the persons engaged by her to commit the murder had before their death confessed the fact, and died penitent; and that he had besought their confessor to prove this, if need should require."[4]

His part in the Countess of Somerset's trial.

[1] "And what was your reason for seeing Tyburn?"

[2] "Both the wolf and the fox and other wild animals of meaner rank press upon the dying."

[3] A court instituted for the trial during the recess of Parliament of peers or peeresses indicted for treason or felony, or for misprision of either.—*Century Dict.*

[4] In the course of one of these trials, the Chief Justice was placed in a very ridiculous situation. Those who were plotting against the life of Sir Thomas Overbury had superstitiously consulted one *Forman*, a conjurer, respecting their own fate; and this impostor had kept in a book a list of all those who had come to him to have their fortunes told. "I well remember," says Sir Anthony Welden, "there was much mirth made in the court upon the showing this book; for it was reported the first leaf my Lord Coke lighted on he found his own wife's name."—*Court and Character of King James*, p. 111.

CHAP. VIII.

But these things were quite according to the established rules of proceeding, and in no respect detracted from the credit which the Chief Justice acquired by the vigor and ability with which he had secured the conviction of the noble culprits;—and he was not suspected of being accessory to their pardon, —granted in consideration of their discreet silence on topics which the King was very desirous of keeping from public view.[1]

He secures the conviction of the Earl and Countess.

Sir Edward Coke's high reputation now raised a general belief that he would succeed Lord Ellesmere as Chancellor. This threw Bacon into a state of alarm, and he wrote a letter to the King, strongly urging his own claims to the Great Seal, and disparaging his rival:

Bacon afraid that Coke would be made Lord Chancellor.

His artful means to secure the prize.

"If you like my Lord Coke," said he, "this will follow,—first, your Majesty shall put an overruling nature into an overruling place, which may breed an extreme; next, you shall blunt his industries in matter of your finances, which seemeth to aim at another place;[2] and, lastly, popular men are no sure mounters for your Majesty's saddle."[3]

The effect of this artful representation was much heightened by Coke's continued display of independence; for although he would, no doubt, have been well pleased to be promoted to the office of Chancellor, he would not resort to the compliances and low arts by which Bacon was successfully struggling to secure the prize.

Coke's dispute with Lord Ellesmere about injunctions.

On the contrary, from a sense of duty he spontaneously involved himself in a controversy which made him very obnoxious to the Government. A love of power, or of popularity, very easily deludes a judge into the conviction that he is acting merely with a view to the public good and under the sanction of his

[1] 2 St. Tr. 911–1034; Amos's Oyer of Poisoning.

[2] This refers to the office of Lord Treasurer, which was afterwards conferred on Chief Justices.

[3] Bacon's Works, v. 371.

oath of office, when he is seeking unwarrantably to extend the jurisdiction of his court. Lord Chancellor Ellesmere having very properly granted an injunction against suing out execution on a judgment obtained in the King's Bench by a gross fraud, Lord Chief Justice Coke, asserting that this was a subversion of the common law of England, and contrary to an act of parliament, induced the party against whom the injunction was granted to prepare an indictment against the opposite party, his counsel, his solicitor, and the Master in Chancery who had assisted the Chancellor when the injunction was granted. He then took infinite pains in seeking out and marshalling the evidence by which the prosecution was to be supported. The grand jury, however, threw out the indictment; and the matter being brought before the King, he decided with a high hand in favor of the Court of Chancery.[1]

The King decides in favor of Ellesmere.

Bacon, rejoicing to see that he could now have no rival for the Great Seal, wrote to the King, with seeming magnanimity, "My opinion is plainly that my Lord Coke at this time is not to be disgraced." Nevertheless he inveighed against his rival for "the affront offered to the well-deserving person of the Chancellor when thought to be dying,—which was barbarous."

Coke incurs the King's high displeasure in the case of *Commendams*.

The deadly offence at last given to the King was by the proceedings in the "case of Commendams,"[2] in which Coke's conduct was not only independent and energetic, but in strict conformity to the law and constitution of the country, and every way most meritorious. A question arising as to the power of the King to grant ecclesiastical preferments to be held along with a bishopric, a learned counsel, in arguing at the bar, denied this power, and answered the reason given for it—"that a bishop should be enabled to keep

[1] See Lives of the Chancellors, vol. ii. ch. 1.

[2] *Colt* v. *Bishop of Lichfield*, Hobart, 193.

CHAP. VIII.

hospitality"—by observing that "no man is obliged to keep hospitality beyond his means," and by a sarcastic comparison between the riches of modern prelates and the holy apostles, who maintained themselves by catching fish and making tents. The Bishop of Winchester, who happened to be present at a trial in which his order was so deeply concerned, was highly incensed by these liberties, and, hurrying off to the King, represented to him that the Judges had quietly allowed an attack to be made on an important prerogative of the Crown, which ought to be held sacred. Bacon, the Attorney General, being consulted, he mentioned a power which, according to many precedents, the King possessed, of prohibiting the hearing of any cause in which his prerogative was concerned, *Rege inconsulto*,[1] —i.e., until he should intimate his pleasure on the matter to the Judges; and it was resolved that in this case such a prohibition should issue. Accordingly Bacon, in the King's name, wrote a letter to Sir E. Coke and the other Judges, saying,—

The King informed that his prerogative was concerned.

April 25.

His command to stay proceedings.

"For that his Majesty holdeth it necessary, touching his cause of *Commendams*,[2] upon the report which my Lord of Winchester, who was present at the last argument, made to his Majesty, that his Majesty be first consulted with ere there be any farther argument, therefore it is his Majesty's express pleasure that the day appointed for farther argument of the said cause be put off till his Majesty's farther pleasure be known upon consulting him."

Although the royal prerogative had been incidentally brought into question, the action was to decide a mere civil right between the litigating parties; and

[1] "Not having consulted the King."

[2] On the vacancy of a benefice, it was sometimes customary to assize it to the care of a bishop, to be held in *commendam* until a proper person could be found on whom to bestow it. This system was employed for the purpose of evading the law against pluralities, and was frequently abused.—*Low and Pulling's Dict. of Eng. History.*

CHAP. VIII.

the illegality of this interference was so palpable, that Coke had no difficulty in inducing his brethren to disregard it, and to proceed in due course to hear and determine the cause.

This illegal interference disregarded by the Judges.

Judgment being given, Coke penned, and he and all the other Judges signed, a bold though respectful letter to their "most dreaded and gracious Sovereign," in which, after some preliminary statements, they say,—

Their letter of explanation to the King.

"We are and ever will be, with all faithful and true hearts, according to our bounden duties, ready to serve and obey your Majesty, and think ourselves most happy to spend our times and abilities to do your Majesty true and faithful service. What information hath been made out unto you, whereon your Attorney doth ground his letter from the report of the Bishop of Winchester, we know not; this we know, that the true substance of the cause summarily is this, that it consisteth principally upon the construction of two acts of parliament: the one, 25 Ed. III., and the other, 25 Hen. VIII., whereof your Majesty's Judges, upon their oaths and according to their best knowledge and learning, are bound to deliver their true understanding faithfully and uprightly; and the case, being between two for private interest and inheritance, earnestly called for justice and expedition. We hold it therefore our duty to inform your Majesty that our oath is in these express words, 'that in case any letter come to us contrary to law, we do nothing therefore but certify your Majesty thereof, and go forth to do the law notwithstanding the same.'

They justify their action.

"We have advisedly considered of the said letter of Mr. Attorney, and with one consent do hold the same to be contrary to law, and such as we could not yield to by our oaths. And knowing your Majesty's zeal to justice to be most renowned, therefore we have, according to our oaths and duties, at the very day prefixed the last term, proceeded according to law; and we shall ever pray to the Almighty for your Majesty in all honor, health, and happiness long to reign over us."

June 6. They are summoned by the King, and reproved by him.

The King, in a fury, summoned the Judges to appear before him at Whitehall, and, when they had entered his presence, declared that—

"He approved of their letter neither in its matter nor

CHAP. VIII.

manner of expression. He condemned them for their remissness in suffering counsellors at the bar to deal in impertinent discussions about his prerogative, and told them they ought to have checked such sallies, nor suffered such insolence. With regard to their own business, he thought fit to acquaint them that deferring a hearing upon necessary reasons neither denied nor delayed justice; it was rather a pause of necessary prudence, the Judges being bound to consult the King when the Crown is concerned. As to the assertion that it was a point of private contest between subject and subject, this was wide of the truth, for the Bishop who was the defendant pleaded for a commendam only in virtue of the royal prerogative. 'Finally,' said he, 'let me tell you that you have been in a hurry where neither party required expedition, and you ought to have known that your letter is both couched indecently and fails in the form thereof.'"

Upon this, all the twelve threw themselves on their knees and prayed for pardon. But, although Coke expressed deep sorrow for having failed in form, he still manfully contended that—

Coke's brave contention and the case for the King.

"Obedience to his Majesty's command to stay proceedings would have been a delay of justice, contrary to law, and contrary to the oaths of the Judges; moreover, as the matter had been managed, the prerogative was not concerned." *King:* "For judges of the law to pronounce whether my prerogative is concerned or not is very preposterous management, and I require you my Lord Chancellor to declare whether I that am King, or the Judges, best understand my prerogative, the law, and the oath of a Judge." *Lord Chancellor Ellesmere:* "With all humility, your Majesty will best be advised in this matter by your Majesty's counsel learned in the law now standing before you." *Bacon, A. G.:* "Your Majesty's view of the question none can truly gainsay, and, with all submission, I would ask the reverend Judges, who so avouch their oaths, whether this refusal of theirs to make a stay, that your Majesty might be consulted, was not nearer to a breach of their oaths? They are sworn to counsel the King; and not to give him counsel until the business is over, is in effect not to give him counsel at all when he requires it." *Coke, C. J.:* "Mr. Attorney, methinks

CHAP. VIII.

you far exceed your authority; for it is the duty of counsel to plead before the Judges, and not against them." *Bacon, A. G.:* "I must be bold to tell the *Lord Chief Justice of England*, as he styles himself, that we, the King's counsel, are obliged by our oaths and by our offices to plead not only against the greatest subjects, but against any body of subjects, be they courts, judges, or even the Commons assembled in parliament, who seek to encroach on the prerogative royal. By making this challenge, the Judges here assembled have highly outraged their character. Will your Majesty be pleased to ask the Lord Coke what he has to say for himself now, and graciously to decide between us?" *King:* "My Attorney General is right, and I should like to know what further can be said in defence of such conduct." *Coke, C. J.:* "It would not become me further to argue with your Majesty." *Lord Ellesmere, C.:* "The law has been well laid down by your Majesty's Attorney General, and I hope that no Judge will now refuse to obey your Majesty's mandate issued under the like circumstances."

In the belief that Coke was humbled as effectually well as the other Judges, the following question was put to them: "In a case where the King believes his prerogative or interest concerned, and requires the Judges to attend him for their advice, ought they not to stay proceedings till his Majesty has consulted them?" *All the Judges except Coke:* "Yes! yes!! yes!!!" *Coke, C. J.:* "WHEN THE CASE HAPPENS, I SHALL DO THAT WHICH SHALL BE FIT FOR A JUDGE TO DO."

The other Judges subservient.

This simple and sublime answer abashed the Attorney General, made the recreant Judges ashamed of their servility, and even commanded the respect of the King himself, who dismissed them all with a command to keep the limits of their several courts, and not to suffer his prerogative to be wounded,—concluding with these words, which convey his notion of the free constitution of England: "for I well kno the true and ancient common law to be the most

Coke's simple answer and its effect on those present.

CHAP. VIII.

favorable to Kings of any law of the world, to which law I do advise you my Judges to apply your studies."[1]

He stops a job of the Duke of Buckingham.

In spite of the offence thus given to the King, the Chief Justice might have been allowed long to retain his office if he would have sanctioned a job of Villiers,[2] the new favorite, who, since the fall of the Earl of Somerset, had been centralizing all power and patronage in his own hands. The chief clerkship in the Court of King's Bench, a sinecure then worth 4,000*l.* a year, in the gift of the Chief Justice, was about to become vacant by the resignation of Sir John Roper, created Lord Teynham. It had been promised to the Earl of Somerset, and the object was to secure it for his successor, although there was now a plan to apply the profits of it to make up the very inadequate salaries of the Judges.[3] Bacon undertook, by fair

[1] Bacon's Works, ii. 517 ; Carte, iv. 35 ; Lives of Chancellors, ii. 249.

[2] George Villiers, Duke of Buckingham, was the son of Sir George Villiers of Brookesby, in Leicestershire, where he was born 1592. He attracted the notice of James I. at the performance of the play of "Ignoramus," in 1615 ; soon after which he was successively appointed Cup-bearer to the King, Gentleman of the Bedchamber, and Knight of the Garter. He also rose to the rank of Marquis, and became Lord Admiral of England, Warden of the Cinque Ports, and Master of the Horse. But in 1623 he lost the royal favor, in a great degree, by persuading Prince Charles to visit the court of Spain, for the purpose of paying his addresses in person to the Infanta. Though Buckingham was created a Duke in his absence, it was generally supposed that if the King had lived his decline would have been as rapid as his rise. The accession of Charles in 1625 increased the power of the favorite, but it also multiplied his enemies, and injured his master. The nation hated Buckingham, and two parliaments for impeaching him were dissolved. At this period, the Duke involved the kingdom in a disgraceful war with France, and went himself on an expedition to the isle of Rhé, where he lost the flower of his army. He then returned to repair his fleet, and was about to sail for Rochelle when he was assassinated at Portsmouth by Felton, a fanatical lieutenant, Aug. 23, 1628.—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

[3] In the reign of James I., the salary of the Chief Justice of the King's Bench was only 224*l.* 19*s.* 6*d.* a year, with 33*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.* for his circuits ; and the salary of the Puisne Judges was only 188*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.* a year. But this was a great increase on the parsimony of former times, for the yearly salary of the Chief Justice of the King's Bench in the reign of Edward I. was only 170 marks.

CHAP. VIII.

or foul means, to bend the resolution of Coke, and, after a casual conversation with him, thus wrote to Villiers, pretending to have fully succeeded:

Bacon's fruitless undertaking in Buckingham's favor.

"As I was sitting by my Lord Chief Justice, one of the Judges asked him whether Roper were dead. He said that for his part he knew not. Another of the Judges answered, 'It should concern you, my Lord, to know it.' Wherefore he turned his speech to me, and said, 'No, Mr. Attorney, I will not wrestle now in my latter times.' 'My Lord,' said I, 'you speak like a wise man.' 'Well,' said he, 'they have had no luck with it that have had it.' I said again 'those days be passed.' Here you have the dialogue to make you merry; but in sadness I was glad to perceive he meant not to contest."

However, when the resignation took place, Coke denied the promise, and insisted upon his right to dispose of the office for the benefit of the Judges. This was a display of spirit by no means to be forgiven, and the resolution was immediately formed to cashier him.

June 26. Coke is summoned before the Privy Council: frivolous charges against him.

The true reason for this outrage could not be avowed, and nothing could be more creditable to the integrity and ability of Coke than the wretched inventions which were resorted to as pretexts for disgracing him. Being summoned before the Privy Council, he was first charged with breach of duty when he was Attorney General in concealing a bond given to the Crown by Sir Christopher Hatton. He said that "now twelve years being past, it was no great marvel if his memory was short;" but he showed that he had derived no advantage, and the Crown had suffered no damage, from the alleged neglect. He was then charged with misconduct in his dispute with the Lord Chancellor respecting injunctions. He answered, that if he was in error he might say "Erravimus cum patribus,"[1] and he vouched various

[1] "We have erred with our predecessors."

CHAP. VIII.

authorities to prove that such proceedings in the Chancery had been thought to tend to the subversion of the common law. Lastly, he was charged with insulting the King when called before him in the case of *Commendams*. He admitted that he was wrong in denying the right of the King's counsel to speak on that occasion, their opinion being asked by his Majesty, but he disclaimed all intentional disrespect in returning the answer "that when the time should be, he would do that which should become an honest and a just Judge."

He is suspended from his office of Chief Justice.

He was then desired to withdraw, and a few days afterwards he was resummoned before the Privy Council, when, being made to kneel, the Lord Treasurer, the Earl of Suffolk, thus pronounced sentence:

"Sir Edward Coke, I am commanded by his Majesty to inform you that his Majesty is by no means satisfied with your excuses. Yet, out of regard to your former services, he is not disposed to deal with you heavily, and therefore he hath decreed—1. That you be sequestered the council chamber until his Majesty's pleasure be farther known. 2. That you forbear to ride your summer circuit as justice of assize. 3. That during the vacation, while you have time to live privately and dispose yourself at home, you take into consideration and review your books of Reports, wherein, as his Majesty is informed, be many extravagant and exorbitant opinions set down and published for positive and good law. Amongst other things, the King is not well pleased with the title of the book wherein you entitle yourself 'LORD CHIEF JUSTICE OF ENGLAND,' whereas by law you can challenge no more than LORD CHIEF JUSTICE OF THE KING'S BENCH. And having corrected what in your discretion be found meet in these Reports, his Majesty's pleasure is that you do bring them privately before himself, so that he may consider thereof as in his princely judgment shall be found expedient. To conclude, I have yet another cause of complaint against you. His Majesty has been credibly informed that you have suffered your coachman to ride bareheaded before you, and his Majesty desires that this may be forborne in future."

CHAP. VIII.

Coke, C. J.: "I humbly submit myself to his Majesty's pleasure; but this I beg your Lordships to take notice of, and to state to his Majesty from me, with all humility, that if my coachman hath rode before me bareheaded, he did it at his own ease, and not by my order." His answer.

Alleged errors in his Reports.

The only delinquency which could be pressed against him was having fallen into some mistakes in his printed books of Reports; and to make these the foundation of a criminal proceeding for the purpose of removing him from the bench, must, even in that age, have shocked all mankind. Such was his gigantic energy, that while he was Attorney General he had composed and published five volumes of Reports of Cases determined while he was at the bar; and afterwards, when he was Chief Justice of the Common Pleas, and of the King's Bench, six more, of cases determined by himself and his brother Judges.[1] They were executed with great accuracy and ability, though tinctured with quaintness and pedantry; and Bacon, who was now disgracefully taking the most active part against their author, had deliberately written,—

Their accuracy and ability.

"To give every man his due, Sir Edward Coke's Reports, though they may have errors, and some peremptory and extrajudicial resolutions, more than are warranted, yet they contain infinite good decisions and rulings."

The Chief Justice, instead of going the circuit, was condemned to employ himself in revising these Reports; and when Michaelmas Term came round he was again cited before his accusers. Of this meeting we have an account in a letter from Bacon to the King:

Oct. 3.

"This morning, according to your Majesty's commands, we have had my Lord Chief Justice of the Common Pleas

[1] He calls them "Parts." Out of respect, they are cited as "1st Report," "2d Report," etc., without any other designation.

CHAP. VIII.

Proceedings against Coke before the Privy Council.

before us. It was delivered unto him that your Majesty's pleasure was, that we should receive an account from him of the performance of a commandment of your Majesty laid upon him, which was that he should enter into a view and retraction of such novelties and errors, and offensive conceits, as were dispersed in his Reports; that he had had good time to do it; and we doubted not but he had used good endeavor in it, which we desired now in particular to receive from him. His speech was, that there were of his Reports eleven books, that contained above 500 cases; that heretofore in other Reports much reverenced there had been found errors which the wisdom of time had discovered; and thereupon delivered to us the enclosed paper, wherein your Majesty may perceive that my Lord is an happy man that there should be no more errors in his 500 cases than in a few cases of Plowden. . . .

"The Lord Chancellor, in the conclusion, signified to my Lord Coke your Majesty's commandment, that, until report made and your pleasure therefore known, he shall forbear his sitting at Westminster, etc.; not restraining, nevertheless, any other exercise of his place of Chief Justice in private."

His alleged ruling in "Dr. Bonham's Case" against the binding obligation of obnoxious statutes.

The specific exceptions to the Reports, with his answers, are still extant, to prove the utter frivolity of the proceeding. The only thing that could be laid hold of, with any semblance of reason, was a foolish doctrine alleged to have been laid down extrajudicially in "*Dr. Bonham's Case*,"[1] which I have often heard quoted in parliament against the binding obligation of obnoxious statutes, "that the common law shall control acts of parliament, and sometimes shall adjudge them to be merely void; for where an act of parliament is against common right and reason, the common law shall control it, and adjudge it to be void." He attempted to justify this on former authorities: "In 8 Ed. III., Thomas Tregor's case, Herle saith, 'Some statutes are made against law and right, which they that made them, perceiving, would not put them in execution.'" He concluded with Stroud's case, 16 &

[1] 8 Rep. f. 118a.

17 Eliz., adjudging "that if an act of parliament give to any to have cognizance of all manner of pleas within his manor of D., he shall hold no plea whereunto himself is a party, for *iniquum est aliquem suæ rei esse judicem*."[1] But this rests on an implied exception; and his other authorities resolve themselves into a question of construction, without countenancing the pretension that judges may repeal an act of parliament, or that the people are to obey only the laws which they approve.[2] This conundrum of Coke ought to have been laughed at, and not made the pretence for disgracing and ruining him.

A few days after, Bacon, in another letter to the King, says,— Oct. 6.

Bacon's letter to the King.

"Now your Majesty seeth what he hath done, you can better judge of it than we can. If upon this probation, added to former matters, your Majesty think him not fit for your service, we must, in all humbleness, subscribe to your Majesty, and acknowledge that neither his displacing, considering he holdeth his place but during your will and pleasure, nor the choice of a fit man to be put in his room, are council-table matters, but are to proceed wholly from your Majesty's great wisdom and gracious pleasure. So that in this course it is but the signification of your pleasure, and the business is at an end as to him."

The Declaration of Bacon.

Bacon next prepared a declaration which the King was to make to the Privy Council, touching the Lord Coke, "that upon the three grounds of deceit, contempt, and slander of his government, his Majesty might very justly have proceeded not only to have put him from his place of Chief Justice, but to have brought him in question in the Star Chamber, which would have been his utter overthrow; but his Majesty was pleased for that time only to put him off from the council-table, and from the public exercise of his place

[1] "It is unfair for any one to be the judge of his own case."

[2] Bacon's Works, vi. 405.

CHAP. VIII.

of Chief Justice, and to take farther time to deliberate." Then followed a statement of his turbulent carriage to the King's prerogative, and the settled jurisdiction of the High Commission, the Star Chamber, and the Chancery, with this cutting observation, —"that he having in his nature not one part of those things which are popular in men, being neither civil nor affable, nor magnificent, he hath made himself popular by design only, in pulling down the government." Lastly came the objectionable doctrines to be found in his Reports, "which, after three months' time, he had entirely failed to explain or to justify."[1]

It is doubtful whether this DECLARATION was ever publicly pronounced by the King, but his Majesty was now fully persuaded to proceed to the last extremity against the offending Judge; and, lest he should relent, Bacon wrote him the following letter:

Nov. 13. His letter bringing the King to a decision with respect to Coke's dismissal.

"May it please your excellent Majesty,

"I send your Majesty a form of discharge for my Lord Coke from his place of Chief Justice of your Bench.

"I send also a warrant to the Lord Chancellor for making forth a writ for a new Chief Justice, leaving a blank for the name to be supplied by your Majesty's presence; for I never received your Majesty's express pleasure in it.

"If your Majesty resolve of Montagu, as I conceive and wish, it is very material, as these times are, that your Majesty have some care that the Recorder succeeding be a temperate and discreet man, and assured to your Majesty's service.

"God preserve your Majesty."[2]

Effect on the public mind.

These proceedings seem to have excited considerable interest and sympathy in the public mind. Mr. Chamberlain wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton,—

"Lord Coke hath been called twice or thrice this term before the Chancellor and the King's learned counsel, to give a reason for divers things delivered in his Reports. It is not the least of his humiliations to be convented in this point

[1] Bacon's Works, v. 127. [2] Ibid. 131.

before such judges as Sergeant Crew, Sergeant Montague, and Sergeant Finch, the Attorney General, and the Solicitor, whereof the greater part, except the Solicitor,[1] are held no great men in law; and, withal, to find such coarse usage as not once to be offered to sit down, and so unrespective and uncivil carriage from the Lord Chancellor's men, that not one of them did move a hat or make any other sign of regard to him; whereof the Queen taking notice, his Majesty has since sent word that he would have him well used."[2]—A few days after, the same correspondent writes,—"The Lord Coke hangs still in suspense, yet the Queen is said to stand firm for him, and to have been very earnest in his behalf, as likewise the Princes." But on the 14th of November he adds, "The Lord Coke is now quite off the hooks, and order given to send him a *supersedeas* from executing his place. The common speech is that four *P's* have overthrown and put him down; that is, *P*RIDE, *P*ROHIBITIONS, *P*RÆMUNIRE, and *P*REROGATIVE."[3]

Coke is dismissed from his office of Chief Justice of the King's Bench.

On the 16th of November the *supersedeas* actually received the royal signature, and passed the Great Seal, being in these words:

"For certain causes now moving us, we will that you shall be no longer our Chief Justice to hold pleas before us, and we command you that you no longer interfere in that office, and by virtue of this presence we at once remove and exonerate you from the same."

Nov. 19.

I wish much that Coke had completed his triumph, by receiving the intelligence with indifference, or at least with composure. But there is extant a letter from Mr. John Castle, written three days after, containing this striking passage:

He sheds tears on his dismissal.

"A thunderbolt has fallen upon my Lord Coke in the King's Bench, which has overthrown him from the roots. The *supersedeas* was carried to him by Sir George Coppin, who, at the presenting of it, saw that magnanimity and supposed greatness of spirit to fall into a very narrow room, for

[1] Yelverton.

[2] Nichol's Progresses of James, vol. iii. p. 194.

[3] Ibid. p. 226.

CHAP. VIII.

he received it with dejection and tears. *Tremor et successio non cadunt in fortem et constantem virum.*"[1]

This momentary weakness ought to be forgiven him, for he behaved with unflinching courage while the charges were pending against him; and he knew well that, by yielding the Chief Clerkship to Buckingham, he might easily have escaped further molestation, but "he stood upon a rule made by his own wisdom,—that a judge must not pay a bribe or take a bribe."[2] We ought likewise to recollect, that although at first he was stunned by the blow, he soon rallied from it, in spite of sore domestic annoyances; and that he afterwards not only took ample revenge on his enemies, but conferred lasting benefits on his country.

He soon rallies, and behaves with firmness.

The week after Coke's dismissal, Chamberlain wrote to a friend:

Chamberlain's letter concerning Coke's conduct.

"If Sir Edward Coke could bear his misfortunes constantly it were no disgrace to him, for he goes away with a general applause and good opinion. And the King himself, when he told his resolution at the council-table to remove him, yet gave this character, that he thought him no ways corrupt, but a good Justice—with so many other good words, as if he meant to hang him with a silken halter. Hitherto he bears himself well, but especially towards his lady, without any complaint of her demeanor towards him; though her own friends are grieved at it, and her father sent to him to know all the truth, and to show him how much he disallowed her courses, having divided herself from him, and disfurnished his house in Holborn and at Stoke of whatsoever was in them, and carried all the movables and plate she could come by God knows where, and retiring herself into obscure places both in town and country. He gave a good answer likewise to the new Chief Justice, who sending to him to buy his collar of S.S.,[3] he said 'he would not part with it, but leave it to his

[1] ["'A strong courageous man does not yield to weakness and tears."] —See D'Israeli's Character of James I., p. 125.

[2] Hackett's Life of Lord Keeper Williams, ii. 120.

[3] A collar composed of a series of the letter *S* in gold, either linked together or set in close order, on a blue and white ribbon with the ends

posterity, that they might one day know that they had a Chief Justice to their ancestor.' He is now retired to his daughter Sadler's, in Hertfordshire, and from thence it is thought into Norfolk. He hath dealt bountifully with his servants; and such as had places under him, he hath willed them to set down truly what they gained, and he will make it good to them, if they be willing to tarry and continue about him."[1]

The public discerns the true cause of his dismissal

The public were at no loss to discern the true cause of his dismissal when they knew that his successor, before being appointed, was compelled to sign an agreement binding himself to dispose of the Chief Clerkship for the benefit of Buckingham, and when they saw two trustees for Buckingham admitted to the place as soon as the new Chief Justice was sworn in. Bacon now made a boast to the favorite of his good management:

Nov. 29.

"I did cast myself," says he in a letter to Buckingham, "that if your Lordship's deputies had come in by Sir E. Coke, who was tied (that is, under an agreement with Somerset), it would have been subject to some clamor from Somerset, and some question what was forfeited—by Somerset's attainder being but a felony—to the King; but now, they coming in from a new Chief Justice, all is without question or scruple."

connected by two buckles and a trefoil-shaped link, from which hangs a jewel. Such collars have been much worn in England by persons holding great offices in the state, as well as by the gentry of various ranks, from esquires upwards. The origin of the device has not been satisfactorily explained. Among the numerous conjectures which have been formed regarding its meaning, one is that the letter S stands for "Souveraigne," the favorite motto of Henry IV.; others have suggested "Seneschal."—*Chambers' Encyc.*, vol. ix. p. 70.

[1] Nichol's Progresses of James, vol. iii. p. 228.

CHAPTER IX.

CONTINUATION OF THE LIFE OF SIR EDWARD COKE TILL HE WAS SENT PRISONER TO THE TOWER.

CHAP. IX. A.D. 1616.

COKE was supposed by mankind and by himself to be disgraced and ruined. Nevertheless his story is more interesting, and he added more to his own fame as well as conferred greater benefits on his country, than if he had quietly continued to go through the routine of his judicial duties till his faculties decayed.

Bacon's continued vengeance.

Bacon's vengeance was not yet by any means satiated. Having artfully brought about the fall of his rival, he wrote him a most insulting letter by way of consolation and advice;[1] he still persecuted him on the absurd charge of attacking the royal prerogative in his Reports; he appointed a commission of the Judges to revise them;[2] and he meditated an information against him in the Star Chamber for malversation in office, in the hope of a heavy fine being imposed upon him. These spiteful designs seemed now easily within his power, for he had reached the summit of his ambition: the Great Seal was his own, and he expected the King and Buckingham to continue submissive to his will.

March 7, 1617.

Coke's conduct after his disgrace.

But Coke's energy and integrity triumphed. At the age of sixty-six, from exercise and temperance his health was unimpaired, and his mental faculties seemed to become more elastic. With malicious pleasure he discovered that the new Chancellor was giddy by his

[1] Bacon's Works, v. 403; Lives of the Chancellors, ii. 358.
[2] Bacon's Works, vi. 409.

FRANCIS, LORD BACON.

After an Old Print.

elevation; and he sanguinely hoped that, from his reckless and unprincipled proceedings, before long an opportunity would occur of precipitating him from his pride of place into the depth of humiliation.

The ex-Chief Justice, a few weeks after his dismissal, contrived to have an interview with the King, and was rather graciously received by him; but he knew that he had no chance of being restored to power except by the favor of Buckingham, whom he had so deeply offended.

His plan to circumvent Bacon by marrying his daughter to Sir John Villiers.

With great dexterity he laid a plan, which had very nearly succeeded, before Lord Chancellor Bacon was warm in the marble chair.

Lady Hatton, although she hated her aged husband, and was constantly keeping him in hot water, occasionally lived with him, and had brought him a daughter, called "The Lady Frances," only fourteen years old, who was a very rich heiress, as her mother's possessions were entailed upon her, and she expected a share of the immense wealth of her father. This little girl was pretty to boot; and she had attracted the notice of Buckingham's elder brother, Sir John Villiers, who was nearly thrice her age, and was exceedingly poor. Sir Edward Coke, while Chief Justice, had scorned the idea of such a match; but it was now suggested to him by Secretary Winwood[1] as the certain and the only means of restoring him to favor at Court.

This match suggested by Winwood.

Soon after Bacon's elevation, the King went to Scotland, attended by Buckingham, to pay a long-promised visit to his countrymen; and the Chancellor, being left behind as the representative of the executive government, played "fantastic tricks" which were

[1] Sir Ralph Winwood (*d.* 1617), statesman and diplomatist; was Secretary of State from 1614 till his death, and left *Memorials of Affairs of State in the Reigns of Queen Elizabeth and James I.—Cassell's Biog. Dict.*

CHAP. IX.

not expected from a philosopher in the enjoyment of supreme power. Winwood, the Secretary of State, his colleague, he treated with as little ceremony as he might have done a junior clerk or messenger belonging to the Council Office. There is no such strong bond of union as a common hatred of a third person, and the insulted statesman suggested to the ex-Chief Justice that the favorite might easily be regained by matching the heiress with his brother.

Coke's only object in making it.

This is the least reputable passage in the whole life of Sir Edward Coke. He thought of nothing but of recovering himself from disgrace, and humbling an enemy: therefore he jumped at the proposal, and, without consulting Lady Hatton, or thinking for a moment of the inclinations of the young lady, he went to Sir John Villiers and offered him his daughter, with all her fortune and expectations, expressing high satisfaction at the thought of an alliance with so distinguished a family. Sir John, as may be supposed, professed a never-dying attachment to the Lady Frances, and said that, "although he would have been well pleased to have taken her in her smock, he should be glad, by way of curiosity, to know how much could be assured by marriage settlement upon her and her issue?" Sir Edward, with some reluctance, came to particulars, which were declared to be satisfactory, and the match was considered as made.

July. Resentment of Lady Hatton, who carries off and conceals their daughter.

But when the matter was broken to Lady Hatton she was in a frantic rage; not so much because she disapproved of Sir John Villiers for her son-in-law, as that such an important arrangement had been made in the family without her opinion being previously asked upon it. She reproached Sir Edward the more bitterly on account of his ingratitude for her recent services; as, notwithstanding occasional frowardness,

she had been kind to him in his troubles.[1] When the first burst of her resentment had passed over she appeared more calm, but this was from having secretly formed a resolution to carry off her daughter and to marry her to another. The same night, Sir Edward still keeping up his habit of going to bed at nine o'clock, —soon after ten she sallied forth with the Lady Frances from Hatton House, Holborn. They entered a coach which was waiting for them at a little distance, and, travelling by unfrequented and circuitous roads, next morning they arrived at a house of the Earl of Argyle at Oatlands, then rented by Sir Edmund Withipole, their cousin. There they were shut up, in the hope that there could be no trace of the place of their concealment.

CHAP. IX.

Her recent kindness to Coke in his troubles.

While they lay hid, Lady Hatton not only did every thing possible to prejudice her daughter against Sir John Villiers, but offered her in marriage to the young Earl of Oxford, and actually showed her a forged letter, purporting to come from that nobleman, which asseverated that he was deeply attached to her, and that he aspired to her hand.

She offers her daughter in marriage to another.

Meanwhile Sir Edward Coke, having ascertained the retreat of the fugitives, applied to the Privy Council for a warrant to search for his daughter; and, as there was some difficulty in obtaining it, he resolved to take the law into his own hand. Accordingly the ex-Chief Justice of England mustered a band of armed men, consisting of his sons, his dependants, and his

Coke's march at the head of an armed band of men to rescue his daughter.

[1] Chamberlain, in a letter dated 22d of June, 1616, says, "The Lady Hatton stood by him in great stead, both in soliciting at the council-table, wherein she hath done herself great honor, but especially in refusing to sever her cause from his, as she was moved to do, but resolving and publishing that she would run the same fortune with him." She had even quarrelled with both their Majesties for his sake. On the 6th of July, Chamberlain writes, "His lady hath likewise carried herself very indiscreetly, of late, towards the Queen, whereby she hath lost her favor and is forbidden the Court—as also the King's."

CHAP. IX.

servants; and, himself putting on a breastplate, with a sword by his side, and pistols at his saddle-bow, he marched at their head upon Oatlands. When they arrived there they found the gate leading to the house bolted and barricaded. This they forced open without difficulty; but the outer door of the house was so secured as long to defy all their efforts to gain admission. The ex-Chief Justice repeatedly demanded his child in the King's name, and laid down for law, that "if death should ensue, it would be justifiable homicide in him, but murder in those who opposed him." One of the party, gaining entrance by a window, let in all the rest; but still there were several other doors to be broken open. At last Sir Edward found the objects of his pursuit secreted in a small closet, and, without stopping to parley, lest there should be a rescue, he seized his daughter, tore her from her mother, and, placing her behind her brother, rode off with her to his house at Stoke Pogis in Buckinghamshire. There he secured her in an upper chamber, of which he himself kept the key. He then wrote the following letter to Buckingham:

He succeeds.

July 15, 1617.

His letter of explanation to Buckingham.

"Right Honorable,

"After my wife, Sir Edmund Withipole and the lady his wife, and their confederates, to prevent this match between Sir John Villiers and my daughter Frances, had conveyed away my dearest daughter out of my house, and in most secret manner to a house near Oatland, which Sir Edmund Withipole had taken for the summer of my Lord Argyle, I, by God's wonderful providence finding where she was, together with my sons and ordinary attendants, did break open two doors, and recovered my daughter, which I did for these causes: First, and principally, lest his Majesty should think I was of confederacy with my wife in conveying her away, or charge me with want of government in my household in suffering her to be carried away after I had engaged myself to his Majesty for the furtherance of this match. 2. For that I demanded my child of Sir Edmund and his wife, and they

denied to deliver her to me. And yet for this warrant is given to sue me in his Majesty's name in the Star Chamber with all expedition, which though I fear not well to defend, yet it will be a great vexation. But I have full cause to bring all the confederates into the Star Chamber, for conveying away my child out of my house."

He subjoins an enumeration of the vast estates to be settled upon his daughter if she were to be married to Sir John.

But the Lord Chancellor was still determined that the match should be broken off. He strongly encouraged Lady Hatton in her resistance to it; and he wrote letters to Scotland strenuously dissuading it. Thus he addressed Buckingham:

July 12. Bacon's indiscreet efforts to break off the match.

"It seemeth that Secretary Winwood hath officiously busied himself to make a match between your brother and Sir Edward Coke's daughter, and, as we hear, he does it more to make a faction than out of any great affection for your Lordship. It is true he hath the consent of Sir Edward Coke, as we hear, upon reasonable conditions for your brother, and yet no better than, without question, may be found in some other matches. But the mother's consent is not had, nor the young gentlewoman's, who expects a great fortune from her mother, which, without her consent, is endangered. This match, out of my faith and freedom towards your Lordship, I hold very inconvenient both for your brother and yourself. First, he shall marry into a disgraced house, which in reason of state is never held good. Next, he shall marry into a troubled house of man and wife, which in religion and Christian discretion is disliked. Thirdly, your Lordship will go near to lose all such your friends as are adverse to Sir Edward Coke, myself only excepted, who, out of a pure love and thankfulness, shall ever be firm to you. And, lastly, believe it will greatly distract the King's service. . . . Therefore my advice is, that the marriage be not pressed or proceeded in without the consent of both parents, and so break it altogether."

His reason for holding it inconvenient.

He tried to alarm the King by the notion that the general disposition then evinced to submit to his Maj-

CHAP. IX.

esty's prerogative would be disturbed by any show of favor to the ex-Chief Justice:

"All mutinous spirits grow to be a little poor, and to draw in their horns; and not the less for your Majesty's disauthorizing the man I speak of. Now, then, I reasonably doubt that, if there be but an opinion of his coming in with the strength of such an alliance, it will give a turn and relapse in men's minds, into the former state of things, hardly to be holpen, to the great weakening of your Majesty's service."

Coke is prosecuted in the Star Chamber for carrying off his daughter.

A communication with Edinburgh, which can now be made in a few minutes, then required many days; and before Bacon had received an answer to these letters he had instructed Yelverton, the Attorney General, to commence a prosecution in the Star Chamber against Sir Edward Coke, for the riot at Oatlands, which was represented as amounting almost to a levying of war against the King in his realm.

Lady Hatton confined and prosecuted for her part in this affair.

On the other hand, Lady Hatton made another attempt forcibly to get possession of her daughter. Thereupon proceedings were instituted against her by Sir Edward Coke, and he actually had her put under restraint upon the following charges:

Coke's charges and her answers.

"1. For conveying away her daughter *clam et secreté*.[1] 2. For endeavoring to bind her to my Lord Oxford without her father's consent. 3. For counterfeiting a letter of my Lord of Oxford offering her marriage. 4. For plotting to surprise her daughter and take her away by force, to the breach of the King's peace, and for that purpose assembling a body of desperate fellows, whereof the consequences might have been dangerous." She answered—"1. I had cause to provide for her quiet, Secretary Winwood threatening she should be married from me in spite of my teeth, and Sir Edward Coke intending to bestow her against her liking; whereupon, she asking me for help, I placed her at my cousin-german's house a few days for her health and quiet. 2. My daughter tempted by her father's threats and ill usage, and pressing me to find a remedy, I did compassionate her condition, and bethought

[1] "Covertly and in secret."

myself of this contract with my Lord of Oxford, if so she liked, and therefore I gave it her to peruse and consider by herself; she liked it, cheerfully writ it out with her own hand, subscribed it, and returned it to me. 3. The end justifies—at least excuses—the fact; for it was only to hold up my daughter's mind to her own choice, that she might with the more constancy endure her imprisonment—having this only antidote to resist the poison—no person or speech being admitted to her but such as spoke Sir John Villar's language. 4. Be it that I had some tall fellows assembled to such an end, and that something was intended, who intended this?—the mother! And wherefore? because she was unnaturally and barbarously secluded from her daughter, and her daughter forced against her will, contrary to her vows and liking, to the will of him she disliked."

She then goes on to describe, by way of recrimination, "Sir Edward Coke's most notorious riot, committed at my Lord of Argyle's house, where, without constable or warrant, well weaponed, he took down the doors of the gate-house and of the house itself, and tore the daughter in that barbarous manner from her mother—justifying it for good law; a word for the encouragement of all notorious and rebellious malefactors from him who had been a Chief Justice, and reputed the oracle of the law."

Bacon, in danger of being dismissed from his office of Chancellor, supports the match.

Now Bacon discovered the fatal mistake he had committed in opposing the match, and trembled lest the Great Seal should at once be transferred from him to Sir Edward Coke. Buckingham wrote to him:

"In this business of my brother's, that you over-trouble yourself with, I understand from London, by some of my friends, that you have carried yourself with much scorn and neglect both towards myself and my friends, which if it prove true, I blame not you but myself."

And the King's language to him was still more alarming:

"Whereas you talk of the riot and violence committed by Sir Edward Coke, we wonder you make no mention of the riot and violence of them that stole away his daughter, which was the first ground of all that noise."

CHAP. IX.

August, 1617. His efforts to further it.

Bacon's only chance of escaping shipwreck was at once to put about and go upon the contrary tack. Accordingly he stopped the prosecution in the Star Chamber against Sir Edward Coke; he directed that Lady Hatton should be kept in strict confinement; he declared himself a warm friend to the match of the Lady Frances with Sir John Villiers; and he contrived, through Lady Compton, the mother of the Villierses, to induce Lady Hatton to consent to it. The inclinations of the young lady herself had been as little consulted as if she had been a Queen of Spain[1] about to be married under the auspices of a Louis Philippe counselled by a Guizot;[2] and as she had before copied and signed the contract with Lord Oxford at the command of her mother, she next copied and signed the following letter to her mother at the command of her father:

Letter of the Lady Frances Coke to her mother.

"Madam,

"I must now humbly desire your patience in giving me leave to declare myself to you, which is, that without your allowance and liking, all the world shall never make me entangle or tie myself. But now, by my father's especial commandment, I obey him in presenting to you my humble duty in a tedious letter, which is to know your Ladyship's pleasure, not as a thing I desire; but I resolve to be wholly ruled by my father and yourself, knowing your judgments to be such that I may well rely upon, and hoping that conscience

[1] The reference is to Isabella II., who, influenced by Louis Philippe, was married to her cousin, Don Francisco d'Assis, and at the same time, Oct. 10, 1846, her sister Maria Ferdinanda Luisa was married to the Duke of Montpensier, son of the French King.—*Appl. Encyc.*, vol. ix. p. 423.

[2] Written before the revolution of February, 1848. After the misfortunes which have befallen the King and the minister, I would not have harshly censured their conduct in this affair; but those who wished for the tranquillity of Europe must ever regret that the King, in recklessly seeking the supposed advantage of his dynasty, forgot that he was the first magistrate of a free state; and, still more, that the minister, from whom better things might have been expected, prompted and encouraged him to follow his inclination, instead of constitutionally reminding him of his duty.—April, 1849.

CHAP. IX.

and the natural affection parents bear to children will let you do nothing but for my good, and that you may receive comfort, I being a mere child and not understanding the world nor what is good for myself. That which makes me a little give way to it is, that I hope it will be a means to procure a reconciliation between my father and your Ladyship. Also I think it will be a means of the King's favor to my father. Himself is not to be misliked; his fortune is very good, a gentleman well born. . . . So I humbly take my leave, praying that all things may be to every one's contentment.

"Your Ladyship's most obedient
and humble daughter for ever,
"FRANCES COKE.

"Dear mother, believe there has no violent means been used to me by words or deeds."

Lady Hatton gives her consent to the match, but remains unreconciled to Coke.

Lady Hatton then wrote to the King that she would settle her lands on her daughter and Sir John Villiers,—but remained as spiteful as ever against her husband. Having justified her conduct in always refusing to take his name, she says,—

"And whereas he accuseth me of calling him 'base and treacherous fellow;' the words I cannot deny, but when the cause is known I hope a little passion may be excused. Neither do I think it will be thought fit that, though he have five sons to maintain (as he allegeth), a wife should therefore be thought unfit to have maintenance according to her birth and fortune."

October. The wedding.

The marriage settlement was drawn under the King's own superintendence, that both father and mother might be compelled to do justice to Sir John Villiers and his bride; and on Michaelmas day the marriage was actually celebrated at Hampton Court Palace,[1] in the presence of the King and Queen and all

[1] Hampton Court Palace was built by Cardinal Wolsey. From Wolsey's possession it passed into the hands of the King and has continued to be the property of the Crown ever since. Henry VIII. greatly enlarged it, and formed around it a royal park. The birth of Edward VI., the death of his mother, Jane Seymour, and the famous conference of James I.'s reign between the high-church party and the Puritans, all

CHAP. IX.

the chief nobility of England. Strange to say, Lady Hatton still remained in confinement, while Sir Edward Coke, in nine coaches, brought his daughter and his friends to the palace, from his son's at Kingston-Townsend. The banquet was most splendid; a mask was performed in the evening; the stocking was thrown with all due spirit; and the bride and bridegroom, according to long-established fashion, received the company at their *couchée*.

Coke does not derive the anticipated advantage from this alliance.

Sir Edward Coke, however, by no means derived from this alliance the advantage he had anticipated. He was restored to the Privy Council, but he received no judicial promotion; and he had the mortification to see his rival, Bacon, by base servility, restored to the entire confidence both of the King and the favorite.

Nov. 2. Lady Hatton restored to liberty and to favor at Court.

What probably galled him still more was, that, very soon afterwards, Lady Hatton was set at liberty. Abusing and ridiculing her husband, she became the delight of the whole Court;—insomuch that the King and Queen accepted a grand entertainment from her, at Hatton House, in Holborn, from which her husband was excluded.[1]

took place there. Charles I. was imprisoned there for a time during the Commonwealth, and the palace was the occasional residence of Protector Cromwell, and, in later years, of Charles II. and James II. By William III. the palace was to a great extent rebuilt, and its park and gardens laid out in the formal Dutch style.—*Low and Pulling's Dict. of Eng. Hist.*

[1] "The expectancy of Sir Edward's rising is much abated by reason of his lady's liberty, who was brought in great honor to Exeter House by my Lord of Buckingham, from Sir William Craven's, whither she had been remanded, presented by his Lordship to the King, received gracious usage, reconciled to her daughter by his Majesty, and her house in Holborn enlightened by his presence at dinner, where there was a royal feast; and, to make it more absolutely her own, express commandment given by her Ladyship that neither Sir Edward Coke nor any of his servants should be admitted."—*Strafford's Letters and Despatches*, vol. p. v.

We have not any circumstantial account of the honors conferred on the Lady Hatton on this occasion in her husband's absence; but we are informed that the year before, when the King dined at Wimbledon with her father, Lord Exeter, "the Lady Hatton was there, and well graced, for the King kissed her twice."—*Nichol's Progresses of James*, vol. iii. p. 177.

CHAP. IX.

The sad outcome of her daughter's marriage.

It is sad to relate, that the match—mercenary on the one side, constrained on the other—turned out most inauspiciously. Sir John Villiers was created Viscount Parbeck; but, after much dissensions between him and his wife, she eloped from him with Sir Robert Howard, and, after travelling abroad in man's attire, died young, leaving a son, who, on the ground of illegitimacy, was not allowed to inherit the estate and honors of her husband.

A.D. 1621. Coke attends to the judicial business of the Privy Council.

The next four years of Coke's life were passed very ingloriously. Bacon still enjoyed the lustre and the profits of the office of Lord Chancellor, while he himself, regarded with suspicion, was condemned to the obscure and gratuitous labor of the council-table, corresponding pretty nearly to that of our "Judicial Committee."[1] He likewise sat occasionally in the Star Chamber; and he consented to act in several commissions issued by the Government.[2] The Lord Chancellor tried to keep him in good humor by warm thanks for his exertions, and by vague promises that he should have the Lord Treasurer's place, or some other great preferment. "If Sir Edward Coke," says he in a letter to Buckingham, "continue sick or keep in, I fear his Majesty's service will languish too in those things which concern the law."[3] Again, "Sir Edward Coke keeps in still, and we have miss of him."[4] Afterwards, "Sir Edward Coke was at Friday's hearing, but in his nightcap; and complained to me he was *ambulent* and not *current*. I would be sorry he should

The value of his presence there.

[1] He was resworn a Privy Councillor, Sept. 1617.

[2] For the banishment of Jesuits and seminary priests (Rymer's Fœdera, xvii. 93); for negotiating a treaty between the Dutch and English merchants, touching their trade to the East Indies (Rymer's Fœdera, xvii. 170); for inquiring into fines belonging to the Crown in regard of manorial dues (Rymer's Fœdera, xvii. 224); and for examining into the prevalent offences of transporting ordnance into foreign parts (Rymer's Fœdera, xvii. 273).

[3] Bacon's Works, v. 511. Bacon's Works, vi. 214.

CHAP. IX.

fail us in this cause: therefore I desired his Majesty to signify to him, taking knowledge of some light indisposition of his, how much he should think his service disadvantaged if he should be at any day away."[1] A reason assigned for the suspension of council-table business was, "Sir Edward Coke comes not yet abroad."[2]

A.D. 1621—1625. He sits in the Star Chamber.

Sitting in the Star Chamber, he was particularly zealous in supporting a prosecution against certain Dutch merchants charged with the crime of exporting the coin; he voted that they should be fined 150,000*l.* for an offence then considered "enormous, as going to the dispoverishment of the realm."[3] In two other cases, which excited much interest at the time, his severity was supposed to have been sharpened by the recollection of personal injuries. It may be recollected how the Lord Treasurer Suffolk[4] had lectured him for his presumption in making his coachman ride bareheaded before him. The same Lord Treasurer had himself fallen into disgrace, and was now prosecuted in the Star Chamber, along with his lady, for corrupt dealings in a branch of the public revenue. "Sir Edward presiding when sentence was to be pronounced, he led the way in a long and learned speech, showing how often Treasurers had pillaged the King and the people; and, trying to prove that by the Earl and Countess the King had lost 50,000*l.*, he proposed that they should be fined double that sum, and imprisoned till the fine was paid: on the suggestion of Lord Chief Justice Hobart, it was reduced to 30,000*l.*, for which they were committed to the Tower."[5]

His severity towards Lord Treasurer Suffolk.

[1] Bacon's Works, vi. 230.

[2] Bacon's Works, 230, 239.

[3] Stephens's Introduction to Bacon's Letters, p. 46.

[4] Wilson's Life of King James I., p. 706.

[5] Thomas Howard, Earl of Suffolk, the son of Thomas, fourth Duke of Norfolk, was one of the volunteers who assisted in attacking the

ABBOTT, ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY.

After an Original Picture.

CHAP. IX.

His vindictiveness against Yelverton.

Coke was most vindictive against Yelverton, the Attorney General, who had filed the information against him in the Star Chamber for the forcible rescue of his daughter. This distinguished lawyer, who had prosecuted so many others, having incurred the displeasure of Buckingham, was himself prosecuted in the Star Chamber, on the pretence that he had inserted some clauses, in a charter to the City of London, for which he had no warrant from the King. Sir Edward Coke, whose place it was to begin, after a long and bitter speech against him, proposed that he should be fined 6,000*l.*, be dismissed from his office, and be imprisoned in the Tower during the King's pleasure. Upon the intercession of other members of the Court, the fine was moderated to 4,000*l.*, and the rest of the sentence was entirely submitted to his Majesty.[1]

A.D. 1620.

Coke a Lord Commissioner of the Treasury.

The Lord Treasurer's office being put into commission, Coke was for some time a Lord of the Treasury along with Archbishop Abbot,[2] and he seemed

Spanish Armada off Calais. In 1604 he was appointed one of the commissioners for executing the office of Earl Marshal, and was mainly instrumental in the discovery of the Gunpowder Plot. In 1614 Lord Suffolk was created Lord High Treasurer of England, but was deprived of his office four years later.—*Low and Pulling's Dict. of Eng. Hist.*

[1] Stephens's Introduction, p. 17. Coke escaped the disgrace of the execution of Sir Walter Raleigh, and probably could have made no effort to save him.

[2] Devon's Pell Records, temp. Jac. I.

George Abbot, Archbishop of Canterbury, was born at Guildford in Surrey, 1562, being the son of Robert Abbot, a cloth-worker in that town. After completing his preliminary education, he was sent to Baliol College, Oxford, and was created D.D. 1597, in which year, also, he was elected Master of University College. He thrice filled the office of Vice Chancellor. In 1599 he was installed Dean of Winchester. In 1609 King James I. promoted him to the see of Lichfield and Coventry, and about a month afterwards translated him to London, and in March, 1610–11, conferred upon him the archbishopric of Canterbury. Towards the close of his life he met with a lamentable misfortune; for, being upon a visit at the seat of Lord Zouch, he was persuaded to exercise himself in the park with a crossbow, and by accident shot the keeper instead of the deer. A commission was appointed to examine whether this irregularity incapacitated him from the office of primate, and the determination being left to

CHAP. IX.

to be coming into greater favor,—as if the King had been about to act upon the suggestion that he might be useful in the repair of the revenue. Bacon gave the following astute advice,—"As I think it were good his hopes were at an end in some kind, so I could wish they were raised in some other."[1]

A new parliament to be called.

Accordingly, his opinion was asked about the propriety of calling a new parliament, after parliaments had been disused for six whole years.[2] We are told that he was in most of the confidential conferences of state on the management of the elections,[3] although he could scarcely have been consulted when the proclamation was settled in which the King warned his faithful subjects not to return to the House of Commons "bankrupts nor necessitous persons, who may desire long parliaments for their private protection; *nor yet curious and wrangling lawyers, who may seek reputation by stirring needless questions.*"[4]

Coke is returned for Liskeard.

Coke himself was elected for the borough of Liskeard, in Cornwall; and there seemed a prospect of his cordially coöperating with the Government. He might have thought that this course would not be inconsistent with his independence or his patriotism, for the Lord Chancellor had declared that the elections were to be carried on "without packing, or degenerating arts, but rather according to true policy."[5]

There was, however, too much reciprocal jealousy rankling in the minds of the rivals to render it possible that they should ever cordially act together, although

King James, he decided in favor of the Archbishop, who ever after kept a monthly fast on account of the disaster, and settled 20*l.* a year on the keeper's widow. In 1627 Charles I. suspended him for a time from the functions of the primacy, but restored him shortly afterwards, and he retained his see till his death, which took place in his native town, Aug. 4, 1633.—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

[1] Bacon's Works, v. 381.
[2] Bacon's Works, v. 531.
[3] Bacon's Works, v. 536.
[4] 1 Parl. Hist. 1169.
[5] Bacon's Works, v. 531.

terms of decent courtesy had for some time been established between them. CHAP. IX.

Coke's envy was now much excited by the immense glory which Bacon acquired by the publication of the NOVUM ORGANUM. Having received a copy from the author, he wrote in the fly-leaf, "Edw. C. ex dono Auctoris," and he vented his spleen in the following sarcastic lines, which he subjoined: His treatment of the presentation copy of Bacon's Novum Organum.

"*Auctori Consilium.*

"Instaurare paras veterum documenta sophorum,
Instaura leges, justitiamque prius."[1]

In the title-page, which bore the device of a ship passing under a press of sail through the pillars of Hercules, he marked his contempt of all philosophical speculations by adding a distich in English:

"It deserves not to be read in schooles,
But to be freighted in the *Ship of Fools*."[2]

Just as parliament was about to assemble, a vacancy occurred in the high offices to which Coke aspired, and he might have been appeased. But Bacon was so much intoxicated by his political ascendency and his literary fame, that he thought he might now safely despise the power of his rival, and slight him with impunity. Accordingly, Montagu, Coke's successor as Chief Justice of the King's Bench, was promoted to be Lord Treasurer, and raised to the peerage; and the Chief Justiceship of the King's Bench, intsead of being restored to him who had held it with such lustre, was conferred upon an obscure lawyer called Sir James Ley.[3] The ex-Chief Justice was highly exasperated, and he resolved to devote himself to revenge. He cared little for the office of High Steward of the Dec. 14, 1620. Jan. 29, 1621. Coke disappointed in not being made Lord Treasurer.

[1] "*Advice to the Author:*

"Thou preparest to renew the lessons of the ancient sages: first restore the laws and justice."

[2] Alluding to Sebastian Brand's famous "SHYP OF FOLYS."—This presentation copy of thr Novum Organum is still preserved at Holkham.

[3] Orig. Jur. 104.

CHAP. IX.

University of Cambridge, which had lately been conferred upon him; and *patriotism* was his only resource.

It should be related of him, however, that, although he had no taste for polite literature or philosophy, he did not waste his leisure in idleness, but took delight in juridical studies. After his dismission from the office of Chief Justice, he prepared the 12th and 13th Parts of his Reports, which, as they contained a good deal against the High Commission Court, and against the King's power to issue proclamations altering the law of the land, were not published in his lifetime. He then began his great work—called his "First Institute"—the Commentary on Littleton,—which may be considered the "Body of the Common Law of England." This was the solace of his existence—for he still lived separate from his wife—and, amidst the distractions of politics, no day passed over him without his indulging in an exercitation to illustrate **Villenage, Continual Claim, Collateral Warranty,** or some other such delightful subject.

He completes his Reports, and proceeds with his Commentary on Littleton.

Jan. 30, 1621. Parliament meets.

The meeting of parliament, on the 30th of January, 1621, may be considered the commencement of that great movement which, exactly twenty-eight years afterwards, led to the decapitation of an English sovereign under a judicial sentence pronounced by his subjects. The Puritans had been gradually gaining strength, and were returned in considerable numbers to the new House of Commons. Sir Edward Coke, who had hitherto professed high-Church principles, placed himself at their head, and, in struggling for the redress of grievances, he was supported by men of all parties except the immediate retainers of the Court. The irregular modes resorted to for the purpose of raising money, particularly by the grant of monopolies, in violation of the engagements contracted by the

Coke places himself at the head of the Puritans.

CHAP. IX.

Crown at the conclusion of the reign of Queen Elizabeth, had filled the whole nation with discontent.

Feb. 16. He prompts and conducts the proceedings which led to the downfall of Bacon.

Sir Edward Coke, to establish his popularity, began his operations by moving an address to the King "for the better execution of the laws against Jesuits, Seminary Priests, and Popish Recusants," which was carried almost unanimously. The Upper House having concurred in the address, it was read to James by Lord Bacon. This was the last time of his officiating as Chancellor in the royal presence.

His destruction was at hand, and all the proceedings against him were conducted or prompted by his revengeful rival. A motion being made by Mr. Secretary Calvert[1] for a supply, Sir Edward Coke moved, as an amendment, "That supply and grievances should be referred together to a committee of the whole House." We have the following abstract of his speech:

His amendment to Calvert's motion for a supply.

"'*Virtus silere in convivio, vitium in consilio.*'[2] I joy that

[1] George Calvert, Lord Baltimore, the founder and enlightened lawgiver of Maryland, born at Kipling, in Yorkshire, England, about 1580, was descended from a noble Flemish family of the same name. He was educated at Oxford University. By his talents and virtues he gained the confidence of James I., who appointed him in 1619 one of the principal secretaries of state. In 1624, avowing his conversion to the Roman Catholic faith, he resigned his office; but the King retained him in the Privy Council, and raised him to the Irish peerage as Baron of Baltimore, in Longford County, Ireland. He had previously obtained from James I. an extensive grant of land in Newfoundland, where in 1621 he planted a colony named Avalon, which he supervised in person and sustained for a few years at great expense. His motive in this enterprise was partly to obtain liberty of worship for his fellow-professors, who were subject to restraints and disabilities in the mother country. His first experiment having failed on account of the ungenial climate and the hostilities of the French, he visited Virginia in 1628 and explored the adjacent regions. He returned to England, and received from Charles I. a grant of all the territory included in the present State of Maryland. As Calvert died in 1632, before the grant was legally executed, the charter was issued in the name of his son Cecil, under date of June 20, 1632. This charter, which was doubtless drafted by the first Lord Baltimore himself, guaranteed the civil and religious liberties of the colonists and their exemption from English taxation for ever.—*Thomas' Biog. Dict.*

[2] "It is a virtue to remain silent at a feast, but in council it is a vice."

CHAP. IX.

His speech concerning grievances and the supply.

all are bent with alacrity against the enemies of God and us, —Jesuits, Seminaries, and Popish Catholics. The indulgence shown to them was a grievance complained of in the 8th year of this reign. I and Popham were thirty days in examination of the Gunpowder Plot at the Tower. The root of it was out of the countries belonging to the Pope, and Vaux repented him that by delay he had failed. God then, and in 1588, delivered us for religion's sake. Let us guard our privileges, for the privileges of the House regard the whole kingdom; like a circle, which ends where it began. Take heed that we lose not our liberties by petitioning for liberty to treat of grievances. In Edward III.'s time, to treat of grievances a parliament was held yearly. There has been no parliament now for near seven years, and proclamations are substituted for statutes. But no proclamation is of force to alter the law; and, where they are at variance, the law is to be obeyed and not the proclamation.[1] No doubt a due supply ought to be granted. The King's ordinary charge and expenses are much about one; the extraordinary are ever borne by the subject; the King shall be no beggar. If all the corn be brought to the right mill, I will venture my whole estate that the King's will defray his ordinary charges. But let us consider grievances, and supply one with another. The remedying of grievances will encourage the House, and enable us to increase the supply."

The amendment was carried without a division, and it was resolved to go upon *grievances* and *supply* that afternoon. Coke was chosen chairman of the committee, and immediately began with Sir Giles Mompesson and the monopolists.[2]

[1] Camden says, "Edward Coke bore himself this day with the truest patriotism, and taught that no proclamation was of weight against parliament."—*Camden's Annals of James I.*, p. 67.

[2] 1 Parl. Hist. 1175–1188.—The first attack upon the power of the Crown to issue patents conferring exclusive rights of carrying on certain trades was made in 1597. According to the common law every man was entitled freely to exercise his trade, but the principle was generally recognized that exceptions might be made to this rule in the case of any process newly invented or introduced from abroad. Anxious to gain a control over the increasing commerce of the country, the Government was likely to stretch this principle farther than it would bear, and the grant of patents to courtiers was among the readiest means of satisfying their demands.

CHAP. IX.

His rebuke to a member of the House of Commons who scoffed at the observance of the Sabbath day.

He gained much applause, a few days after, from his treatment of a flippant and irreverent speech against a bill "for the better keeping of the Sabbath," made by a young member of the name of Sheppard, who said,—

"Every one knoweth that *Dies Sabbati*[1] is Saturday, so that you would forbid dancing on Saturday; but to forbid dancing on Sunday is in the face of the King's 'Book of Sports;' and King David says, 'Let us praise God in a dance.' This being a point of divinity, let us leave it to divines; and since King David and King James both bid us dance, let us not make a statute against dancing. He that preferred this bill is a disturber of the peace and a Puritan."

Sir Edward Coke: "Whatsoever hindereth the observation of the Sabbath is against the Scripture. It is in religion as in other things: if a man goes too much on the right hand, he goes to superstition; if too much on the left, to profaneness

In 1597 the Commons sent up an address to Elizabeth against the abuse of monopolies, but an evasive reply was given, and in 1601 a bitter debate of four days took place on the subject. The Queen thought it wise to yield, promised that all injurious grants should be repealed, and caused most of the patents to be revoked. Their number increased again under James I.: "Whereas, at the King's coming in," says a contemporary, "there were complaints of some eight or nine monopolies then in being, they are now said to be multiplied by so many scores." The harshness with which the monopolies were enforced, together with the fact that the chief monopolists were also profiting by patents for the control of alehouses and inns, and shamefully abusing their power, caused a storm of indignation which broke in the Parliament of 1621. On February 19, Noy moved for an inquiry, and his proposal was seconded by Coke. A committee of the whole House investigated the patents for inns, and also those conferring monopolies. The King yielded to the storm, and Buckingham, on the advice of Dean Williams, declared he would not even protect his brother. Sir Giles Mompesson and Sir Francis Mitchell were accused by the Commons before the Lords (a measure usually regarded as the revival of the power of impeachment, though not technically such), and heavy penalties were imposed. Finally, in the Parliament of 1624, an act was passed abolishing most of the monopolies. Some few, however, were specially retained as for the public advantage. A few years later the Lord Treasurer Weston endeavored to raise money by creating chartered companies, which escaped the act of 1624 by being open to all merchants who cared to pay certain fees. Much discontent was caused among those traders who were unable to join, and the grants were all revoked in 1639. —*Low and Pulling's Dict. of Eng. Hist.*

[1] "Day of rest."

CHAP. IX.

and atheism; and take away reverence, you shall never have obedience. If it be permitted thus to speak against such as prefer bills, we should have none preferred."

A motion for Mr. Sheppard's expulsion was then carried, "and, being called to the bar, on his knees he heard his sentence, 'That the House doth remove him from the service of this House as being unworthy to be a member thereof.'" [1]

He exposes the abuse of monopolies.

The ex-Chief Justice worked diligently in his committee of grievances, and prepared a report exposing the illegal grants of monopolies to Sir Giles Mompesson, to Sir Edward Villiers, the brother of the favorite, and to many others, by which the public had been cruelly defrauded and oppressed.[2] In answer to the argument of the courtiers that these grants were all within the scope of the King's prerogative, he said,—

Their grant beyond the King's prerogative.

"The King hath indisputable prerogative, as to make war; but there are things indisputably beyond his prerogative, as to grant monopolies. Nothing the less, monopolies are now grown like Hydra's heads; they grow up as fast as they are cut off. Monopolies are granted *de vento et sole;* [3] of which we have an example in the patent that in the counties of Devon and Cornwall none shall dry pilchards in the open air save the patentee, of those by him duly authorized. The monopolist who engrosseth to himself what should be free to all men is as bad as the depopulator, who turns all out of doors, and keeps none but a shepherd and his dog; and while they ruin others they never thrive or prosper, but are like the alchemist, with whom *omne vertitur in fumum.*" [4]

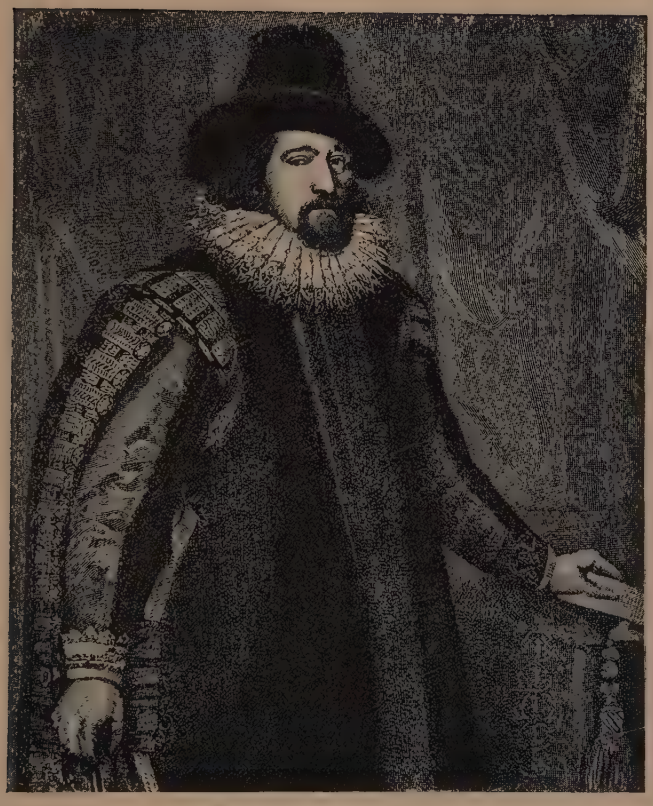
The report was agreed to, and Sir Edward Coke was directed to go to the bar of the Upper House to communicate a copy of it to their Lordships, and to ask a conference in which they might be called upon to concur in it.

[1] 1 Parl. Hist. 1194.

[2] See Lives of the Lord Chancellors, ch. liii.

[3] "Like the wind and the sun."

[4] ["Everything is changed into smoke."] 1 Parl. Hist. 1195.



FRANCIS BACON.

Portrait by Van Sommer, at Gorhambury.

CHAP. IX.

A very striking scene was exhibited when Bacon came from the woolsack to the bar of the House of Lords to receive the messengers, for he knew that another committee of the Commons was sitting to investigate charges of judicial corruption against himself, and he did not know but that they might now be come to impeach him, and to pray that he might be committed to the Tower. He was greatly relieved when the true purport of the message was disclosed, and he gladly announced that the conference was agreed to.[1] March 3, 1621.

Charges againtt Bacon for taking bribes.

But the respite was short. The other committee was going on most vigorously and effectively with the investigation of the Lord Chancellor's delinquency. Coke, out of decency, declined being the chairman of it; but he guided all its proceedings, and the task of drawing up the charges arising out of the bribes received from Aubrey and Egerton was confided to him along with Sir Dudley Digges,[2] Sir Robert Phillips, and Mr. Noy,[3] afterwards the author of the writ of Ship-money,—then a factious demagogue.[4]

Bacon had very nearly eluded the blow by inducing the King to send a message to the House of Commons, "that if this accusation could be proved, his Majesty

[1] See Lives of the Chancellors, ii. 388 ; 1 Parl. Hist. 1199.

[2] Sir Dudley Digges (1583–1639) was a member of Parliament in James I.'s reign, and was occasionally employed by the King on public business. He was one of the chief managers of Buckingham's impeachment in 1626. He was imprisoned on more than one occasion for his language against the Court, and in the Parliament of 1628 he strongly advocated the Petition of Right. He subsequently made his peace with the King, and in 1630 had a reversionary grant of the Mastership of the Rolls. —*Low and Pulling's Dict. of Eng. Hist.*

[3] William Noy was born at St. Burian, Cornwall, 1577. He studied at Exeter College, Oxford, and next in Lincoln's Inn. When he became a member of the House of Commons, he opposed the royal prerogative ; but on being made Attorney General, in 1631, he supported the measures which he had before condemned, and among other projects brought forward by him was the tax called Ship-money. He died August, 1634. He was author of several legal works.—*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

[4] 2 St. Tr. 1087.

CHAP. IX.

would punish the party accused to the full," and that he would grant a commission under the Great Seal to examine all upon oath that could speak in this business. The Commons were about to return an answer agreeing to this proposal, when Sir Edward Coke begged they would take heed not to hinder the manner of their parliamentary proceeding against a great delinquent. A resolution was then adopted to prosecute the case before the Lords.[1]

Coke procures the impeachment of Bacon.

The impeachment being voted, it was intended that Sir Edward Coke, as manager, should conduct it; but he lost this gratification by the plea of *guilty*, and he was obliged to be satisfied with attending the Speaker to the bar of the House of Lords when judgment was to be prayed, and hearing the Chief Justice of the King's Bench, by order of the Lords, pronounce these words, which I fear caused an ungenerous thrill of pleasure in his bosom:

May 2, 1621.

Sentence against Bacon.

"Francis Lord Viscount St. Albans having confessed the crimes and misdemeanors whereof he was impeached, this House doth adjudge that he pay a fine to the King of 40,000*l.*, —that he be imprisoned in the Tower of London during the King's pleasure,—that he be for ever incapable of any office, place, or employment in the state or commonwealth,—and that he never sit in parliament, or come within the verge of the Court."[2]

The part which Coke had hitherto taken in this affair was according to the rules of law and justice, and the eagerness with which he had discharged his duty might be excused by the sense of personal injury under which he smarted; but we must unequivocally condemn the want of heart which he afterwards displayed, in never visiting his fallen foe in the Tower or in Gray's Inn,—in making no attempt to obtain a mitigation of the sentence,—and in never sending him a

Coke's want of heart towards Bacon.

[1] 1 Parl. Hist. 1228.

[2] 2 St. Tr. 1037–1119. Bacon, on account of illness, was not present.

letter, or even a kind message, to console him. I can find no trace of these two eminent men, who had been so long rivals, having thenceforth ever met or corresponded with one another. Bacon did not again sit in parliament, or appear in public life, but veiled his errors by devoting himself to the pursuits of literature and philosophy;—while Coke, till he carried the PETITION OF RIGHT, was constantly engaged in the political arena.

He is exasperated by the appointment of Williams as Lord Keeper.

If James I. and Buckingham had acted discreetly, they would have forgiven the ex-Chief Justice's patriotic aberration, and tried to draw him back to them, by now offering him the Great Seal; but they had put themselves into the hands of a shrewd Welsh parson, whose subserviency they could rely upon, and whom, to the astonishment of the world, they suddenly proclaimed Lord Keeper.[1] Coke was even fiercer against the Court than he had been before Bacon's disgrace.

[1] John Williams, born at Aberconway, Caernarvonshire, March 25, 1582, was educated at the school of Ruthin, and at St. John's College, Cambridge, where he obtained a fellowship. In 1611 he became chaplain to Lord Chancellor Egerton, who gave him several preferments, and left him a collection of papers, which qualified him for the high office he afterwards attained. In 1619 he was promoted to the deanery of Salisbury, and the year after removed to that of Westminster. In 1621 he was made Bishop of Lincoln and Keeper of the Great Seal, which last situation he filled to the satisfaction of James I., whose funeral sermon he preached; but soon after he was dismissed from his post. He was also prosecuted in the Star Chamber on a charge of betraying the King's secrets, for which he was heavily fined, suspended from his dignities, and confined in the Tower above three years. On the meeting of the Long Parliament he obtained his release; and when the Earl of Strafford was impeached, he delivered it, as his opinion, that the bishops ought not to be present in the House of Peers on such an occasion, by which means the bill of attainder passed; and Lord Clarendon says that it was through his advice the King gave his assent to that fatal measure. In 1641 he was translated to York; but, soon after, he and eleven of his brethren were sent to the Tower for protesting against all acts passed while they were prevented by the mob from attending in their places. In the Rebellion the Archbishop fortified Conway Castle for the King, but being unable to stem the torrent which overwhelmed the church and state, he devoted the remainder of his days to religious exercises, and died in Wales March 25, 1650. —*Cooper's Biog. Dict.*

CHAP. IX.

After the triumph gained by the people in the overthrow of monopolies, and the conviction of the Lord Chancellor for bribery, the King was impatient to get rid of parliament till the public excitement should subside,—but yet did not wish to give offence either by a sudden dissolution or prorogation; and he intimated his pleasure that the two Houses should adjourn themselves from May till November.

Struggle respecting the King's power to order the order the two Houses to adjourn.

Sir Edward Coke violently resented this proceeding, and carried a motion for a conference with the Lords, that they might concert measures to prevent it. Having managed the conference, he reported that the Lords had agreed to a joint address, praying the King "to give them further time to finish the bills which they were considering." His Majesty, however, returned a sharp answer, saying that "the address was an improper interference with his prerogative, as he alone had the power to call, adjourn, and determine parliaments."[1] Sir Edward Coke still complained of this proceeding, and, admitting the King's power to prorogue or dissolve parliaments, insisted that *adjournment* ought to be the spontaneous act of each House. Nevertheless, the King sent a commission, requiring that the proposed adjournment should be made. The House of Lords obeyed; but the Commons, on the advice of Sir Edward Coke, refused to allow the commission to be read. Still there was a majority for adjourning, according to the King's pleasure. "Then Sir Edward Coke, with tears in his eyes, standing up, recited the collect for the King and his issue, adding only to it, 'and defend them from their cruel enemies.' After which the House adjourned to the 14th of November."[2]

It should be mentioned, to the credit of the Chief Justice, that during this session, although he pro-

[1] 1 Parl. Hist. 1265. [2] Ibid. 1295.

pounded some doctrines on the subject of money which no class of politicians would now approve, he steadily supported free trade in commodities. A bill "to allow the sale of Welsh cloths and cottons in and through the kingdom of England" being opposed on "reasons of state," he said, "Reason of state is often used as a trick to put us out of the right way; for when a man can give no reason for a thing, then he flieth to a higher strain, and saith *it is a reason of state*. Freedom of trade is the life of trade; and all monopolies and restrictions of trade do overthrow trade." [1] On the same principles he supported a bill "to enable merchants of the staple to transport woollen cloth to Holland." [2] And a bill being brought in "to prohibit the importation of corn, for the protection of tillage," he strenuously opposed it, saying, "If we bar the importation of corn when it aboundeth, we shall not have it imported when we lack it. I never yet heard that a bill was ever before preferred in parliament against the importation of corn, and I love to follow ancient precedents. I think this bill truly speaks Dutch, and is for the benefit of the Low Countrymen." [3]

Lord Coke a "free trader."

His reasons.

During the recess he counteracted a selfish plot of the new Lord Keeper for "*depriving*" [4] Archbishop Abbot, who, in hunting in his park, had unfortunately killed a man with a crossbow. The attempt was to make it "culpable homicide," on the ground that the Archbishop was employed in an unlawful act when the accident happened. But Coke asserted that, "by the laws of this realm, a bishop may rightfully hunt in a park;—hunt he may by this very token, that a bishop, when dying, is to leave his pack of hounds (called *muta canum*) to the King's free will and disposal." [5]

He defends Archbishop Abbot from the charge of manslaughter.

[1] Proceedings and Debates, i. 308, ii. 155. [2] Ibid. ii. 35.

[3] Proceedings and Debates, ii. 87.

[4] In Ecclesiastical Law *deprivation* is the taking away from a clergyman his benefice, or other spiritual promotion or dignity.—*Webster's Dict.*

[5] Collier's Eccl. Hist. ii. 722.

CHAP. IX.

Coke leader of the Opposition in the House of Commons.

When parliament again met in November, Coke's spleen was aggravated by a long and pedantic lecture to the two Houses, delivered by Lord Keeper Williams, who pretended to hold regularly-bred lawyers in contempt;[1]—and he exerted himself still more strenuously against the Government. The subjects which then agitated the public were the Prince's proposed match with the Infanta of Spain, which was strongly opposed by the popular party,—and the war for the recovery of the Palatinate, which they strongly desired. Sir Edward Coke moved an address to the King on these subjects, saying,—

Address to the King moved by Coke.

"*Melius est recurrere quam male currere.*[2] It is true that the father, even amongst private men, should have power to marry his children, but we may petition the King how his prerogatives are to be exercised for the public good. So the voice of Bellona, not the turtle, must be heard. The King must either abandon his daughter, or engage himself in war. The hope of this match doth make the Papists insolent. To cut off their hopes, he ought to marry the Prince to one of his own religion. On such matters the greatest princes have taken the advice of parliament. Edward III. did confer with the Commons about his own marriage; and in the forty-second year of his reign, growing weary of bearing his armor, treating for peace, he acquainted the Commons with the treaty,—whereupon the Commons did beseech him 'that he would take his sword in his hand, for a just war was better than a dishonorable peace.' In a record, 4 Hen. V., we read these words,—'it shall hold for ever that it shall be lawful for the Commons to talk of the safety of the kingdom, and the grievances and remedies thereof.' The very writ of summons shows that we are called hither to advise for the defence and state of the King and kingdom."[3]

The address was carried, but drew down an answer strongly reflecting on the mover:

[1] 1 Parl. Hist. 1296.
[2] "It is better to return than to run badly."
[3] 1 Parl. Hist. 1322.

CHAP. IX.

"We wish you to remember that we are an old and experienced King, needing no such lessons; being in our conscience freest of any King alive from hearing or trusting idle reports, which so many of your House as are nearest us can bear witness unto you, if you would give as good ear unto them as you do to some tribunitial orators among you."[1]

The King's answer.

The King more deeply resented another address from the Commons, which they styled an "Apologetic Petition," and in which they maintained "that they had merely expressed their opinion with all dutifulness respecting the Spanish match and the assistance to be given to the King of Bohemia."[2] He now said to them,—

The "Apologetic Petition."

"This plenopotency of yours invests you in all power upon earth, lacking nothing but the Pope's, to have the keys also of heaven and purgatory. And touching your excuse of not determining any thing concerning the match of our dearest son, but only to tell your opinion; first, we desire to know how you could have presumed to determine in that point, without committing high treason. In our former answer to you, we confess we meant Sir Edward Coke's foolish business. It had well become him, especially being our servant, and one of our Council, to have explained himself unto us, which he never did, though he never had access refused to him."

The King's resentment.

In a letter to the Speaker, the King gave this command,—

The King forbids the House of Commons to discuss matters of state, and denies their privileges.

"Make known in our name unto the House, that none therein shall presume henceforth to meddle with any thing concerning our government, or deep matters of state. . . . You shall resolve them in our name, that we think ourselves

[1] 1 Parl. Hist. 1319.

[2] Frederick V., Elector Palatine, and King of Bohemia, born in 1596, was a son of Frederick IV., and father of Prince Rupert, famous in English history. He married in 1613 Elizabeth, a daughter of James I. of England, and became the chief of the German Protestant Union. In 1619 he was elected King of Bohemia by the people of that country, who had revolted against the Emperor. He was completely defeated in battle at Prague in 1620, lost his hereditary dominions, and was obliged to go into exile. His electoral dignity was transferred to the Duke of Bavaria. Died in 1632.—*Thomas' Biog. Dict.*

CHAP. IX.

very free and able to punish any man's misdemeanor in parliament, as well during the sitting as after,—which we mean not to spare hereafter, upon any occasion of any man's insolent behavior there that shall be ministered unto us."

His Majesty further insisted that the House had no privileges except such as were granted by him and his predecessors,—intimating that the privileges so granted, if abused, might be recalled. This seems to have thrown the House into a flame; and, according to the Parliamentary History,[1]—

Coke's vindication of the privileges of the House.

"Sir Edward Coke would have us make a Protestation for our privileges: that he can tell us when both Houses did sit in parliament together, both the Lords and the Commons: that the demand of the privileges of this House by the Speaker was after they began to be questioned, and used to be done at the first meeting of the parliament, in this manner, that if the House might not have their privileges and liberties they would sit silent. He protesteth before God that he ever speaketh his own conscience, but he doth not ever speak his own things, for he for the most part speaketh by warrant of precedents. '*Omnis qualitas in principali subjecto est in summo gradu*,'[2] as '*lumen in sole*,' and so are the privileges (which are the laws) of the parliament here in the parliament, '*in principali subjecto*,' and therefore, '*in summo gradu*.' The liberties and privileges of parliament are the mother and life of all laws: whereas the King saith, 'he liketh not our styling our liberties our ancient inheritance, yet he will maintain and give us leave to enjoy the same;' indeed, striketh at the root of all our privileges. '*Consuetudo Regni*,' is the law of this kingdom. He would have us stand upon the defence of our privileges in this point."[3]

He moves a "Protestation," which is agreed to and entered in the Journals.

The matter was referred to a committee, who agreed to a Protestation,—

"That the liberties, franchises, privileges, and jurisdictions of parliament, are the ancient and undoubted birthright and

[1] Vol. i. p. 1355.

[2] "Every quality is present in its highest degree in that which is its chief [best] representation."

[3] 1 Parl. Hist. 1349.

inheritance of the subjects of England; and that the arduous and urgent affairs concerning the King, state, and the defence of the realm, and of the Church of England, and the making and maintenance of laws, and redress of mischiefs and grievances which daily happen within this realm, are proper subjects and matter of counsel and debate in parliament; and that in the handling and proceeding of those businesses, every member of the House hath, and of right ought to have, freedom of speech to propound, treat, reason, and bring to conclusion the same; that the Commons in parliament have like liberty and freedom to treat of those matters in such order as in their judgments shall seem fittest, and that every such member of the said House hath like freedom from all impeachment, imprisonment, and molestation (other than by censure of the House itself) for or concerning any speaking, reasoning, or declaring of any matter or matters touching the parliament or parliament business."[1]

This Protestation, drawn by Sir Edward Coke, was, on his recommendation, adopted by the House, Dec. 18. and entered in the Journals. But when the King heard of it he was frantic. He immediately prorogued Dec. 21. the parliament, and ordered the Journals to be brought to him at Whitehall. Then, having summoned a meeting of the Privy Council, and ordered the Judges to attend, he in their presence "did declare the said Prot- Dec. 30. estation to be invalid and of no effect; and did further, *manu suâ propriâ*,[2] take it out of the Journal Book of the Clerk of the Commons' House of Parliament."[3] Having torn it in pieces, he ordered an entry

The King tears the "Protestation" from the Journals.

[1] 1 Parl. Hist. 1361.

[2] "With his own hand."

[3] In the session of 1621 the Commons began to show evident signs of that discontent which afterwards broke out into such serious controversies with the Crown. Sir Richard Grosvenor said, "We have hitherto sung nothing but *placebo*, and danced to the King's heart; but it hath now pleased his Majesty to change this tune, and to make us sing nothing but *lachrymæ*, and sing *loath to depart*." At length the misunderstanding between James and the Commons attained such a height, that the King, with his own hand, erased from the Journals of the Commons the celebrated Protestation or declaration of their liberties and privileges, which they had passed in anticipation of a dissolution; and, on the 6th January, 1622,

CHAP. IX.

to be made in the Council Books, stating that, if allowed to remain, "it might have served for future times to invade most of the rights and prerogatives annexed to the Imperial Crown of this realm."[1]

Jan. 6, 1622. Parliament dissolved.

This violent proceeding was soon followed by a Proclamation, which, after dwelling on the misdeeds of the House of Commons, particularly the PROTESTATION,—"an usurpation which the majesty of a King can by no means endure,"—concluded by dissolving the parliament.[2]

published a Proclamation declaring the Parliament dissolved, and animadverting with severity on those ill-tempered spirits who had compelled him thus to exercise his prerogative. But James was not contented with the bare expression of his displeasure; several leading members of the country party, amongst whom was Sir Edward Coke, were committed to the Tower. The first volume of the Commons' Journals bears the entry, where the declaration was recorded, "King James, in council, with his own hand, rent out this Protestation."—*Jennings' Anecdotal Hist. Brit. Parl.* (Am. Ed.) 20.

[1] 1 Parl. Hist. 1363.

[2] 1 Parl. Hist. 1370. It was very severe on Coke and his associates as "ill-tempered spirits," and accused them of "sowing tares with the wheat."

END OF VOLUME I.

DATE LOANED

GAYLORD 3563

PRINTED IN U.S.A.

Main DA28.4.C3 1894
Campbell, John Campb
The [illegible] chief j[illegible] of Engla
3 9108 00056573
DENISON UNIVERSITY LIBRARIES

DA
28.4
.C3
1894
v.1

78-01666

Denison University Library
Granville, Ohio 43023

DEMCO

W9-DBI-681